

Jon Hird

.....
Translated by
Marcella Cilla and Anna Rossetto

The Complete

English Grammar

for Italian Students

iStudy

My Digital Book permette il massimo della flessibilità portandovi immediatamente dove volete andare. L'indice è navigabile e inoltre rimandi interattivi all'interno di alcune unità portano ad altre unità con argomenti correlati a quello trattato. Basta cliccare sul numero dell'unità nel rimando per arrivarci automaticamente.



OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

OXFORD

UNIVERSITY PRESS

Great Clarendon Street, Oxford OX2 6DP

Oxford University Press is a department of the University of Oxford.
It furthers the University's objective of excellence in research, scholarship,
and education by publishing worldwide in
Oxford New York

Auckland Cape Town Dar es Salaam Hong Kong Karachi
Kuala Lumpur Madrid Melbourne Mexico City Nairobi
New Delhi Shanghai Taipei Toronto

With offices in

Argentina Austria Brazil Chile Czech Republic France Greece
Guatemala Hungary Italy Japan Poland Portugal Singapore
South Korea Switzerland Thailand Turkey Ukraine Vietnam

OXFORD and OXFORD ENGLISH are registered trade marks of
Oxford University Press in the UK and in certain other countries

© Oxford University Press 2010

The moral rights of the author have been asserted

Database right Oxford University Press (maker)

First published 2010

2014 2013 2012 2011 2010

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

No unauthorized photocopying

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced,
stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any
means, without the prior permission in writing of Oxford University
Press, or as expressly permitted by law, or under terms agreed with the
appropriate reprographics rights organization. Enquiries concerning
reproduction outside the scope of the above should be sent to the ELT
Rights Department, Oxford University Press, at the address above

You must not circulate this book in any other binding or cover
and you must impose this same condition on any acquirer

Any websites referred to in this publication are in the public domain
and their addresses are provided by Oxford University Press for
information only. Oxford University Press disclaims any responsibility
for the content

ISBN: 978 0 19 481000 5 Student's Book without answers

ISBN: 978 0 19 481005 0 Pack: Student's Book and My Digital Book

Printed in China

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

*The author and publisher would like to thank the following teachers who helped
in various ways and at various stages during the development of the material,
with particular thanks to: Lavinia Vettore.*

Bonicelli, Davide Cafiero, Barbara Carri, Cinzia Frascatani, Maria
Cristina Gennaro, Paola Gherardi, Anna Ghinelli, Roberto Ingravalle,
Rita Manzini, Fedra Mascia, Lavinia Vettore, Silvia Zalla

*The PET vocabulary list is reproduced with the permission of: Cambridge ESOL
pp.417–431*

*We would also like to thank the following for permission to reproduce the
following photographs: Alamy p.176 (Serge Krouglikoff/Jupiterimages/
Stock Image); Corbis p.111 (Tom McCarthy - Rainbow/Science Faction);
Getty Images pp.55 (Dave Hogan), 111 (Steve McAlister), 111 (Colin
Anderson/Blend Images), 175 (Alex Cao/Photodisc), 274 (PhotoAlto/
Sigrid Olsson), 337 (power boat racing/Rob Elliott/AFP), 381 (dog/
Plattform/Johner Images Royalty-Free); iStockphoto.com pp.20 (4x6),
165 (black handbag/Atsung), 165 (Pisa/titoslack), 177 (instamatics),
188 (dangdumrong), 267 (drxy), 305 (Coliseum/LUke1138), 335
(blackeststockphoto), 337 (basketball/groveb), 337 (running/sophie4),
359 (Leaning Tower of Pisa/onfilm), 359 (St Basil's cathedral/holgs),
359 (Statue of Liberty/JHaviv), 359 (Macchu Picchu/anharris), 405 (LDF);
NASA p.90; PA Images p.352 (Mark Cuthbert/UK Press/Press Association
Images); Photolibrary.com p.221 (Tourism South East); Rex Features
p.61 (Norman Parkinson Limited); Royalty-free pp.17 (Jan Tadeusz),
25 (Stockbyte), 46, 193 (Image Source), 337 (volleyball/Photodisc),
337 (swimming/Photodisc), 337 (cycling/Photodisc), 356 (party/Digital
Vision), 356 (teen couple/Image Source), 359 (Taj Mahal/Photodisc),
359 (Rio de Janeiro/Photodisc); Science Photo Library p.111 (Detlev Van
Ravenswaaij)*

*Illustrations by: Kathryn Adams pp.47 (Ex 12), 128, 129, 145, 191, 205,
223, 261, 351, 367, 379; Kate Charlesworth pp.29, 53, 97, 109, 127 (Ex
3), 153, 163, 211, 287, 299, 313, 345; Martina Farrow pp.25, 33, 37, 59,
87, 126, 127 (Ex 1), 133, 143, 147, 159, 164, 181, 202, 209, 215, 229, 246,
247, 249, 255, 265, 273, 282, 283 (Ex 3), 289, 303, 316, 327, 331, 376;
Peter Hudspith pp.39, 47 (Ex 11), 63, 65, 76, 82, 110, 150, 151, 173, 183,
199, 208, 235, 281, 297, 311, 318, 319, 339, 390; Sean Longcroft pp.35,
43, 71, 88, 101, 119, 141 (Ex 1), 161, 187, 201, 216, 233, 243, 285, 323,
363, 407; Pat McCarthy pp.13, 19, 22, 64, 78, 85, 89, 112, 131, 137, 141
(Ex 3), 195, 207, 213, 217, 225, 234, 283 (Ex 4), 288, 290, 291, 301, 321,
325, 329, 359, 399*

Indice generale

Introduzione	9
The basics: prime strutture	10

TEMPI PRESENTI

1 Present simple: be (forma affermativa e negativa)	14
2 Present simple: be (domande e risposte brevi)	16
3 There is e there are	18
4 Revisione e potenziamento: present simple di be e there is/are	20
5 Present simple (forma affermativa e negativa)	24
6 Present simple (domande e risposte brevi)	26
7 Have got	28
8 Revisione e potenziamento: present simple e have got	30
9 Present continuous (forma affermativa e negativa)	32
10 Present continuous (domande e risposte brevi)	34
11 Present simple e present continuous	36
12 Revisione e potenziamento: present simple e present continuous	38
13 L'imperativo	40
14 Verbi di stato e verbi di moto	42
15 Revisione e potenziamento: forme del presente e imperativo	44

TEMPI PASSATI

16 Past simple di be e there was/were	48
17 Past simple (forma affermativa)	50
18 Past simple (forma negativa)	52
19 Past simple (domande e risposte brevi)	54
20 Revisione e potenziamento: past simple e there was/were	56
21 Past continuous	58
22 Past continuous e past simple, when e while	60
23 Used to e would	62
24 Revisione e potenziamento: forme del passato	64
25 Present perfect (effetti sul presente; already e yet)	68
26 Present perfect (esperienze di vita; ever e never)	70
27 Present perfect (since e for)	72
28 Present perfect e past simple	74
29 Revisione e potenziamento: present perfect e past simple	76
30 Present perfect continuous	78
31 Present perfect continuous e present perfect simple	80
32 Revisione e potenziamento: present perfect continuous/simple e past simple	82
33 Past perfect	84
34 Past perfect continuous	86
35 Revisione e potenziamento: forme del passato	88

TEMPI FUTURI

36	Present simple per il futuro	92
37	Present continuous per il futuro	94
38	Be going to per il futuro	96
39	Will (e shall) per il futuro	98
40	Will e be going to	100
41	Revisione e potenziamento: forme del futuro	102
42	Future continuous e future perfect	104
43	Frasi al futuro con congiunzioni di tempo	106
44	Was/were going to, was supposed to ecc.	108
45	Revisione e potenziamento: tutte le forme del futuro	110
46	Revisione e potenziamento: tutti i tempi verbali	114

FORMA PASSIVA

47	Passivo (present simple e past simple)	116
48	Passivo (altri tempi verbali)	118
49	Revisione e potenziamento: il passivo	120
50	Passivo (doppio complemento e soggetto impersonale)	122
51	Strutture passive impersonali	124
52	Have/get something done	126
53	Revisione e potenziamento: forme del passivo	128

VERBI MODALI

54	Can, could e be able to (abilità e possibilità)	132
55	Can, can't e be allowed to (permessi e proibizioni)	134
56	Can, could e would (richieste e offerte)	136
57	Must e have to (obblighi)	138
58	Need, needed e don't need to (necessità)	140
59	Must, might, could e can't (certezza e deduzione)	142
60	Gradi di certezza (bound to, sure, possible ecc.)	144
61	Will e would (supposizioni e comportamenti tipici)	146
62	Should, ought to, must e had better	148
63	Espressioni con i modali	150
64	Revisione e potenziamento: verbi modali	152

DOMANDE

65	Domande	156
66	Domande-soggetto	158
67	Domande negative	160
68	What's ...like?, How's ...? e What does ... look like?	162
69	Revisione e potenziamento: domande (1)	164
70	Domande indirette	168
71	Question tags	170
72	Domande-eco	172
73	Risposte brevi (a domande yes/no)	174
74	Revisione e potenziamento: domande (2)	176

STRUTTURE VERBALI

75	Verbo + -ing	180
76	Verbo + infinito	182
77	Verbi + -ing o infinito	184
78	Verbo + complemento oggetto + -ing o infinito	186
79	Revisione e potenziamento: verbo + -ing o infinito	188
80	Preposizioni + -ing	190
81	Espressioni + -ing	192
82	Be/get used to + -ing e be/get used to + nome	194
83	Aggettivi e nomi + infinito	196
84	Parole interrogative + infinito	198
85	Infinito di scopo	200
86	Revisione e potenziamento: altri usi delle forme -ing e infinito	202
87	Get	206
88	Have	208
89	Make	210
90	Do	212
91	Take	214
92	Go	216
93	Prefer, would prefer e would rather	218
94	Suggest e recommend	220
95	Verbi con doppio complemento	222
96	Revisione e potenziamento: strutture verbali	224

DISCORSO INDIRETTO

97	Discorso indiretto (say e tell)	228
98	Discorso indiretto (domande)	230
99	Altri verbi che introducono il discorso indiretto	232
100	Revisione e potenziamento: discorso indiretto	234

PERIODO IPOTETICO

101	Periodo ipotetico generale e di primo tipo	236
102	Periodo ipotetico di secondo tipo	238
103	Periodo ipotetico di terzo tipo	240
104	Wish e if only	242
105	Revisione e potenziamento: il periodo ipotetico, if only e wish	244

NOMI, ARTICOLI, QUANTIFICATORI, PRONOMI E DETERMINANTI

106	Nomi numerabili e non numerabili	248
107	Plurali e partitivi	250
108	Possessivi: 's e the ... of ...	252
109	Revisione e potenziamento: nomi, partitivi e possessivi	254
110	Articoli (a/an e the)	256
111	Articoli (usì particolari)	258
112	Articoli (the per generalizzare e zero article)	260
113	Revisione e potenziamento: articoli	262

114	Some e any	264
115	No, none, nobody, nothing, nowhere ecc.	266
116	Many, much, a lot of, a few e a little	268
117	All, each, every e most	270
118	Both, neither e either	272
119	Revisione e potenziamento: quantificatori	274
120	Pronomi soggetto e complemento	276
121	Aggettivi e pronomi possessivi	278
122	Pronomi riflessivi e each other	280
123	This, that, these, those	282
124	One e ones	284
125	Revisione e potenziamento: pronomi e determinanti	286

PREPOSIZIONI E PHRASAL VERBS

126	Preposizioni: luogo	288
127	Preposizioni: moto	290
128	Preposizioni: tempo	292
129	Revisione e potenziamento: preposizioni: luogo, moto e tempo	294
130	Preposizione + nome	296
131	Verbo + preposizione	298
132	Verbo + complemento + preposizione	300
133	Aggettivo + preposizione	302
134	Nome + preposizione	304
135	Revisione e potenziamento: preposizioni con nomi, aggettivi e verbi	306
136	Phrasal verbs	308
137	Phrasal verbs in tre parti	310
138	Revisione e potenziamento: phrasal verbs	312

AGGETTIVI E AVVERBI

139	Aggettivi	316
140	Aggettivi che terminano in -ed e -ing	318
141	Ordine degli aggettivi	320
142	Aggettivi: gradi di comparazione	322
143	Aggettivi derivati da nomi e verbi	324
144	Too e enough	326
145	So e such, what (a) ...	328
146	Revisione e potenziamento: aggettivi	330
147	Aggettivi comparativi	332
148	Aggettivi superlativi	334
149	Revisione e potenziamento: aggettivi comparativi e superlativi	336
150	Avverbi di modo	338
151	Avverbi di luogo e di tempo	340
152	Avverbi di frequenza	342
153	Avverbi rafforzativi	344

154	Avverbi di tempo relativo	346
155	Ever e -ever	348
156	Revisione e potenziamento: avverbi	350
COSTRUZIONE DELLE FRASI		
157	Frasi relative determinative	354
158	Preposizioni nelle frasi relative	356
159	Frasi relative ridotte	358
160	Frasi relative esplicative	360
161	Frasi con forma -ing e frasi participiali	362
162	Revisione e potenziamento: frasi relative	364
163	Coesione: sequenza	366
164	Coesione: addizione	368
165	Coesione: contrasto	370
166	Coesione: finalità, causa e conseguenza	374
167	Revisione e potenziamento: coesione (1)	376
168	Espressioni ellittiche e sostituzione	380
169	Risposte brevi (ad affermazioni)	382
170	Coesione: pronomi, avverbi e riferimento lessicale	384
171	Coesione: connessioni tra frasi	386
172	Revisione e potenziamento: coesione (2)	388
173	Accrescere l'enfasi	392
174	Frasi scisse	394
175	It's supplementare'	396
176	Anticipazione	398
177	Inversione dopo not e forme avverbiali negative	400
178	Revisione e potenziamento: strutture per esprimere enfasi	402
179	Prefissi	404
180	Suffissi	406
APPENDICE		
	Appendice 1: regole ortografiche	410
	Appendice 2: l'ortografia dell'inglese britannico e americano	411
	Appendice 3: forme contratte	413
	Appendice 4: lettera maiuscola	414
	Appendice 5: strutture verbali	414
	Appendice 6: aggettivo e nome + infinito	415
	Appendice 7: paradigma dei principali verbi irregolari	416
PET VOCABULARY LIST		
		417
INDICE ANALITICO		
		435

Introduzione

The Complete English Grammar è stata scritta avendo in mente le necessità specifiche degli studenti italiani. Affronta tutti gli argomenti grammaticali per progredire dal livello elementare a un livello intermedio-alto (corrispondenti ai livelli da A1 a B2 del *Common European Framework*) e oltre. Può essere utilizzata come grammatica di consultazione per i cinque anni della scuola secondaria di secondo grado, ma anche come supporto per ulteriore esercitazione e ripasso. I materiali proposti coprono un'ampia gamma di situazioni e contesti, per riflettere e consolidare l'utilizzo della lingua in situazioni reali. Offre, fra l'altro, argomenti di più immediato interesse per gli studenti di questa fascia d'età. *The Complete Grammar Book* garantisce inoltre un'adeguata esercitazione per gli esami *Cambridge Preliminary English Test* e *Cambridge First Certificate in English*.

Nello *Student's Book* sono stati inseriti i seguenti simboli per individuare facilmente alcune peculiarità del testo:

 Riquadri contrastivi inglese/italiano

 Attività di preparazione all'esame PET

 Esercizi di traduzione dall'italiano all'inglese

 Attività di preparazione all'esame FCE.

Offre inoltre:

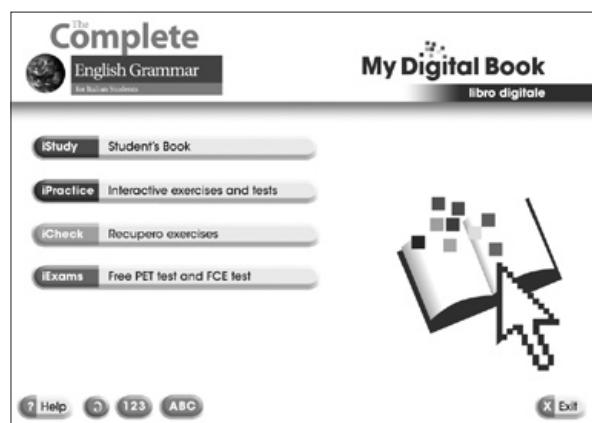
- Esercizi di grammatica e lessico (per esempio, direzioni, imperativo)
- Esercizi di riepilogo grammaticale (per esempio, forme del passato e present perfect)
- Appendici con pratiche informazioni supplementari (per esempio, le regole ortografiche)
- Un elenco di parole utili per l'esame PET.

Ciascuna unità si sviluppa su doppia pagina, per agevolare la consultazione delle regole grammaticali durante lo svolgimento degli esercizi. Sono presenti anche unità denominate 'Revisione e potenziamento' che propongono esercizi di riepilogo più impegnativi e senza spiegazioni grammaticali.

My Digital Book

Questo nuovo componente digitale offre agli studenti 4 risorse in 1:

- *iSTUDY* le pagine dell'intero libro in formato elettronico
- *iPRACTICE* attività interattive *iCHECK* accesso a un minicorso di Recupero online
- *iEXAM* accesso a due test online per gli esami PET e FCE



iSTUDY con il libro in formato digitale da utilizzare nello studio individuale. Le funzioni di questa sezione permettono di spostarsi facilmente dalla pagina dell'indice all'argomento grammaticale scelto, ingrandire parti della pagina per concentrarsi su una tabella o un esercizio, aggiungere e salvare note. È utilizzabile anche con la Lavagna Interattiva Multimediale.

iPRACTICE propone 26 argomenti con particolare attenzione alle strutture che creano maggiori difficoltà ai discenti italiani. Per ogni argomento sono inclusi un esercizio di dettato, due esercizi grammaticali e un esercizio di ascolto.

The Complete English Grammar for Italian Students

Benvenuto sul tuo *iPractice* CD-ROM. Posiziona il cursore sull'argomento grammaticale sui cui desideri esercitarti, poi clicca sul tipo di esercizio che vuoi svolgere.

1 <i>be e there is/are</i>	14 Periodo ipotetico e <i>wish</i>
2 Present simple	15 Articoli
3 Present continuous e present simple	16 Quantificatori
4 Tempi passati	17 Pronomi e possessivi
5 Present perfect e past simple	18 Preposizioni
6 Tempi futuri	19 Phrasal verbs
7 Ripasso dei tempi verbali	20 Aggettivi
8 Forma attiva e passiva	21 Aggettivi comparativi e superlativi
9 Verbi modali	22 Avverbi
10 Domande	• Dettato
11 Verbo + -ing o infinito	• Trasformazione
12 Strutture verbali	• Clicca e trascina
13 Discorso indiretto	• Ascolto
	23 Frasi relative
	24 Congiunzioni
	25 Coesione
	26 Accrescere l'enfasi

Uscita

The Complete English Grammar for Italian Students

Dettato Scelta multipla Riordina le parole Ascolto

1 *be e there is/are*

Scrivi le parole mancanti negli spazi.

Avvio

My name's Robert. I'm from London in England. There _____ in my family - me, my sister and my mum and dad. I'm 15 years old and _____ 13. _____ at school. The school _____ of London. interesting. _____ in my class. My favourite subjects _____ geography, _____ sports and music. _____ rugby, but _____ at it. _____ tonight actually. My favourite _____ rock and _____ The Arctic Monkeys.

Pagina iniziale Uscita

The Complete English Grammar for Italian Students

Dettato Scelta multipla Trasformazione Ascolto

15 Articoli

Riscrivi le frasi e aggiungi gli articoli corretti.

✓ 1 My father's teacher. He works in school near city centre. He teaches maths.
My father's a teacher. He works in a school near the city centre. He teaches maths.

✗ 2 I've got headache. Can you tell teacher I'm going to miss next lesson?
I've got a headache. Can you tell the teacher I'm going to miss next lesson?

3 Do you play musical instrument? I play guitar. I've got electric guitar.

4 I had great time in Rome. I went on tour of city. My favourite place was Coliseum.

5 My sister lives in USA. She's student. She's studying history at university.

Punteggio: 1/5 Verifica le risposte Riprova Vedi le risposte

Pagina iniziale Uscita

The Complete English Grammar for Italian Students

Dettato Completamento Scelta multipla Ascolto

5 Present perfect e past simple

Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

1 I ... TV last night.
 I watched have watched

2 Oh no! I think I ... my keys.
 I've lost I lose

3 Where ... yesterday?
 did you go have you been

4 ... the new James Bond film yet? ~ No, not yet.
 Did you see Have you seen

5 We ... in Rome since 2005. ~ Where ... before that?
 live / have you lived 've lived / did you live

6 ... Janet at the party last night? ~ No, ...
 Did you see / I didn't Have you seen / I haven't

Punteggio: 3/6 Verifica le risposte Riprova Vedi le risposte

Pagina iniziale Uscita

iCHECK con l'accesso a un'Espansione online che consiste in un vero e proprio minicorso di Recupero per esercitarsi con schede di materiali pronti. Ciascuna pagina propone un rapido specchietto grammaticale seguito da alcuni brevi esercizi su concetti basilari che gli studenti devono conoscere in merito alla struttura.

iEXAM con l'accesso ad altre due Espansioni online: due test PET e FCE completi all'interno del sito www.oxfordenglishtesting.com dove è possibile anche consultare un dizionario, usufruire di correzione immediata, assistenza tutoriale e altro.

PET Test A

Reading • Part 2 Questions 6-7 & 9

These people (A-H) want to go out this weekend. Decide which place would be the most suitable for the following people. Click on the correct answer (A-H).

A Highway Shopping Centre
Henry and Jane are 15. They would like to do something fun where they will meet other people their age. They don't mind having lessons as long as they aren't expensive.

B Countryside Health Club
We are a friendly group of cyclists who meet once a month for races around the local area. Come along with your own bike and a packed lunch. Adults and young people aged 12 years old and over are welcome.

C Female Cycling Club
We meet every Wednesday and every Saturday morning for walks around the local area. Stay in a lovely building in beautiful gardens with fantastic views of the countryside. Come with friends or come alone. We'll make you feel welcome!

D Parkside Walking Club
We meet every Wednesday and every Saturday morning for walks around the park and other areas of local interest. Most of our members are retired although we welcome all ages.

E Time Theme Park
You are a friendly adult club that meets on Wednesday evenings and Sunday mornings. We are hoping to form a team and join in local friendly matches. It's not just football Club members that meet for evening social events.

F Time Theme Park

Oxford University Press

The basics: prime strutture

Indichiamo alcune delle strutture di base della grammatica inglese con alcune delle differenze fondamentali tra inglese e italiano.

A Classificazione di parole

Le seguenti frasi esemplificano le principali classificazioni di parole.

We	study	English	at	school.
pronome	verbo	nome	preposizione	nome
<i>The</i>	<i>lessons</i>	<i>are</i>	<i>always</i>	<i>interesting</i>
determinante (articolo)	nome	verbo	avverbio	aggettivo
<i>I</i>		<i>and</i>		<i>really</i>
				avverbio
<i>My</i>	<i>teacher</i>	<i>is</i>	<i>marking</i>	<i>some</i>
determinante (aggettivo possessivo)	nome	verbo	verbo principale	determinante (quantificatore)
				nome
				<i>homework.</i>

B Ordine delle parole

L'ordine delle parole di base per le affermazioni è:

- i soggetto – verbo – oggetto

We	study	English.	I	enjoy	it.
soggetto	verbo	oggetto	soggetto	verbo	oggetto

Nota che alcuni verbi non reggono un oggetto (verbi transitivi).

- ii soggetto – verbo – complemento

School	is	fun.
soggetto	verbo	complemento

Nota che il complemento serve a descrivere il soggetto.

- iii soggetto – verbo – avverbio/espressione avverbiale

I	go	to school.	We	have	English	every day.
espressione avverbiale			espressione avverbiale			

Nota che un'espressione avverbiale in genere indica dove, quando, o per quanto tempo avviene qualcosa.

C Domande

Le domande con *be* si costruiscono mettendo la forma di *be* prima del soggetto.

Are you Italian? *Am I late?* *Where is Harry?*

Le domande con gli altri verbi si formano con la seguente costruzione:

verbo ausiliare + soggetto + forma base del verbo (infinito senza *to*)

Do you play tennis? *Where do you live?* *Can you speak Italian?*

D Pronomi

In inglese si esprimono sempre i pronomi soggetto ed oggetto.

Non sono mai combinati al verbo o espressi dalla forma del verbo.

I am Italian. Non *Am Italian.* *Sono italiano.*

I want to phone him. *Voglio telefonargli.*

Il pronomo *I* è sempre scritto con la lettera maiuscola.

My brother is 16 and I am 14. Non *My brother is 16 and i am 14.*

Esiste una sola forma *you* (tu, voi) per il singolare e plurale, che è sia informale che formale.

Si usa *you* anche per la terza persona singolare quando esprime la forma di cortesia: Lei/Loro.

You are late. *Sei in ritardo/ Siete in ritardo.*

How are you? Come stai?/Come state?/ Lei come sta?/Loro come stanno?

E Determinanti

I determinanti sono parole usate prima dei nomi. Comprendono parole come *some, my, your, every* e *this*. Gli articoli *the* e *a/an* sono anch'essi tipi di determinanti.

I'd like some coffee. Vorrei del caffè.

Is this your DVD? È questo il tuo DVD?

Non si usa *the* prima di altri determinanti.

My house is number 42. Non The my house is number 42. La mia casa è al numero 42.

Every student passed the exam. Non The every student passed the exam. Tutti gli studenti passarono l'esame.

F Nomi

I nomi non hanno genere. Quindi, *the* è l'unico articolo determinativo e *a/an* sono gli articoli indeterminativi. (Si usa *an* prima di un suono vocalico).

the man (l'uomo) *the woman* (la donna) *the people* (la gente)

a man (un uomo) *a woman* (una donna) *a person* (una persona)

an exam (un esame)

In generale, il plurale dei nomi si forma aggiungendo 's'.

Per alcune parole si aggiunge 'es'. Alcuni nomi hanno plurali irregolari.

school → *schools* *bus* → *buses* *person* → *people*

G Aggettivi

Gli aggettivi hanno un'unica forma. Non cambiano quando descrivono nomi al plurale.

an intelligent boy (un ragazzo intelligente) *an intelligent girl* (una ragazza intelligente)

intelligent people (persone intelligenti)

Gli aggettivi sono posti prima del nome che descrivono. Sono anche posti dopo alcuni verbi.

It's a red car. Non *It's a car red.* È una macchina rossa.

The car is red. La macchina è rossa.

► **Vai a pagg. 12 e 13 per esercizi su questi argomenti.**

► Per approfondimenti

verbi e tempi verbali: unità 1–105

domande: unità 65–73

nomi: unità 106–108

determinanti: unità 110–118

pronomi: unità 120–124

preposizioni: unità 126–134

aggettivi: unità 139–148

avverbi: unità 150–155

congiunzioni: unità 163–166

- 1** Scrivi a quale parte del discorso appartengono le parole di queste frasi. Usa le categorie grammaticali del riquadro.

aggettivo avverbio determinante congiunzione nome preposizione pronomi verbo

0 pronome 1 2 3
 ↓ ↓ ↓
 I am Italian. I live in Italy.
 ↑ ↑ ↑
 4 5 6

 7 8 9 10
 ↓ ↓ ↓ ↓
 My favourite food is fish and chips.
 ↑ ↑ ↑ ↑
 11 12 13

 14 15 16 17 18 19
 ↓ ↓ ↓ ↓ ↓ ↓
 My brother plays the guitar. He is very good at it.
 ↑ ↑ ↑ ↑ ↑ ↑
 20 21 22 23 24

- 2** Scrivi le parole del riquadro nella colonna corretta.

after and at big book but good + in interesting it
 my of really school some student usually very you your

pronomi	determinanti	nomi	aggettivi	avverbi	preposizioni	congiunzioni
I	my					after

- 3** Riordina le parole in modo da formare frasi di senso compiuto.

- 0 a student / I / am
 1 English / I / at school / study
 2 good / are / my teachers
 3 big / my school / is
 4 the school / teachers / good / has

 5 live / I / in Rome
 6 in / I / live / a / house / nice
 7 I / with / my parents / live
 8 at university / my sister / is
 9 I / pop music / like

 10 a scooter / have got / I
 11 it / I / every day / use
 12 to school / it / I / ride

4 Riordina le parole per formare delle domande.

- 0 your name / is / what *What is your name?*
1 you / how old / are
2 from the UK / you / are
3 football / like / you / do
4 you / do / live / where
5 is / your email address / what
6 speak English / you / can

5 Traduci le seguenti parole ed espressioni in inglese. Scrivile sotto la figura corrispondente.
Usa le parole del riquadro.

La Regina

Il Re

La mia scuola

Un ragazzo e una ragazza

bag black and white boy brother
girl interesting King lesson man
Queen school sister woman

Una lezione interessante

Una borsa bianca e nera

Un uomo e una donna

Mio fratello e mia sorella



0 A man and a woman.



4



1



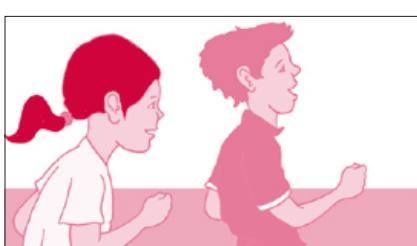
5



2



6



3



7

1

Present simple: **be** (forma affermativa e negativa)

I'm hungry. She's Italian. They aren't here today.

A Uso

Be è il verbo più comune in inglese. Di norma si usa per esprimere:

nazionalità	<i>I'm Italian. She's not French.</i>
età	<i>I'm 17. He's about 30.</i>
occupazione	<i>I'm a student. My sister's a lawyer.</i>
orari/giorni/date	<i>It's 6.30. It's the third of June.</i>
tempo atmosferico	<i>It's sunny. It isn't cold.</i>
prezzi	<i>The shoes are €60. It's £3.50.</i>
località	<i>The keys are on the table.</i>
caratteristiche e qualità	<i>He's from Milan. They're not here. I'm cold. You're right. It's blue. She's friendly. It's easy.</i>



Nota che si usa *be* con alcuni aggettivi che in italiano si utilizzano con l'ausiliare 'avere'. *We're hot. Abbiamo caldo.* *I'm hungry. Ho fame.* *She's thirsty. Ha sete.*

B Forma

	Forma completa	Forma contratta
Affermativa	I am	I'm
	you/we/they are	you/we/they're
	he/she/it is	he/she/it's
Negativa	I am not	I'm not
	you/we/they are not	you/we/they aren't o you/we/they're not
	he/she/it is not	he/she/it isn't o he/she/it's not



In inglese, la seconda persona singolare e plurale hanno la stessa forma verbale. Inoltre, non esiste una distinzione tra seconda persona formale e informale.

Nell'inglese parlato ed informale sono in genere più usate le forme contratte.

1 Completa le frasi in modo che risultano vere. Usa la forma affermativa o negativa di *be*.

- 0 Milan *isn't* the capital city of Italy. Rome *is* the capital.
- 1 Monaco in Italy. It in France.
- 2 Milan and Genova in the south of Italy. They the north.
- 3 The Apennines lakes. They mountains.
- 4 The Italian flag red white and blue. It red, white and green.
- 5 Italy a republic. It a monarchy. The president head of state.
- 6 Italian passports blue. They red.
- 7 Inter and Juventus football teams. They in Serie B. They Serie A.
- 8 I from Spain. I from Italy. I Italian.

2 Completa le frasi per ogni figura usando la forma corretta di *be* e le espressioni del riquadro.

twenty-one euros the twenty-first six euros fifty half past two
in row A in seat 12 in seat 13 a student British not included

Name	JANE ELIZABETH SMITH
Nationality	BRITISH CITIZEN
Occupation	STUDENT

- 0 She's British.
1 She



- 2 It
3 It today. 9 And you

GARLIC BREAD	€2.00
PIZZA X2	€6.50
WINE X2	€8.50
COFFEE X2	€4.00
TOTAL	€21.00

SERVICE NOT INCLUDED

- 4 The pizzas
5 The total bill
6 Service



- 7 We
8 I
9 And you

3 Carlo si presenta alla sua nuova classe di inglese. Leggi gli appunti e completa la sua presentazione usando la forma corretta di *be*.

Personal details: Swiss, 19

Home: from Lugano – Italian-speaking,
in south-east

Languages: Italian (first language), German
(fluent), French + English (not too bad)

Job/studies: uni student – course not always
easy, lectures interesting, fun

Interests: most sports and cinema – favourite
film *The Lord of the Rings* trilogy, favourite
sport tennis (not very good at it)

My name's Carlo Pedroni. I'm from Switzerland and I'm 19 years old. I from Lugano. It's an Italian-speaking city in the south-east of the country. Italian my first language, but I'm also fluent in German. My French and English too bad. I'm a university student – my course always easy, but the lectures interesting and it's fun. I'm interested in most sports and the cinema. My favourite film is *The Lord of the Rings* trilogy. Tennis is my favourite sport, but I'm very good at it.

4 Scrivi delle frasi su di te fornendo le informazioni richieste.

- 0 Name: My name's Roberto.
1 Name:
2 Age:
3 Nationality:

- 4 Home:
5 Languages:
6 Job/studies:
7 Interests:

Present simple: be (domande e risposte brevi)

Are you hungry? Am I late? Is she here? Is your pizza OK? Where are you from?

A Forma

La domanda si costruisce mettendo la forma di *be* prima del soggetto.

Be	Soggetto	
Am	I	
Are	you	
Is	he/she/it	
Are	we	... ?
Are	you	
Are	they	



Nota che in inglese la struttura delle frasi è fissa, a differenza dell'italiano. Inoltre, in inglese è sempre necessario esprimere il soggetto, che in italiano può essere sottinteso.

*Are you from London? ~Yes, I am.
Are you a student? ~No, I'm not.*

- i Le parole interrogative che si usano con *be* sono:
What (Che cosa), *Where* (Dove), *How* (Come), *Why* (Perché), *When* (Quando), *Who* (Chi), *Which* (Quale), *Whose* (Di chi).
- ii La parola interrogativa si mette all'inizio della domanda.
*Where are you from? What's her name?
How old are you? How long is the film?*
- iii Nell'inglese parlato ed informale si usano di norma le forme contratte: *What's ..., Where's ..., How's ... ecc.*
*What's the matter? Where's Peter?
How's life? Who's hungry?*

► Vedi unità 66 per altri usi delle parole interrogative.

B Risposte brevi

A volte può essere poco cortese rispondere con un semplice *Yes* o *No*. Le risposte brevi a una domanda del tipo *Are you ...?*, *Is she ...?* ecc. sono:

Yes,	I am. you are. he/she/it is. we are. you are. they are.	No,	I'm not. you aren't. o you're not. he/she/it isn't. o he's/she's/it's not. we aren't. o we're not. they aren't. o they're not.
------	--	-----	--

Are you OK? ~ Yes, I am.

Is he here? ~ Yes, he is.

Are they here? ~ No, they're not.

Is it expensive? ~ No, it isn't.

Nota che le forme contratte (*I'm*, *he's* ecc.) non si usano per le risposte brevi affermative.

► Vedi unità 73 per ulteriori approfondimenti sulle risposte brevi.

- 1** Immagina di conoscere una nuova persona. Usa i suggerimenti per scrivere delle domande come nell'esempio.

- 0 what / your name? *What's your name?*
1 where / you / from?
2 you / a student?
3 how old / you?
4 when / your birthday?
5 what / your phone number?
6 what / your email address?
7 you / interested in football?
8 you / free tonight?

- 2** Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 1. Usa le risposte brevi (*Yes, I am* o *No, I'm not*) oppure fornisci le informazioni richieste.

- 0 My name's Francesca.
1 5
2 6
3 7
4 8

- 3** Scrivi le domande per queste risposte usando *Are you* e gli aggettivi del riquadro.

sure ready OK serious hungry interested tired

- 0 Are you serious? ~ Yes, I am. Totally.
1 ? ~ Yes, let's go!
2 ? ~ Yes, I'm 100% certain.
3 ? ~ Yes, I am. When's dinner?
4 ? ~ Yes, I'm fine, thanks.
5 ? ~ Maybe. Tell me more.
6 ? ~ Yes, it's time for bed.

- 4** Completa il quiz usando la parola interrogativa adatta e *is* oppure *are*. Sai rispondere alle domande?

UK QUIZ

How much do you know about the UK? Do this quiz and win a weekend break in London.

- 0 What is the population of the UK? a 40 million b 60 million
1 the most common surname in the UK? a Jones b Smith
2 *The Times* and *The Sun*? a hotels b newspapers
3 the patron saint of England? a St George b St John
4 Wembley Stadium? a Manchester b London
5 Boxing Day? a 24th December b 26th December
6 The Pennines? a Scotland b England
7 the present English football champions?
8 the Prime Minister of the UK?



- 5** Aggiungi al quiz quattro domande relative all'Italia che inizino con *Who is ...*, *What are ...* ecc.

- 0 Who is the Prime Minister of Italy? 2
0 What is the Quirinal? 3
1 4

There is e There are

There's a pen on the table. There aren't any seats. Is there a bank near here?

A Uso

There is(n't) e there are(n't) si usano per dire che qualcosa esiste oppure non esiste.

There's a train at 6.30.

There's a problem.

There aren't any free seats.

B Forma

	Singolare	Plurale
Affermativa	There is/There's ...	There are ...
Negativa	There isn't ...	There aren't ...
Domande	Is there ...?	Are there ...?
Risposte brevi	Yes, there is. No, there isn't.	Yes, there are. No, there aren't.

C Some e any

Some e any vengono usati principalmente per indicare quantità indefinite (alcuni/e, qualche) e per esprimere il partitivo (del/della, ne ecc.).

Some e any sono soggetti a molte regole; tuttavia la regola generale è che per i nomi plurali si usa:

i *some* per frasi affermative,

There are some good beaches near here.

Ci sono delle belle spiagge qui vicino.

There are some cookies.

Ci sono dei biscotti.

ii *any* per frasi negative e per domande.

There aren't any good beaches near here.

Non ci sono delle belle spiagge qui vicino.

Are there any cookies?

Ci sono dei biscotti?

► Vedi unità 114 per altre regole su *some e any*.

1 Guarda la figura e completa le frasi usando *There is(n't)* o *There are(n't)*.

- 0 There's a whiteboard.
- 1 a television.
- 2 some students.
- 3 a CD player.
- 4 some books.
- 5 a map.
- 6 any other pictures.



2 Completa le domande relative alla figura dell'Esercizio 1 usando *Is there* o *Are there*. Poi scrivi risposte brevi.

- 0 Is there a lesson in progress? ~ Yes, there is.
- 1 a computer? ~
- 2 any desks? ~
- 3 a clock? ~
- 4 a window? ~
- 5 any plants? ~

3 Completa le frasi che descrivono la tua stanza in questo momento. Puoi usare le parole del riquadro oppure aggiungerne altre.

bed(s) book(s) chair(s) clock(s) computer(s) cup(s)
DVD(s) flower(s) mirror(s) picture(s) table(s) TV(s)

- 0 There's a computer.
- 1 There's a
- 2 There isn't a
- 3 There are some
- 4 There aren't any

4 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Usa le parole ed espressioni dei riquadri.

There's a There isn't a There are some There aren't any

queue seat at the back free tables lovely cafés



- 0 There's a seat at the back.



- 2



- 1



- 3

Unità

4

Revisione e potenziamento (unità 1–3) Present simple di **be** e **there is/are**

- 1 **Be: forma affermativa** Guarda la carta d'identità di Rachel e aggiungi l'età. Poi completa le altre due carte d'identità, la prima con i tuoi dati e la seconda con i dati di qualcuno che conosci. Poi scrivi frasi simili a quelle su Rachel.

0

ID CARD



NAME: RACHEL EVANS

DATE OF BIRTH: 29/11/74

BIRTHPLACE: MIAMI, FL., USA



OCCUPATION: TEACHER

She's Rachel Evans.

She's ... years old.

She's from Miami.

She's American.

She's a teacher.

1

ID CARD



NAME:

DATE OF BIRTH:

BIRTHPLACE:



OCCUPATION:

I'm

2

ID CARD



NAME:

DATE OF BIRTH:

BIRTHPLACE:



OCCUPATION:

- 2 **Be: forma affermativa e negativa** Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando i suggerimenti dati.

- 0 I / from Milan I'm from Milan. o I'm not from Milan.
- 1 I / from Sicily _____
- 2 I / 17 years old _____
- 3 I / interested in music _____
- 4 it / January _____
- 5 it / cold today _____
- 6 my teacher / Italian _____

3 Be: domande Completa le domande relative ai personaggi dei testi qui sotto. Usa le espressioni interrogative del riquadro oppure formula domande che richiedono una risposta Yes / No.

What Where Who How much

- 0 Who is Jay-Z? ~ He's an American rapper.
1 real name? ~ It's Shawn Carter.
2 from? ~ He's from Brooklyn.
3 married? ~ Yes, he is. To Beyoncé Knowles.
4 Maria Sharapova? ~ She's a tennis player and model.
5 from? ~ She's originally from Russia.
6 based? ~ In Florida in the USA.
7 Steve Jobs? ~ He's chairman of a big computer company.
8 American? ~ Yes, he is. He's from San Francisco.
9 rich? ~ Yes, he's very rich.
10 worth? ~ Around \$6 billion.

Jay-Z is an American rapper from Brooklyn, New York City. His real name is Shawn Carter. He is married to R&B singer Beyoncé Knowles.

Maria Sharapova is a tennis player. She's also famous for modelling and for advertising products such as shoes, watches and cameras. She is originally from Russia, but is now based in Florida in the United States.

Steve Jobs is an American businessman and IT expert from San Francisco in the USA. He is chairman of a big computer company. He is worth around \$6 billion.

PET 4 There is/are Leggi i dialoghi e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

A ⁰ C a good café near here?

B Yes, ¹ an excellent one just round the corner.

A ² a sports centre here?

B No, ³, but ⁴ a swimming pool.

A How many students ⁵ in your class?

B ⁶ 26, I think.

A I haven't got any money. ⁷ an ATM near here?

B Yes, ⁸ one just round the corner.

0 A There's

B There are

(C) Is there

1 A there's

B there are

C is there

2 A There are

B Are there

C Is there

3 A there is

B there are

C there isn't

4 A there are

B there's

C is there

5 A there are

B there is

C are there

6 A Is there

B There's

C There are

7 A Is there

B Are there

C There are

8 A there's

B there isn't

C there are

5 **There is/are** Scrivi una frase per i luoghi 1–6 della mappa usando *There's a* .

0 There's a restaurant in Queen Street.

1

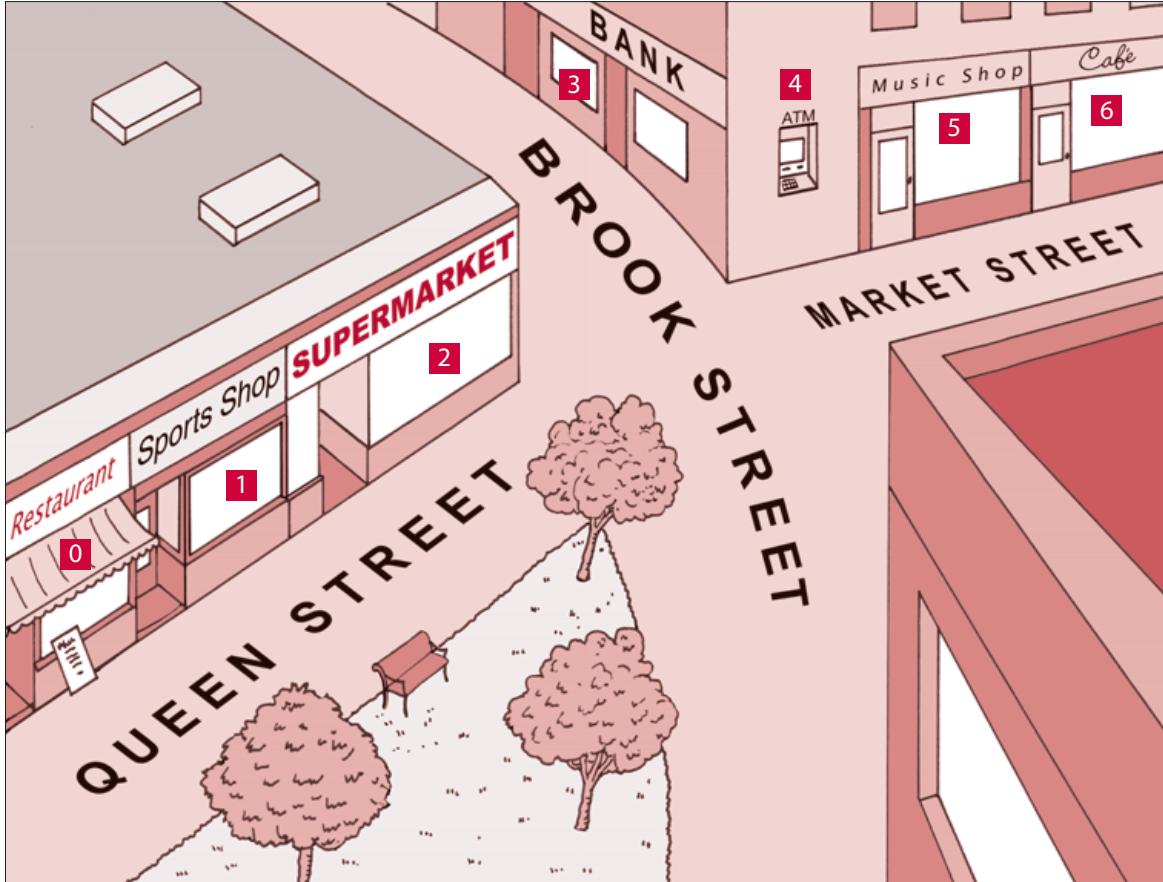
2

3

4

5

6



6 **There is/are** Completa le domande e scrivi le risposte relative ai luoghi dell'Esercizio 5.

0 Is there a restaurant in Queen Street? ~ Yes, there is.

1 a café in Market Street? ~

2 an ATM in Brook Street? ~

3 a supermarket in Market Street? ~

4 a bank in Brook Street? ~

5 any cafés in Brook Street? ~

6 any trees in Queen Street? ~

7 **There is/are** Scrivi quattro frasi su alcuni luoghi pubblici della tua città usando *There's a ... in ...* . Scegli tra i luoghi del riquadro.

ATM bank bar café computer shop phone shop restaurant sports shop supermarket

0 There's a bank in via Trieste.

1

2

3

4

8 Present simple di *be*; *there is/are* Traduci le frasi e le domande.

0 C'è una festa sabato.

.....
There's a party on Friday.

1 Ho caldo.

2 Viene dal Regno Unito.

3 Hai fame?

4 Ha sedici anni, penso.

5 C'è una banca qui vicino?

6 Non c'è del latte.

7 Ci sono dei computer in classe.

9 Grammatica e lessico: paesi e nazionalità Completa la tabella con i paesi e le nazionalità del riquadro.

France	American	Japanese	French	China	Swiss	Greece	Mexico	Greek
Italian	Argentina	The United States	Italy	Spanish	Japan	Mexican	Poland	
The United Kingdom	Chinese	Polish	Spain	Switzerland	Argentinian	British		

Country	Nationality
0 Argentina	Argentinian
0 China	Chinese
1 F.....	
2 G.....	
3 I.....	
4 J.....	
5 M.....	
6 P.....	
7 S.....	
8 Sw.....	
9 T.....	
10 T.....	

10 Grammatica e lessico: paesi e nazionalità Scegli quattro paesi e scrivi due frasi su una persona famosa di quel paese come nell'esempio.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| 0 Maradona is from Argentina. | Maradona is Argentinian. |
| 1 | |
| 2 | |
| 3 | |
| 4 | |

Unità

5

Present simple (forma affermativa e negativa)

She works in Rome. I hope you like it. They don't live near here.

A Uso

Il present simple si usa per parlare di fatti ed eventi visti come permanenti. Questi possono includere:

i fatti e situazioni permanenti,
I live in Rome. It takes two hours by car. He doesn't speak English.

ii abitudini ed azioni abituali,
I walk to school. We usually have lunch at 12.30.

iii stati d'animo come pensieri, sentimenti e simpatie/antipatie.
I think he's Spanish. I hope it doesn't rain. I don't like coffee.

B Forma

Affermativa	
I/you/we/they	live/want/know/play/watch/study ecc.
he/she/it	lives/wants/ knows/plays/watches/studies ecc.
Negativa	
I/you/we/they don't	live/want/know/play/watch/study ecc.
he/she/it doesn't	

i Nota che per le frasi negative si usa la forma base del verbo.

He doesn't know. Non *He doesn't knows.*

ii A volte in contesti formali si usa la forma negativa non contratta.

The President does not agree. I do not accept the situation.

Si può anche usare la forma negativa non contratta per dare enfasi.

I do not want to see him. She does not like football.

C Desinenze verbali he/she/it ecc.

La maggioranza dei verbi	aggiunge -s like → likes cost → costs play → plays
I verbi che terminano in -o, -ss, -sh, -ch, -x	aggiungono -es go → goes wash → washes mix → mixes
I verbi che terminano in consonante + y	y → -ies carry → carries study → studies fly → flies
Verbo have	has

D Avverbi ed espressioni di frequenza

Si usa spesso il present simple con avverbi ed espressioni di frequenza per dire quanto spesso si fa qualcosa.

I always buy a newspaper. He is occasionally late for school.

We have English lessons every day. I generally go out once or twice a week.

► Vedi unità 152 per altri usi degli avverbi di frequenza.

- 1** Guarda la figura di Max nella sua stanza. Scrivi delle frasi su di lui usando le parole ed espressioni del riquadro.

about 17 or 18 a scooter rock music biology the guitar
a lot of DVDs to the gym glasses Roma

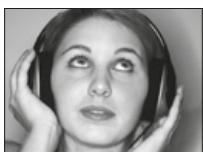
0	He likes rock music.	(like)				
1	(go)	5	(ride)	
2	(support)	6	(study)	
3	(be)	7	(watch)	
4	(play)	8	(wear)	



- 2** Scrivi frasi vere per te usando le parole ed espressioni dell'Esercizio 1.

0	I like rock music.	o I don't like rock music.	
1	5
2	6
3	7
4	8

- 3** Completa la descrizione che Laura fa di se stessa usando la forma corretta del present simple dei verbi tra parentesi.



General: I'm Laura, I'm 17 and I ⁰ live (live) at home in Sheffield with my parents and one of my sisters. My other sister ¹ (live) in Manchester – she's at university. My dad ² (teach) science at a local school and my mum ³ (not work).

Interests: My main interest is music. My music taste ⁴ (vary), and I ⁵ (have) lots of different kinds of music on my MP3 player, but I generally ⁶ (like) music you can dance to. I ⁷ (play) the guitar in a band. We occasionally ⁸ (play) at friends' parties, but it's not too serious.

Plans: I ⁹ (hope) to go to university next year. I ¹⁰ (not know) where, but I ¹¹ (want) to study music.

Free time: When I ¹² (not have) any homework, I usually ¹³ (meet up) with my best friend, Jen. She ¹⁴ (play) the bass guitar in the band. We generally ¹⁵ (spend) the time listening to music, writing songs and just hanging out.

Unità

6

Present simple (domande e risposte brevi)

Do you speak English? Does Sam play tennis? Where does she live?

A Forma

La domanda al present simple si fa con *do/does* + soggetto + forma base del verbo (infinito senza *to*).

Do o Does	Soggetto	Forma base
Do	I/you/we/they	work/go/want/know ecc.?
Does	he/she/it	

Do you play tennis? Does she live in London? Do they know about the party?

La parola interrogativa si mette all'inizio della domanda.

How often do you play tennis? Where does she live? When does the film start?

B Risposte brevi

A volte può essere poco cortese rispondere con un semplice *Yes* o *No*. Le risposte brevi a domande del tipo *Do you ...?*, *Does he ...?* ecc. sono:

Yes,	I/you/we/they do . he/she/it does .
No,	I/you/we/they don't . he/she/it doesn't .

*Do you live in London? ~ Yes, I **do**.*

*Does she speak Italian? ~ No, she **doesn't**.*

► Vedi unità 73 per ulteriori approfondimenti sulle risposte brevi.

1 Usa i suggerimenti per scrivere delle domande.

- 0 you speak English? Do you speak English?
- 0 where / you live? Where do you live?
- 1 what school / you go to?
- 2 what time / your school start and finish?
- 3 you walk to school?
- 4 your school have a swimming pool?
- 5 your town or city / have a football team?
- 6 what / you do at weekends?
- 7 what kind of music / you like?
- 8 you play a musical instrument?
- 9 you do any sports?
- 10 you like horror films?

- 2** Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 1.
 Usa le risposte brevi (*Yes, I do.*; *No, he doesn't.* ecc.) oppure fornisci le informazioni richieste.

0 Yes, I do.	6
0 I live in Ancona.	7
1	8
2	9
3	10
4	11
5	12

- 3** Completa il questionario relativo a internet usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

you / buy or sell you / download you / use your computer / have
 you / go you / use other people / use

You and the internet

- 0** What *do you use* the internet for in general?
 research/studies entertainment communication
- 1** How often online?
 several times a day once a day less than once a day
- 2** things on the internet?
 buy sell buy and sell
- 3** How often music?
 often occasionally never
- 4** Which networking sites ?
 MySpace Facebook Bebo other
- 5** What security features ?
 anti-virus firewall other
- 6** your computer?
 parents brother/sister friends no one

- 4** Scrivi le risposte alle domande dell'Esercizio 3.

0 I use the internet for communication.	4
1	5
2	6
3	

- 5** Aggiungi al questionario quattro domande per saperne di più su come le persone utilizzano internet. Puoi usare le espressioni del riquadro oppure inventarne di nuove.

play games on the internet? download films? visit chatrooms? send emails?
 have your own website? watch sport? have a favourite website?

- 0** Do you play games on the internet?

- 1**
- 2**
- 3**
- 4**

Have got

I've got a new phone. She's got short hair. Have you got a pen?

A Uso

Si può usare *have got* per parlare di:

i Possesso

*I've got a bike. She hasn't got a car.
I haven't got my ID card with me.
Have you got your mobile with you?*

Si usa *have got ... with me/you* per esprimere il fatto che si possiede qualcosa in un dato momento.

ii Le caratteristiche o qualità di qualcosa

*She's got long hair.
Has the school got a café?*

iii Relazioni

*I've got two sisters.
They haven't got any children.
Has she got a boyfriend?*

iv Malattie ed altre affezioni mediche

I've got a headache. He's got a broken leg.

B Forma

Affermativa	
I/you/we/they've he/she/it's	got
Negativa	
I/you/we/they haven't he/she/it hasn't	got
Domande	
Have I/you/we/they Has he/she/it	

i In contesti più formali e nell'inglese scritto, si possono usare le forme complete *I have got ..., She has got ..., They have got ...* ecc.

ii Si possono usare le parole interrogative (*How many ..., What kind of ..., Which ...* ecc.) con *have got*.

How many bedrooms has it got?

C Risposte brevi

Le risposte brevi più naturali ad una domanda del tipo *Have you got...? ecc.* sono:

Yes,	I/you/we/they have . he/she/it has .
No,	I/you/we/they haven't . he/she/it hasn't .

*Have you got a computer? ~ Yes, I have.
Has Brighton got an airport? ~ No, it hasn't.*

Nota che non si usa *have got* nelle risposte brevi (Non *Yes, I've got.*).

D Have o have got?

A volte è possibile usare *have* anziché *have got*. Ciò è più comune in contesti più formali, specie per domande e frasi negative.

*Do you have any money on you?
She doesn't have a car.*

► **Vedi unità 88 per altri usi di *have* come verbo principale.**

1 Scrivi frasi vere per te usando *I've got* o *I haven't got*.

- 0 I've got short hair.
- 1 long hair.
- 2 a scooter.
- 3 a part-time job.
- 4 a sister.
- 5 a brother.
- 6 a laptop.
- 7 a bike.

2 Descrivi le figure usando *have got* e le parole del riquadro.

a new car a garden a headache long hair any money toothache



0 He's got toothache.



3 I on me.



1 She



4 He



2 He



5 It

3 Completa le domande usando *with you*. Poi scrivi delle risposte vere per te usando *Yes, I have* o *No, I haven't*.

0 Have you got your bike *with you?* ~ Yes, I have.

1 your mobile ?~

2 your laptop ?~

3 your ID card ?~

4 Leggi gli annunci con gli appunti scritti a fianco a mano. Immagina di fare delle telefonate per ottenere le informazioni di cui hai bisogno. Usa la forma corretta di *have got*.

0 a computer room?

I wi-fi?

OXFORD
SCHOOL OF ENGLISH
Improve your English today!

2 a café?

3 any qualifications?

Private guitar tutor

Contact Dave 07430778234

4 a website?

5 a carry case?

LAPTOP FOR SALE

Contact 07189458721

6 which games?

0 Has the school got a computer room?

1

2

3

4

5

6

PET 1 **Present simple: forma affermativa e negativa** Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

A day in the life

Dale Lester, king of the paparazzi

I get up at about 6.30. First, I check my website MrPhoto.com and then I contact my offices around the world to see what's new. I then ⁰A breakfast. I ¹ at the office at about ten o'clock. I own the UK's biggest celebrity photographic agency and I ² about 200 paparazzi. I ³ photos these days because my time is taken up running the business. My dad is my number one inspiration – he is 69 and he ⁴ his own business.

A big part of my work is socializing. When celebrities meet me at parties, they ⁵ to be my friend. They know that if I like a celebrity, I ⁶ their pictures if they don't want me to.

When I'm not at work, I love spending time at my main home in London. I ⁷ alone with my cat. I ⁸ houses all around the world – in the south of France, in Los Angeles and Australia, and several in the UK. Most evenings, I ⁹ an hour's exercise, cook dinner and then watch TV. I ¹⁰ to bed before midnight.

- | | | |
|-----------------------|--------------------|--------------------|
| 0 A make | B makes | C don't make |
| 1 A generally arrives | B generally arrive | C arrive generally |
| 2 A employ | B employs | C don't employ |
| 3 A take | B not take | C don't take |
| 4 A still run | B still runs | C runs still |
| 5 A always wants | B want always | C always want |
| 6 A publish | B not publish | C don't publish |
| 7 A lives | B don't live | C live |
| 8 A has also got | B have also got | C have got also |
| 9 A do | B does | C don't do |
| 10 A go usually | B usually go | C usually goes |

2 **Present simple: domande** Completa le domande per queste risposte.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 0 What time <u>do you get up?</u> | ? ~ I usually get up at 7.00. |
| 1 How <u>.....</u> | ? ~ I walk to school. |
| 2 Which school <u>.....</u> | ? ~ I go to Liceo Newton in Viale Manzoni. |
| 3 When <u>.....</u> | ? ~ School starts at 8.15 and it finishes at 1.30. |
| 4 <u>.....</u> school? ~ Yes, I do. I enjoy it very much. | |
| 5 What <u>.....</u> | ? ~ After school, I do my homework. |
| 6 How often <u>.....</u> | ? ~ We get homework every day! |
| 7 What <u>.....</u> | ? ~ In the evenings, I usually watch TV. |
| 8 <u>.....</u> any brothers or sisters? ~ Yes, I have. I've got a brother. | |

3 Present simple: forma affermativa e negativa Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 2.

0 I usually get up at 7.15.

1 _____

2 _____

3 _____

4 _____

5 _____

6 _____

7 _____

8 _____

T 4 Present simple e have got Traduci le frasi e le domande.

0 Vivo a Milano.

I live in Milan.

1 Ascolto musica rock e punk.

4 Dove vivi?

2 A lui non piace il calcio.

5 Ha i capelli biondi.

3 Suoni uno strumento musicale?

6 Hai il cellulare con te?

5 Grammatica e lessico: attività con play, do e go Si usa play, do o go con le attività del riquadro?

Riscrivile nella colonna corretta.

computer games exercise football shopping skiing swimming
tennis athletics to the gym gymnastics yoga a musical instrument
karate rugby camping puzzles (sudoku, crosswords)

play	do	go
football	yoga	skiing

6 Grammatica e lessico: attività con play, do e go Scrivi delle frasi vere per te, per la tua famiglia e amici usando alcuna delle attività dell'Esercizio 5.

0 I play football.

0 My mother does yoga.

0 I don't go to the gym.

1 _____

2 _____

3 _____

4 _____

5 _____

6 _____

Present continuous (forma affermativa e negativa)

I'm doing my homework. It isn't working at the moment. The weather's improving.

A Uso

Il present continuous si usa per parlare di azioni in corso di svolgimento (o non in corso di svolgimento) nel momento in cui si parla.

Queste possono corrispondere a:

- i azioni in corso adesso,
Jo's waiting for us outside. She's wearing jeans. It's raining.
- ii azioni in corso in questo periodo, ma non necessariamente in questo preciso momento,
*I'm reading a great book at the moment.
I'm not studying history this semester.*
- iii situazioni che cambiano.
Your English is getting better. Exams are getting more difficult.



In italiano non esiste una forma verbale specifica equivalente al present continuous e per descrivere queste azioni si utilizza spesso la costruzione stare + gerundio.

I'm working in Paris at the moment. Sto lavorando a Parigi in questo periodo.

- Si può anche usare la forma del present continuous per parlare del futuro.

Vedi unità 37.

B Forma

Il present continuous si forma con la costruzione *be + -ing*.

	Forma completa		Forma contratta	
Affermativa	I am you/we/they are he/she/it is	working	I'm you/we/they're he/she/it's	working
Negativa	I am not you/we/they are not he/she/it is not	working	I'm not you/we/they're not o aren't he/she/it's not o isn't	working

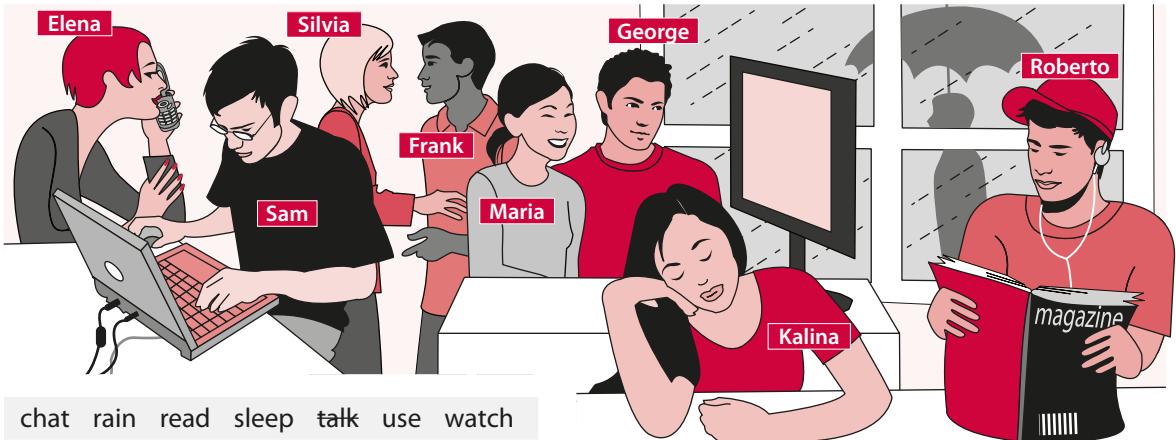
- i Con i pronomi soggetto (*I, you, they* ecc.) la forma contratta è la più usata. La forma completa è usata di norma solo per situazioni più formali (nello scritto) e per dare enfasi.
We are looking forward to seeing you. I am not listening!
- ii Si può usare l'ausiliare *be* da solo nella forma coniugata appropriata al contesto quando l'azione è già stata nominata.
*Jim isn't learning German. Tom is.
I'm not having a coffee, but Silvia and Marta are.*
- iii Alcuni verbi non sono usati normalmente alla forma del present continuous (*believe, know, like, want* ecc.).

► Vedi unità 14 per altri usi dei verbi *believe, know, like, want* ecc.

C Spelling della forma -ing

La maggioranza dei verbi	aggiunge -ing play → playing work → working
Verbi che terminano in -e	elimina -e write → writing dance → dancing
Verbi che terminano in vocale + consonante	raddoppiano la consonante swim → swimming shop → shopping

1 Guarda la figura e completa le frasi usando i verbi del riquadro.



chat rain read sleep talk use watch

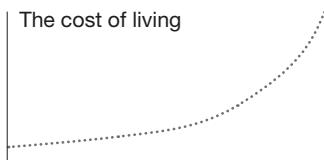
- 0 Elena is talking on her mobile.
 1 Sam the computer.
 2 George and Maria TV.
 3 Roberto a magazine.
 4 Frank and Silvia to each other.
 5 Kalina
 6 It outside.

2 Leggi l'esempio e completa le altre frasi in modo simile usando i verbi del riquadro. Le frasi si riferiscono alla figura dell'Esercizio 1.

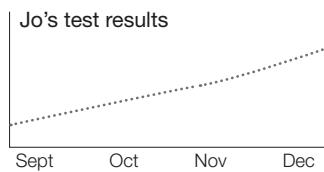
chat listen to talk watch wear

- 0 Maria isn't talking on her mobile. Elena is
 1 Sam his MP3 player.
 2 Frank and Silvia TV.
 3 Frank a cap.
 4 George and Maria to each other.

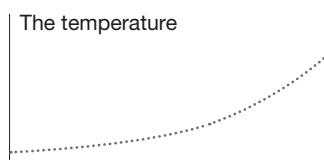
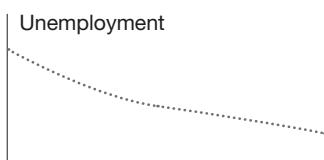
3 Scrivi una frase per ciascun grafico usando i verbi in corsivo.



- 0 The cost of living is increasing. increase 2 improve



- 1 decrease 3 rise



- 1 decrease 3 rise

4 Scrivi delle frasi vere per te. Alcune si riferiscono a questo preciso momento, altre invece si svolgono in questo periodo, ma non in questo preciso momento.

- 0 wear a T-shirt I'm not wearing a T-shirt.
 1 listen to music
 2 read a good book
 3 watch TV
 4 wear a watch
 5 learn to drive
 6 wear jeans

*Is it raining? Are you doing your homework? What are you doing?***A Forma**

Le domande si formano coniugando *be* e mettendolo prima del soggetto.

Be	Soggetto	Verbo
Am	I	
Are	you	
Is	he/she/it	working?
Are	we	
Are	you	
Are	they	

La parola interrogativa si mette all'inizio della domanda.

What are you doing?

Why are you laughing?

What's she wearing?

B Risposte brevi

Può a volte essere poco cortese rispondere con un semplice *Yes* o *No*.

Le risposte brevi a domande al present continuous sono:

Yes,	I am.	No,	I'm not.
	you are.		you aren't. o you're not.
	he/she/it is.		he/she/it isn't. o he's/she's/it's not.
	we are.		we aren't. o we're not.
	you are.		you aren't. o you're not.
	they are.		they aren't. o they're not.

Are you feeling OK? ~ Yes, I am.

Is it raining? ~ Yes, it is.

Are they waiting? ~ No, they're not.

Is she coming? ~ No, she isn't.

Non si usa la forma contratta (*Yes, I'm* ecc.) nelle risposte brevi affermative.

1 Scrivi le domande per queste risposte usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

what / Alicia what / you what / you where / your friends
where / you who / Gianluca why / you

0 *What are you looking for?*

~ I'm looking for my keys.

1 _____ ~ We're going to the cinema.

2 _____ ~ They're staying at the Hotel Roma.

3 _____ ~ I'm learning English for my job.

4 _____ ~ She's studying music at university.

5 _____ ~ He's talking to Sue.

6 _____ ~ I'm listening to the Arctic Monkeys.

2 Scrivi due domande e due risposte brevi per ogni figura.



0



1



2



3



4

- 0 a he / talk on his mobile Is he talking on his mobile? ~ No, he isn't.
b he / listen to music Is he listening to music? ~ Yes, he is.
- 1 a she / cook ? ~
b she / make coffee ? ~
- 2 a they / play chess ? ~
b they / play cards ? ~
- 3 a it / snow ? ~
b it / rain ? ~
- 4 a Roma / win ? ~
b Chelsea / win ? ~

3 Completa le domande dell'intervistatore usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

you / enjoy / it how / the new album / go how / it / go what / you / work on
where / you / stay where / you / tour you / learn / an instrument

MUSIC NOW'S ONE MINUTE INTERVIEW

This week: *Paul Mann*, lead singer of American pop group The Change.

- 0 Hello, Paul. How's it going?
It's going very well, thanks. We're working hard, but we're having a good time.
- 1 at the moment?
Well, we're working on our next album and we're also touring.
- 2 ?
The new album's going very well, actually. We're happy with about five or six songs, and we're currently writing a few more.
- 3 And ?
Just in Europe – ten or so countries I think. We're playing a few gigs in the UK at the moment.
- 4 ?
Well, you get used to life on the road, it's part of the job. But, yeah, we are enjoying it, it's fun.
And we do get to stay in some great hotels.
- 5 And at the moment?
Are you in a luxury hotel?
Well, we're not actually staying in a hotel, which, to be honest, makes a nice change. We're staying in an apartment that the record company owns.
You're the singer in the band, but I understand you also play other instruments.
That's right. I play the guitar and the piano a bit. I'm always trying to learn a new instrument.
- 6 at the moment?
Yes, I'm learning the drums actually. I'm not very good though.

He normally works in Rome, but he's working in Milan at the moment.

A Uso

- i Il present simple si usa per fatti, abitudini e azioni abitudinarie e stati d'animo, come pensieri, sentimenti e intuizioni.

She speaks Italian. Parla italiano.

It rains a lot this time of year. Piove molto in questo periodo dell'anno.

I generally read the newspaper every day. In genere leggo il giornale ogni giorno.

School starts at 8.30. La scuola inizia alle 8.30.

- ii Il present continuous si usa per parlare di azioni che sono in corso di svolgimento (o non sono in corso di svolgimento) nel momento in cui si parla o nel periodo in cui si parla.

She's speaking Italian. Sta parlando italiano.

It isn't raining. Non sta piovendo.

I'm reading a great book at the moment. Sto leggendo un bel libro in questo momento.

It's starting to rain. Sta iniziando a piovere.

B Present continuous per esprimere ripetizione

Per parlare di azioni che avvengono regolarmente o ripetutamente, si usa di norma il present simple. Si può tuttavia usare il present continuous anche con avverbi di tempo come *always* (sempre), *forever* (sempre, per sempre), *constantly* (costantemente) quando si vuole porre l'enfasi sulla ripetitività di un'azione o per esprimere irritazione.

I lose my keys all the time. Perdo le chiavi tutte le volte.

She borrows my clothes all the time. Prende sempre in prestito i miei vestiti.

I'm always losing my keys. Sto sempre a perdere le chiavi.

She's forever borrowing my clothes. Sta sempre a prendere i miei vestiti.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 It usually *rains* / 's raining at this time of year.
- 1 We usually go / are going on holiday twice a year.
- 2 Sssh! I listen / 'm listening to the radio.
- 3 We don't watch / aren't watching television very often.
- 4 What do you cook / are you cooking? It smells / 's smelling wonderful.
- 5 Sue isn't here at the moment. I think / 'm thinking she plays / 's playing tennis.
- 6 I learn / 'm learning to drive at the moment. My brother teaches / 's teaching me.
- 7 A Does it ever snow / Is it ever snowing here?
B Occasionally. But it doesn't usually get / isn't usually getting cold enough.
- 8 A Do you know / Are you knowing Peter Jones?
B Yes, I do. He goes / 's going to school with my cousin. They are / are being in the same class.

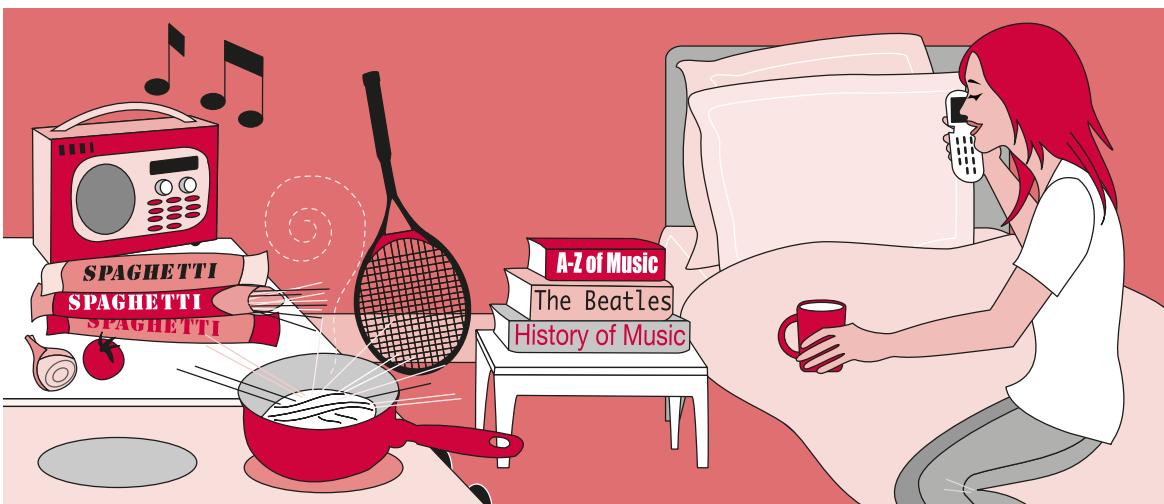


In italiano si usa di norma il presente indicativo per azioni permanenti. Spesso si usa la costruzione 'stare + gerundio' per esprimere azioni viste come temporanee da colui che parla o che sono in corso di svolgimento.



In italiano le costruzioni fraseologiche 'sta sempre a + infinito' o 'non fa che + infinito' indicano spesso azioni ripetute o esprimono irritazione per certi comportamenti.

- 2** Guarda la stanza di Sara. Scrivi delle frasi al present simple o al present continuous usando le espressioni date.



- 0 talk on her mobile She's talking on her mobile.
 1 play tennis
 2 sit on the bed
 3 listen to the radio
 4 wear a T-shirt
 5 read books about music
 6 eat a lot of spaghetti
 7 cook spaghetti
 8 look about 18 years old

- 3** Completa i dialoghi usando il present simple o il present continuous dei verbi del riquadro.

0 play 1 listen to 2 work 3 rain 4 wear

- 0 A Do you play football every week?
 B Yes. We usually play on Mondays, but we ''re playing' on Wednesdays at the moment.
 1 A What kind of music you ?
 B All kinds. But I a lot of classical at the moment, actually.
 2 A Where you ?
 B I normally in London, but I in Manchester this month.
 3 A Typical! It again!
 B Yeah, I'm afraid it a lot at this time of year.
 4 A Look at Danny – he a suit and tie!
 B That's strange. He usually just a T-shirt and jeans for work. Maybe he's got an interview.

- 4** Che cosa dici in queste situazioni per esprimere la tua irritazione? Usa il present continuous e le parole in corsivo.

- 0 Your brother takes your MP3 player all the time. *always*
 My brother's always taking my MP3 player
 1 Your sister borrows your clothes all the time. *forever*
 My sister
 2 You lose your mobile all the time. *always*
 I
 3 Your computer crashes all the time these days. *constantly*
 My computer

12 Revisione e potenziamento (unità 9–11)

Present simple e present continuous

- 1 Present continuous: forma affermativa e negativa** Completa le risposte usando le parole del riquadro.

I / really enjoy it he / cut the grass she / do her homework

I / not feel too well I / not listen to it my sister / use it

- 0 A Where's Peter?
B In the garden. He's cutting the grass.
- 1 A Hi, is Alice in?
B Yes, come in. in her bedroom I think.
- 2 A How's school?
B Great. this term.
- 3 A Can I use your computer to send an email?
B Sure, but at the moment.
- 4 A What's the matter?
B today. I've got a terrible headache.
- 5 A Can I turn the radio off?
B Sure.

- FCE 2 Present continuous: esprimere irritazione** Riscrivi le frasi in modo che esprimano irritazione usando il present continuous e le parole in corsivo.

- 0 She loses her keys all the time. *always*
She's always losing her keys.
- 1 He sings that awful song all the time. *forever*
He song.
- 2 My scooter breaks down a lot these days. *always*
My these days.
- 3 She sends me text messages all the time. *constantly*
She messages.

- 3 Present continuous: domande** Qui di seguito ci sono alcune espressioni piuttosto comuni che prevedono l'uso del present continuous. Abbinalle alla traduzione in italiano.

- | | |
|--|----------------------------|
| 0 How are you feeling? <u>c</u> | a Che cosa stai facendo? |
| 1 How's it going? <u>.....</u> | b Dove stai andando? |
| 2 What's going on? <u>.....</u> | c Come ti senti? |
| 3 Where are you going? <u>.....</u> | d Che cosa stai guardando? |
| 4 What are you doing? <u>.....</u> | e Come sta andando? |
| 5 What are you looking for? <u>.....</u> | f Che cosa succede? |
| 6 What are you watching? <u>.....</u> | g Che cosa stai cercando? |

- 4 Present continuous: domande** Riscrivi le domande dell'Esercizio 3 per queste risposte.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|--|
| 0 <u>How are you feeling?</u> | ~ Not too bad – a bit better than yesterday. |
| 1 <u>.....</u> | ~ To the shops. |
| 2 <u>.....</u> | ~ It's going well, thanks. |
| 3 <u>.....</u> | ~ My mobile. Have you seen it? |
| 4 <u>.....</u> | ~ There's an anti-war demonstration in the street. |
| 5 <u>.....</u> | ~ I'm trying to fix my camera. |
| 6 <u>.....</u> | ~ A documentary about European history. |

5 Present simple e present continuous Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

Children born at the beginning of the 21st century⁰ A a 50–50 chance of living to be 100 years old, according to a recent study. Public health¹ all the time and medical technology² so quickly that in 2100 the average age in some parts of the world is likely to be 100.

The study³ that human life expectancy⁴ in some parts of the world by about 2 years every decade. And scientists now⁵ that there is no natural limit to ageing and that humans may one day live to at least 200. However, your lifespan may depend on your sex. At the moment, 90% of all people over 100⁶ women.

- | | | | |
|---------------|--------------|------------------|-------------------|
| 0 A) have | B) has | C) is having | D) are having |
| 1 A) improve | B) improves | C) is improving | D) are improving |
| 2 A) advance | B) advances | C) is advancing | D) are advancing |
| 3 A) show | B) shows | C) is showing | D) are showing |
| 4 A) increase | B) increases | C) is increasing | D) are increasing |
| 5 A) believe | B) believes | C) is believing | D) are believing |
| 6 A) is | B) are | C) is being | D) are being |

T 6 Present simple e present continuous Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

0 Sssh! Sto ascoltando la radio. Sssh! I'm listening to the radio.

1 Sta piovendo in questo momento?

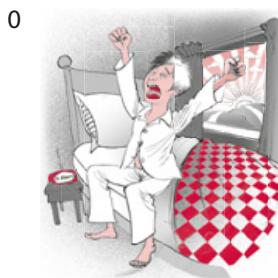
2 Piove molto nel Regno Unito.

3 Tom non è qui. Sta giocando a tennis nel parco.

4 Gioco a calcio, ma non sono molto bravo.

7 Grammatica e lessico: attività quotidiane (present continuous) Che cosa succede in queste figure? Usa le espressioni del riquadro.

brush his teeth cook dinner do their homework get up
get dressed go to bed have breakfast have a shower



0 He's getting up.

1
2
3

4

5

6

7

A Uso

L'imperativo si usa per dire a qualcuno di fare o di non fare qualcosa. Si può usare per:

- i ordini e istruzioni,
Be quiet. Restart the computer. Mix the milk and eggs.
Turn left. Don't touch!
- ii consigli, suggerimenti, promemoria e avvisi,
Calm down. Be careful. Try again. Don't be late.
Don't forget the milk. Look out!
- iii offerte informali, inviti e richieste,
Have a biscuit. Come with us if you like.
Give me hand, will you?
- iv auguri.
Enjoy the party. Have a good trip.



In inglese l'imperativo è l'unico modo in cui di norma il soggetto non viene espresso. Nota che in inglese esiste solo una forma dell'imperativo per il singolare e per il plurale (Stai attento/State attenti = *Be careful*).

B Forma

L'imperativo è uguale alla forma base del verbo. La forma negativa si forma con *don't*.

Affermativa	Negativa
Stop!	Don't stop!
Turn the light off.	Don't turn the light off.
Tell David.	Don't tell David.
Be serious.	Don't be serious.
Park here.	Don't park here.

- i La forma completa *do not* viene di norma usata in situazioni formali, come segnali e avvisi e per dare enfasi.
Do not park in front of the gate. Do not tell David.
Do not leave bags unattended.
- ii Si può usare *always* (sempre), *never* (mai) e *don't ever* (non... mai) prima di un imperativo.
Always do your best. Never open SPAM emails.
Don't ever do that again.
- iii Si può a volte usare un soggetto con l'imperativo.
All of you be quiet. Everyone listen for a moment.
No one say anything. You tell him.

- 1** Ecco un elenco delle istruzioni che l'insegnante potrebbe dare in classe. Completale usando i verbi dei riquadri.

not copy – answer sit – be compare – check open – turn to read – answer

- 0 sit down everyone and please be quiet.
1 your books and page sixteen.
2 the text and the questions.
3 Please your partner's answers. the questions yourself.
4 your answers with your partner and then the answers in the back of the book.

close not forget leave listen turn off

- 5 Everyone , please. I have an announcement.
6 to do your homework.
7 Please the room quietly.
8 the lights and the door when you leave, please.

- 2** Completa i seguenti consigli su come essere uno studente modello usando *always* o *never*.
Alla fine aggiungi il tuo consiglio personale.

- 0 Always work hard and try to do you best. 3 fall asleep in class.
1 do your homework. 4 be nice to your teacher.
2 copy essays from the internet. 5

- 3** Completa i seguenti avvisi e cartelli usando i verbi del riquadro.

not leave pay proceed not reply not touch wait

- 0 **wait here to be seated.**
1 **..... bags unattended.**
2 **€ Please here.**
3 This email is automated.
Please
4 to checkout.
5 the exhibits.

- 4** Abbina gli avvisi e cartelli dell'Esercizio 3 ai luoghi in cui si trovano di solito.

- a restaurant c airport e email
b museum d shop f online shopping website

- 5** Leggi alcune forme imperative comuni (a–i). In quali situazioni (1–8) le usi?

Your friend is ...

- 0 ... going to a party.
1 ... angry about something.
2 ... being too slow.
3 ... feeling miserable.
4 ... concerned about something.
5 not being sensible.
6 ... doing something dangerous.
7 ... making a lot of noise.
8 ... asking personal questions.

- a Calm down.** **c Have fun.** **e Hurry up.**
b Don't worry. **d Cheer up.**
f Be quiet. **h Don't be silly.**
g Be careful. **i Don't be nosy.**

14 Verbi di stato e verbi di moto

I really like him. I don't remember. She comes from France. He's coming by car.

Molti verbi hanno un significato dinamico, cioè descrivono eventi che accadono.

Questi verbi possono normalmente essere usati nelle forme semplici come il present simple o nelle forme progressive come il present continuous.

I play tennis every week. Luca's not here – he's playing tennis.

Altri verbi hanno valore di stato. Si usano normalmente solo nelle forme semplici.

He's a teacher. I don't believe you. I know a little Spanish. She looks about twenty.

I più comuni verbi di stato sono:

Esistenza	be, come from, exist
Pensiero e stati mentali	admire, agree, believe, care, depend, expect, feel, forget, hope, imagine, know, mean, mind, realize, recognize, remember, suppose, think, understand
Desideri	need, prefer, want
Preferenze	hate, like, love
Possesso	belong, have (got), own, possess
Aspetto	appear, look (like), seem
Qualità	come (from), consist of, cost, deserve, fit, involve, measure, sound, suit, weigh
Relativi ai sensi	feel, hear, see, smell, taste

- i Alcuni verbi con significato di stato possono a volte essere usati nelle forme progressive. Ciò avviene quando si vuole sottolineare che i sentimenti sono relativi ad un tempo limitato e sono temporanei, e non esprimono atteggiamenti permanenti. I verbi di stato che si usano più comunemente in questo modo sono: *be, cost, enjoy, expect, feel, involve, like, look (like), love, need, think, understand, want*.

Atteggiamento permanente	Pensiero o sentimento temporaneo
<i>He's usually very sensible. Di solito è una persona molto ragionevole.</i>	<i>He's being very silly today. Oggi si sta comportando in modo molto stupido.</i>
<i>I love this restaurant. Mi piace molto questo ristorante.</i>	<i>I'm loving this pasta. Mi piace molto questa pasta.</i>
<i>I generally enjoy school. A scuola di solito mi diverto.</i>	<i>I'm really enjoying school at the moment. In questo periodo mi sto davvero divertendo a scuola.</i>

- ii Alcuni verbi possono avere un significato sia di stato sia di moto. Alcuni di questi verbi sono: *admire, appear, be, come, feel, fit, have, look, see, smell, taste, think, weigh*.

Verbi di stato	Verbi di moto
<i>It looks expensive. Sembra costoso. I think he's French. Credo sia Francese.</i>	<i>I'm looking for my keys. Sto cercando le mie chiavi. Sssh! I'm thinking. Sssh! Sto pensando.</i>

- iii I verbi relativi ai sensi (*hear, feel, see, smell, taste*) con significato statico sono usati più spesso con *can/can't* che al present simple.

I can smell gas. (Usato più comunemente di I smell gas.)

I can't hear you. (Usato più comunemente di I don't hear you.)

Can you see Peter? (Usato più comunemente di Do you see Peter?)

1 Completa i dialoghi con i verbi dei riquadri.

look think like

A ⁰ Do you ... like ... my new mobile?

B Yes. I ¹ it ² pretty cool.

think belong to remember

A Who ³ this pen ?

B It's Tony's, I ⁴ I ⁵ seeing him with it.

know not recognize look

A ⁶ you who that guy is over there?

B No, I ⁷ him. He ⁸ nice. Let's say hello.

not mind prefer suppose

A Indian or Chinese? Which ⁹ you ?

B I really ¹⁰ But I ¹¹ the Indian restaurant is nearer, so why don't we go there?

2 Completa le frasi usando i suggerimenti del riquadro. Usa i verbi due volte: per descrivere un'azione e per descrivere uno stato.

taste the wine – fine come from Italy – to the UK by bike

look at a photo – like her mother weigh himself – 60kg



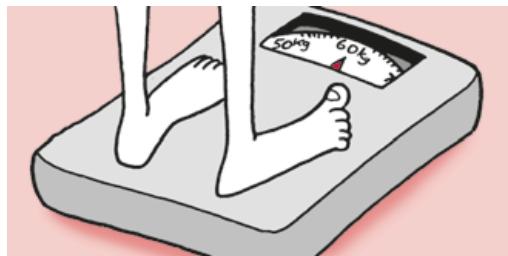
0 Roberto ... comes from Italy.
He 's coming to the UK by bike.



2 She
She



1 He
It



3 He
He

3 Completa le frasi usando can o can't e un verbo di percezione: *feel, hear, see, smell o taste*.

0 I can smell something burning.

1 Turn the light on. I anything.

2 I gas. Are you sure the cooker is off?

3 Brrr – it's freezing! I my fingers.

4 I you. Speak up!

5 The hotel's great and we the sea from the room.

6 I love garlic, and you really the garlic in
this sauce: it's delicious!

15 Revisione e potenziamento (unità 13–14)

Forme del presente e imperativo

1 Present simple e continuous Completa il profilo con la forma corretta dei verbi dei riquadri.

be be be come from go live work

My name ⁰ is Alessandro and I ¹ 17 years old. I ² Venice originally, but now we (my parents, sister and brother) ³ in Genoa. My sister ⁴ to the same school as me, and my brother ⁵ in a bank. He ⁶ nineteen. My parents ⁷ both teachers.

be be be learn listen listen love read study

I ⁸ a student at a Liceo. At the moment, I ⁹ for exams. As for my hobbies, I ¹⁰ reading (I ¹¹ a great book called *No Way Out* at the moment) and I ¹² to play the guitar. I ¹³ to all kinds of music, but my favourite bands ¹⁴ the Foo Fighters and Nirvana. In fact, I ¹⁵ to *Bleach*, the first Nirvana album at the moment – it ¹⁶ my all-time favourite.

PET 2 There is/are Completa la frase in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa non più di tre parole.

0 Milan has two airports.

There are two airports in Milan.

1 Has your school got a gym?

Is at your school?

2 Does Oxford have an airport?

Is in Oxford?

3 My class consists of thirty students.

There in my class.

4 There are two computers in my classroom.

My classroom computers.

5 The room hasn't got a carpet.

There in the room.

6 Does Oxford have any parks?

Are in Oxford?

3 Present simple: domande Completa le domande usando *Do you* e i verbi del riquadro.

Questi verbi sono i più comunemente usati con *Do you* nell'inglese parlato.

have know like remember think want watch

0 Do you have an English lesson every day?

1 TV every day?

2 your first day at school?

3 the alphabet in English?

4 to go to university?

5 you are a good student?

6 learning English?

4 Present simple: risposte brevi Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 3.

Usa Yes, I do o No, I don't.

- 0 No, I don't.
1 _____
2 _____
3 _____
4 _____
5 _____
6 _____

FCE

5 Present simple, present continuous e there is/are Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

IS THE GENERATION GAP DISAPPEARING?

According to a recent study, the generation gap ⁰ C smaller and today many parents and their teenage children ¹ similar interests, listen to the same music and even dress the same. The study also shows that ² more equality between generations than ever before.

It is common today for parents and children to spend part of their free time together. James and Helen Jones from Liverpool, ³ with their teenage children once or twice a week. 'We go

to cafés, concerts and even to clubs with them,' says Helen. 'We ⁴ about everything – music, TV, school, boyfriends and girlfriends. In fact, ⁵ nothing we ⁶ about. Our children are our best friends. The generation gap definitely ⁷. Daughter Suzy, 16, agrees 'We ⁸ the same tastes in music and fashion, and me and Mum ⁹ each other's clothes and make-up. And Mum and Dad ¹⁰ us – we ¹¹ things as a family. Mum and Dad ¹² really cool.'

0 A become	B becomes	C is becoming	D are becoming
1 A have	B has	C is having	D are having
2 A is	B are	C there is	D there are
3 A go out	B goes out	C is going out	D are going out
4 A talk	B talks	C is talking	D are talking
5 A is	B isn't	C there is	D there are
6 A isn't talking	B aren't talking	C doesn't talk	D don't talk
7 A disappear	B disappears	C is disappearing	D are disappearing
8 A get	B got	C 's got	D 've got
9 A wear always	B are always wearing	C are wearing always	D always are wearing
10 A never discipline	B discipline never	C never disciplines	D are never disciplining
11 A discuss always	B always discuss	C are always discussing	D always are discussing
12 A there are	B there is	C are	D is

6 Present simple Il rapporto con i tuoi genitori è simile a quello descritto nell'articolo dell'Esercizio 5? Completa le frasi su di te e i tuoi genitori. Usa We e la forma affermativa o negativa dei verbi del riquadro.

be dress go have listen talk wear

- 0 We don't have _____ the same interests.
1 _____ to the same music.
2 _____ the same.
3 _____ each other's clothes.
4 _____ to concerts together.
5 _____ about everything.
6 _____ best friends.

- 7 Present simple: domande** Immagina di parlare con una persona che non conosci molto bene. Completa le domande in modo da saperne di più su di lui/lei.

- 0 Do you speak English?
1 name?
2 from?
3 live?
4 How old ?
5 Which school ?
6 Have you got ?
7 like ?
8 your favourite ?
9 interested in ?
10 email address?



- 8 Present simple: risposte** Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 7. Usa le risposte brevi (Yes, I do ecc.) oppure fornisci le risposte per esteso.

- 0 Yes, I do.
1 6
2 7
3 8
4 9
5 10

- 9 Imperativo** Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Usa le espressioni del riquadro.

Calm down! Cheer up! Drive carefully! Hurry up! Don't tell anyone! Turn it down!

- 0 Your friend is very angry and is shouting. Calm down!
1 The taxi is waiting. Your friend is not ready.
2 The roads are very icy. Your friend is leaving in his car.
3 Your brother is playing very loud music.
4 Your friend's football team is losing 5–0. He is miserable.
5 You tell your friend a secret.

T 10 Forme del presente e imperativo Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Posso sentire Tom, ma non riesco a vederlo.
I can hear Tom, but I can't see him.
1 Ho sete. Hai dell'acqua?
.....
2 Ho un fratello. È un insegnante di scienze.
.....
3 Non mi piacciono i videogiochi.
.....
4 Harry non è qui. Sta giocando a golf con William.
.....
5 C'è un bancomat qui vicino?
.....
6 Non dire a Roberto della festa. È un segreto.
.....

11 Grammatica e lessico: malattie ed altre affezioni mediche (*have got*) Scrivi una frase per ogni figura usando *have/has got* e le parole ed espressioni del riquadro.

backache (mal di schiena) earache (mal d'orecchie) a headache (mal di testa)
stomach ache (mal di pancia) a cold (raffreddore) a sore throat (mal di gola)



0 She's got earache.

1 _____

2 _____

3 _____

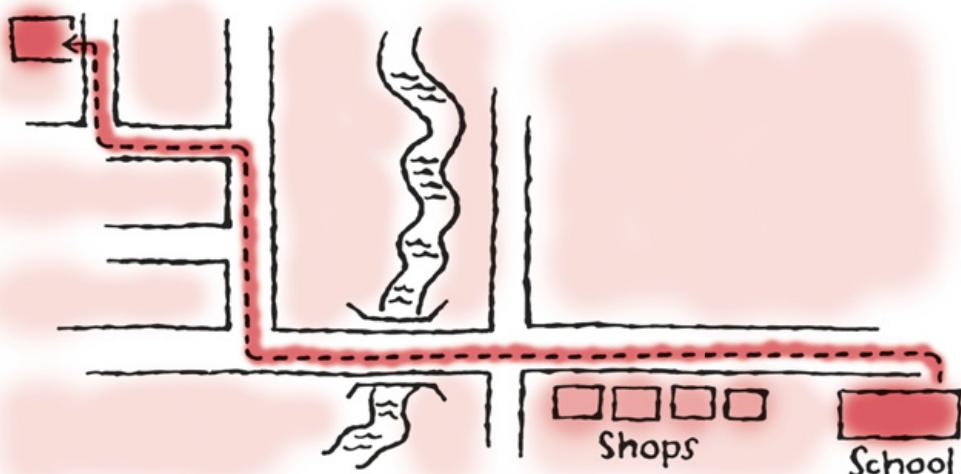
4 _____

5 _____

12 Grammatica e lessico: direzioni (imperativo) Guarda la mappa e completa le indicazioni stradali usando le espressioni sottostanti.

To get to my house, go out of school, ⁰ turn left and ¹ the shops. ² at the crossroads, ³ the bridge and ⁴ ⁵ then ⁶ and my house is number 42, on the left. Call me if you get lost.

turn right ↗ take the second left ← take the first right →
go past ↑ go straight on ↑ go over ↘ turn left ↙



16**Past simple di be e there was/were**

I was tired. They were late. He wasn't late. Where were you? There were six of us.

A Uso

Il past simple di *be* si usa per parlare di situazioni finite al passato.

It was cold yesterday.

Were you late this morning?

There was a good film on TV last night.

B Forma

Affermativa	Negativa
I was	I was not/wasn't
you were	you were not/weren't
he/she/it was	he/she/it was not/wasn't
we/you/they were	we/you/they were not/weren't

I was hungry. You were late this morning. It wasn't cold.

Domande	Risposte brevi
Was I/he/she/it ...?	Yes, I/he/she/it was. No, I/he/she/it wasn't.
Were you/we/they ...?	Yes, you/we/they were. No, you/we/they weren't.

Was it OK? Were you on time? Was he right? ~ Yes, he was.

La parola interrogativa si pone all'inizio della domanda.

Where were you at 9.30? How long was the film? How was the exam?

C Was/were born

Si usa *was/were born* per parlare del tempo e del luogo in cui qualcuno è nato.

When were you born? Quando sei nato?

Where were you born? Dove sei nato?

I was born in 1987. Sono nato nel 1987.

I was born in Ethiopia. Sono nato in Etiopia.

Non *When you born?* Non *I born in 1998.*

D There was/were

Si usa *there was* e *there were* come forma passata di *there is* e *there are*.

There was a problem.

There weren't any mistakes.

Was there a TV in the room?

► Vedi unità 3 per altri usi di *there is/are*.

1 Guarda le figure e scrivi le risposte.



- 0 What was the weather like yesterday?
It warm and sunny.

BEN'S CAFÉ

COFFEE X2 €3.50

TOTAL €7.00

Thank you



- 1 Where was Sarah born?
She

The Opening Ceremony of Beijing 2008 Olympic Games

D2

DATE 08/08/2008/20:00 TIME

Beijing 2008

BEIJING NATIONAL STADIUM

.....

Sector D Tier 2 Aisle 408 Row 21 Seat 16



- 3 Where were the 2008 Olympics?
They

2 Leggi l'esempio e scrivi delle risposte simili per esprimere il tuo disaccordo. Usa le parole del riquadro.

Canadian delicious early easy really friendly cold and windy terrible

- 0 The film was great. ~ No, it wasn't. It was terrible.
1 It was a lovely day yesterday. ~
2 They were American. ~
3 He was a bit unsociable. ~
4 The food was terrible. ~
5 The exercises were difficult. ~
6 We were late. ~

3 Scrivi delle domande per queste risposte usando le parole interrogative del riquadro e *was* o *were*.

how where what when who whose how much

- 0 When was it? ~ It was last Friday.
1 ~ They were under the sofa.
2 ~ She was OK. Better than yesterday.
3 ~ It was Susan.
4 ~ It was Harry's.
5 ~ They were thirty-five euros each.
6 ~ It was some sort of virus.

4 Jen sta facendo delle domande a Tom in merito alla festa a cui ha partecipato lo scorso fine settimana. Completa le domande e le risposte brevi usando la forma corretta di *there was/were*.

- 0 Was there any good music? ~ Yes, there was.
1 a DJ? ~ No,
2 many people there? ~ Yes,
3 any food? ~ No,
4 any adults there? ~ No,

It rained all day yesterday. She studied music at university. I went for a walk.

A Uso

Il past simple si usa per parlare di situazioni o eventi passati e finiti.

I played tennis yesterday. I loved cartoons when I was a child. We had exams last week.

B Forma

i Verbi regolari

Il past simple della maggioranza dei verbi regolari si forma aggiungendo *-ed* alla forma base (infinito senza *to*).

I watched TV last night. He passed all his exams. We enjoyed the film.

Ci sono alcune eccezioni nello spelling del past simple dei verbi regolari.

Verbi che terminano in <i>-e</i>	aggiungono <i>-d</i> like → liked dance → danced
Verbi che terminano in consonante + <i>y</i>	<i>y</i> → <i>i</i> study → studied try → tried
Verbi che terminano in vocale + consonante • ma non per <i>w, x o y</i> • per i polisillabi, solo quando la sillaba finale è accentata	raddoppiano la consonante finale stop → stopped plan → planned show → showed fix → fixed prefer → preferred open → opened

ii Verbi irregolari

Molti verbi hanno una forma irregolare del past simple. Ecco alcuni dei verbi irregolari più importanti.

become	became	feel	felt	leave	left	send	sent
begin	began	find	found	lend	lent	sing	sang
build	built	fly	flew	lose	lost	sleep	slept
buy	bought	forget	forgot	make	made	speak	spoke
choose	chose	get	got	meet	met	spend	spent
come	came	give	gave	pay	paid	take	took
cost	cost	go	went	put	put	teach	taught
do	did	have	had	read	read /red/	tell	told
drink	drank	hear	heard	ring	rang	think	thought
drive	drove	keep	kept	say	said	wake	woke
eat	ate	know	knew	see	saw	win	won
fall	fell	learn	learnt/learned	sell	sold	write	wrote

► Vedi pagina 416 per l'elenco completo del past simple dei verbi irregolari.

iii Qualche volta per dare enfasi si può usare il verbo ausiliare *did* + forma base (infinito senza *to*).

I did enjoy that meal. She really did miss you when you were away.

► Vedi unità 173 per altri usi di *did* per dare enfasi ai verbi.

C Espressioni di tempo

Se si usa un'espressione di tempo 'finito' (*two hours ago, yesterday, at the weekend, last week, in 2009, when I was a child* ecc.), in genere si usa il past simple.

The bus left five minutes ago. I went out last night. I started school in 2006.

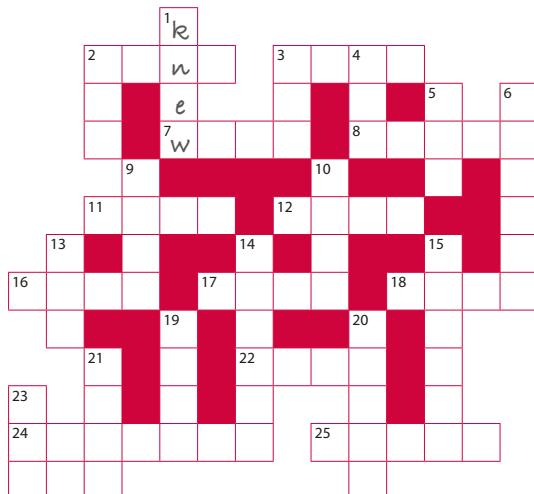
1 Scrivi il past simple dei seguenti verbi regolari. In alcuni casi devi raddoppiare la consonante finale.

0 agree	agreed	9 plan	13 stop
1 attach	drop	10 play	14 talk
2 chat	empty	11 reply	15 try
3 continue	fix	12 show	16 use
4 decide	invite		

2 Scrivi il past simple dei seguenti verbi regolari. La sillaba accentata è sottolineata.

0 <u>cover</u>	<u>covered</u>	5 prefer	7 <u>regret</u>
1 <u>enter</u>	<u>occurred</u>	6 refer	8 <u>visit</u>
2 <u>happen</u>	<u>offered</u>		

3 Completa il cruciverba con il past simple dei seguenti verbi irregolari.



ACROSS

- 2 send
- 3 make
- 7 go
- 8 drive
- 11 leave
- 12 lose
- 16 cost
- 17 tell
- 18 come
- 22 give
- 24 think
- 25 write

DOWN

- 1 knew
- 2 see
- 3 meet
- 4 do
- 5 get
- 6 become
- 9 feel
- 10 sell
- 13 win
- 14 buy
- 15 catch
- 19 ring

4 Completa la biografia di Luciano Pavarotti con il past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

Luciano Pavarotti

Luciano Pavarotti was born in 1935 in Modena, Italy. From an early age, people ⁰ realized (realize) he ¹ (have) an exceptional singing voice and as a child he ² (begin) singing with his father in a local church choir.

In 1954, at the age of 19, he ³ (start) having singing lessons. His teacher was very impressed with Pavarotti and he ⁴ (offer) to teach him for free. The following year, Pavarotti ⁵ (win) first prize in an international singing competition in Wales, UK, and shortly after that he ⁶ (become) a professional opera singer. Pavarotti ⁷ (make) his professional debut on April 29, 1961 and his international debut ⁸ (follow) two years later at the Royal Opera House in London.

Over the next four decades, Pavarotti ⁹ (become) one of the best and most famous singers in the world. And in the 1990s with The Three Tenors (Pavarotti, Placido Domingo and José Carreras) he ¹⁰ (have) the best selling classical album of all time.

In March 2004, Pavarotti ¹¹ (give) his last performance in an opera. His last ever live performance ¹² (be) at the 2006 Winter Olympics opening ceremony in Turin, Italy, where he ¹³ (sing) his signature aria 'Nessun Dorma' from Puccini's *Turandot*.

Luciano Pavarotti ¹⁴ (die) on September 6th 2007, at his home in Modena.

18**Past simple (forma negativa)**

It didn't rain yesterday. I didn't see you at the party. We didn't go swimming.

La forma negativa dei verbi regolari e irregolari si forma con *didn't* + forma base del verbo (infinito senza *to*).

I didn't go out last night. He didn't finish his work. We didn't have time for lunch today.

i A volte in situazioni formali e per enfasi si può usare la forma negativa completa.

I did not see the notice. I did not do it!

ii A volte per dare l'enfasi al contrasto tra una negazione ed una affermazione si può usare il verbo ausiliare *did* per l'affermazione.

I didn't like the starter, but I did enjoy the main course.

I didn't see him, but I did speak to him on the phone.

► Vedi unità 173 per altri usi di *do/did* per dare enfasi ai verbi.

1 Completa la parte finale della frase con la forma negativa del verbo usato nella prima parte.

0 We studied French at school, but *we didn't study* Italian.

1 I saw Sue, but *Pete*.

2 I enjoyed the book, but *the film*.

3 We went to the gym, but *swimming*.

4 She had a coffee, but *anything to eat*.

5 We went to the beach, but *in the sea*.

6 He played tennis, but *very well*.

2 Riscrivi le parti in neretto in modo che il significato della frase non cambi. Usa i verbi del riquadro alla forma negativa.

fall asleep go out leave pass remember stop try wake up win



Hi Dave,

What a day! A disaster from start to finish! First, I **overslept**⁰ *didn't wake up* and was late for school. My **parents forgot**¹ to wake me up! Anyway, first thing at school we had a test in English – I **failed**² ! In the afternoon, we had a football match in the Inter-School Cup and we were absolutely rubbish. As you can imagine, we **lost**³ The coach said we **made no effort**⁴ and that we were probably the worst team ever. In the evening, I was fed up so I **stayed at home**⁵ This was a mistake, because Louise and Andy decided to come round for a chat. They **continued**
⁶ talking for hours and they **stayed**⁷ until after midnight. I don't know how I **stayed awake**⁸

Anyway, how was your day? Better than mine, I hope.

Steve

3 Scrivi delle frasi alla forma negativa relative alle figure usando i verbi e le parole dei riquadri.

get hear pass save see take

the alarm the cheese the exam the penalty the sign an umbrella



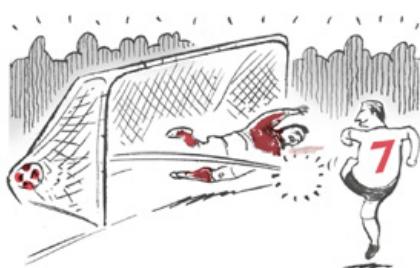
0 She didn't hear the alarm.



3



1



4



2



5

4 Scrivi frasi vere per te relative alla giornata di ieri usando la forma affermativa o negativa dei verbi in corsivo.

Yesterday ...

0 I didn't use

a computer. *use*

1 We

an English lesson. *have*

2 I

shopping. *go*

3 We

football. *play*

4 I

the newspaper. *read*

5 I

dinner. *cook*

6 It

. *rain*

5 Leggi l'esempio e scrivi frasi simili usando i suggerimenti e *did* per enfatizzare il contrasto.

0 see Tom / speak on the phone I didn't see Tom, but we did speak on the phone.

1 play football / watch it on TV

2 go to the gym / go for a run

3 finish my homework / do some of it

4 snow this winter / rain a lot

A Forma

- i Le domande al past simple si formano con *did* + soggetto + forma base del verbo (infinito senza *to*).

Did you play tennis? *Hai giocato a tennis?*

Did Livia pass her driving test? *Livia ha passato l'esame di guida?*

Did they arrive on time? *Sono arrivati in orario?*

- ii Le parole interrogative, come *Where*, *When*, *How often* ecc., vengono poste all'inizio della domanda.

What did she do? *When did you go to the UK?* **Where did I leave my keys?**

B Risposte brevi

- i Può essere a volte poco cortese rispondere con un semplice *Yes* o *No*. Le risposte brevi a domande del tipo *Did you ...?* sono di norma:

Yes, I/she/they ecc. did.

No, I/she/they ecc. didn't.

Did you see the film? ~ Yes, I did.

Did you go out last night? ~ No, I didn't.

Did Andrew like it? ~ Yes, he did.

- ii Si può usare la forma negativa non contratta per dare enfasi.

Did you tell anyone? ~ No, I **did not!**

- iii Per rettificare informazioni, si può usare *did* per evitare la ripetizione dell'intera frase.

A *Did the Red Hot Chilli Peppers sing 'American Idiot'?*

B *No, they didn't. Green Day did.*

1 Completa le domande usando i verbi del riquadro.

come enjoy find get go out hear rain remember win

0 *Did you hear* about Sam? ~ Yes, I did. It's great news.

1 by car? ~ No, we came by bus.

2 last night? ~ No, I stayed at home.

3 your birthday? ~ Yes, he sent me a birthday e-card.

4 her mobile? ~ Yes, she did. It was behind the sofa.

5 yesterday? ~ Yes, it didn't stop for hours.

6 wet? ~ No, we took an umbrella.

7 the party? ~ Yes, I think they had a great time

8 last night? ~ No, they lost 2–1.

2 Scrivi delle domande relative allo scorso fine settimana usando *you*.

Last weekend ...

- 0 go to the beach? Did you go to the beach?
1 where / go?
2 who / see?
3 go shopping?
4 do any sport?
5 what / watch on TV?
6 have a good time?

3 Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 2. Usa le risposte brevi (*Yes, I did.* ecc.) oppure fornisci le informazioni richieste.

- 0 No, I didn't.
1 4
2 5
3 6

4 Leggi l'esempio e scrivi delle risposte simili per dare la risposta corretta.

the Chinese Columbus Bill Gates John Lennon Botticelli J K Rowling

- 0 Did Giotto paint *Primavera*? No, he didn't. Botticelli did.
1 Did Jill Murphy write the Harry Potter books?
2 Did Marco Polo discover America?
3 Did Steve Jobs start Microsoft?
4 Did the Romans invent sunglasses?
5 Did Paul McCartney sing *Imagine*?

5 Scrivi le domande per queste risposte usando le informazioni su Johnny Depp.

- 0 Where did Johnny Depp grow up? ~ In Florida.
1 What for his 13th birthday? ~ He got a guitar.
2 Why school? ~ To become a full-time rock musician.
3 Who in 1983? ~ Lori Allison, his drummer's sister.
4 When acting? ~ After *The Kids* broke up.
5 When ~ In 1984.
6 When ~ In 1990.

Johnny Depp

★ EARLY LIFE OF THE STARS



- 1963** Depp born in Kentucky.
1970 His family moves to Florida. Depp grows up here.
1976 Gets a guitar for his 13th birthday. Begins playing in local bands.
1979 Leaves school to become a full-time rock musician. Forms the band *The Kids*.
1983 Marries Lori Allison, sister of the band's drummer. *The Kids* break up. Depp starts acting.
1984 Appears in his first major film, *A Nightmare on Elm Street*.
1985 Depp and Allison divorce.
1990 Has his first lead role in *Edward Scissorhands*.

1 Past simple: forma affermativa e negativa Completa l'articolo con il past simple dei verbi dei riquadri.

Inventions that changed the world: the ATM

appear be be dispense have

The world's first ATM ⁰ at a branch of a bank in north London in June 1967. The ATM was the first and last invention of John Shepherd-Barron. 'In those days, there ¹ no way to get money when the bank was closed. One day, I suddenly ² the idea of having a machine similar to a drinks machine that ³ cash not drinks. It ⁴ a very simple idea,' explained Mr Shepherd-Barron.

be like pay sign

The chief executive of the bank at the time ⁵ the idea and immediately ⁶ a contract with Mr Shepherd-Barron. The first machines ⁷ out a maximum of £10 a time. 'But that ⁸ enough for the weekend,' Mr Shepherd-Barron remembers.

be develop not exist insert

Before the invention of the ATM, plastic cards ⁹ , so customers ¹⁰ paper cheques into the machines. But these ¹¹ fragile and difficult to read, so the banks ¹² the plastic cash card.

become not agree say want

Another by-product of the ATM was the PIN (Personal Identification Number). Mr Shepherd-Barron originally ¹³ a six-digit number, but his wife, Caroline, ¹⁴ 'During breakfast one morning, she ¹⁵ four numbers was the maximum she could remember so, because of my wife, four digits ¹⁶ the world standard,' he laughs.

2 Past simple: domande Leggi l'articolo. Poi completa le domande.

MAN SELLS HIS LIFE ON THE INTERNET

In 2008, a man sold his entire 'life' on the internet for €300,000. Ian Usher, 44 at the time, decided to put his life up for sale to help him to forget his ex-wife after his marriage broke up. The sale included Mr Usher's house in Perth, Australia, and everything inside it, including his car and

motorbike. Also included was Mr Usher's job as a shop assistant and at least one night out with his friends. In total, there were several hundred bids in the auction. Mr Usher used the €300,000 to go travelling and then start a new life.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 0 What <u>did Ian Usher sell in 2008?</u> | ~ He sold his 'life.' |
| 1 How much <u>.....</u> | ? ~ He got €300,000. |
| 2 Where <u>.....</u> | ? ~ On the internet. |
| 3 Why <u>.....</u> | ? ~ To help him to forget his ex-wife. |
| 4 What <u>.....</u> | ? ~ The sale included his house and everything in it, his job and a night out with his friends. |
| 5 How many <u>.....</u> | ? ~ There were several hundred. |
| 6 How <u>.....</u> | ? ~ He used it to go travelling and then start a new life. |
| 7 How old <u>.....</u> | ? ~ He was 44. |

- 3 Uso di *did* per esprimere contrasto** Completa le frasi con i verbi del riquadro. Usa le forme *didn't* + verbo e *did* + verbo per enfatizzare il contrasto.

pass read speak watch

- 0 I didn't speak to Ben, but I did speak to his friend.
1 We all of the film, but we most of it.
2 I the whole newspaper yesterday, but I the headlines.
3 She her maths exam, but she all the others.

- T 4 Past simple e there was/were** Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Mi sono alzato alle 6.30 questa mattina.
I got up at 6.30 this morning.
1 Ho ricevuto il mio primo cellulare quando avevo tredici anni.
.....
2 È stato il compleanno di Carla la settimana scorsa. Ha fatto una festa?
.....
3 Abbiamo visto Maria quando eravamo in spiaggia ieri.
.....
4 I miei genitori si sono incontrati all'università circa vent'anni fa.
.....
5 Non ha piovuto ieri.
.....
6 C'erano molte persone alla riunione?
.....

- 5 Grammatica e lessico: i verbi più usati in inglese (past simple)** Questi verbi sono, nell'ordine, i dieci verbi più usati in inglese. Scrivi il past simple di questi verbi a fianco delle parole ed espressioni con cui vengono comunemente usati.

be have do say get go make take see come

- 0 I came to school / by bus / on foot / home / here in 2005.
1 I breakfast / an exam / a lesson / a headache / a rest / an idea / a great time.
2 I a coffee / the bed / a phone call / a mistake / an important decision.
3 I tired / hungry / cold / on time / early / late / at school / at home.
4 I for a walk / for a coffee / to school / home / shopping / to the beach / to bed.
5 I my homework / nothing / some washing / the cooking / my best / well.
6 I 'hello' / too much / something I regret / the wrong thing.
7 I up / dressed / my exam results / 75% / a new mobile / lost / wet.
8 I some photos / some money out / an aspirin / an umbrella / a risk.
9 I my friends / a few people / some amazing sights / a band / an accident.

- 6 Grammatica e lessico: i verbi più usati in inglese (past simple)** Scrivi almeno sei cose che hai fatto ieri usando le espressioni dell'Esercizio 5.

I got up, I had breakfast, I came to school.
.....

- 7 Grammatica e lessico: i verbi più usati in inglese (past simple)** Scrivi almeno sei cose che non hai fatto ieri usando le espressioni dell'Esercizio 5.

I didn't go to the beach. I didn't have an exam,
.....

Past continuous

It was raining. They were waiting for ages. I wasn't listening. What was he doing?

A Uso

Il past continuous si usa per esprimere azioni in corso di svolgimento (o che non erano in corso di svolgimento) in un tempo particolare del passato. Queste azioni possono essere avvenute:

- i in un tempo preciso del passato,

*Sorry I didn't answer the phone. I was having a shower.
It wasn't raining at midday.*

- ii nell'arco di un periodo di tempo del passato.

*My parents met at university. They were both studying law.
I was working in a café in 2009.*



Per esprimere questa forma, in italiano si usa spesso la costruzione 'stavo + gerundio' oppure l'imperfetto.

B Forma

Per formare il past continuous si usa be al passato + *-ing*.

Affermativa	Negativa	Domande
I/he/she/it was working you/we/they were working	I/he/she/it wasn't working you/we/they weren't working	Was I/he/she/it working? Were you/we/they working?

- i La forma negativa non contratta si usa di norma solo in contesti formali e per dare enfasi.

We were not expecting the extra charge. You were not paying attention!

- ii Se c'è una parola interrogativa, questa si mette all'inizio della domanda.

What were you doing? **Why** was she shouting?

Who were you talking to at the bus stop this morning?

C Risposte brevi

Le risposte brevi più naturali ad una domanda al past continuous sono:

Yes,	I/he/she/it was. you/we/they were.	No,	I/he/she/it wasn't. you/we/they weren't.
------	---	-----	---

*Was he still waiting? ~ Yes, **he was.***

*Were they eating? ~ No, **they weren't.***

La forma negativa non contratta si può usare per dare enfasi.

*Were you cheating? ~ No, **I was not!***

- 1 Che cosa stavi facendo nei giorni e alle ore indicate? Puoi usare i suggerimenti del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

have breakfast/lunch/dinner watch TV sleep have a lesson shop chat with friends sleep

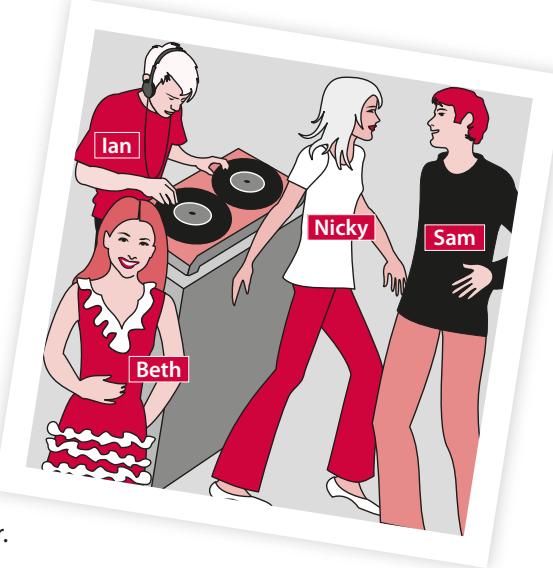
- | | |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 0 at 7.30 this morning | I was having breakfast..... |
| 1 an hour ago | |
| 2 at 6.30 this morning | |
| 3 at 9.30 last night | |
| 4 this time yesterday | |
| 5 at midnight last Saturday | |

- 2** Guarda le foto di Linda alla festa di ieri sera. Completa le frasi su ciò che stava succedendo alla festa usando i verbi del riquadro.



chat dance eat open play talk wear

- 0 Kay was talking on her mobile.
- 1 Sam and Nicky .
- 2 Jon some pizza.
- 3 Rose and Josh to each other.
- 4 Linda her presents.
- 5 Ian the music.
- 6 Beth her new dress.



- 3** Usa i suggerimenti per scrivere delle domande sulla festa dell'Esercizio 2. Poi rispondi con le risposte brevi (Yes, she was. ecc.) o dai risposte complete.

- 0 What / Kay / do? What was Kay doing? ~ She was talking on her mobile.
- 1 What / Jon / eat? ~
- 2 Beth / wear / her new dress? ~
- 3 Who / Josh / talk to? ~
- 4 Jon / play / the music? ~
- 5 Sam and Nicky / dance? ~
- 6 What / Linda / do? ~

- 4** Completa i dialoghi con i verbi dei riquadri.

talk ask talk

- A Who⁰ were you talking to at break time?
B I¹ to a new student. He² me about the school football team.

meet stand wait

- A I saw you last night. You³ on the corner, outside your house.⁴ you for someone?
B Yes, I⁵ James.

play try have

- A You look tired this morning.
B I⁶ to finish my homework all night. But the people in the flat next to us⁷ loud music. I think they⁸ a party.

not live do live work

- A It's so cold this winter. Worse than last year.
B I⁹ here then. We¹⁰ in the UK.
A Oh, what¹¹ you there?
B My father¹² at the university in Oxford for a year.

It was raining when we set off. I was watching TV when you phoned.

A Uso

Le differenze principali tra il past continuous e il past simple sono:

- i Il past continuous si usa per esprimere qualcosa che avveniva in un tempo passato. Il past simple si usa per esprimere avvenimenti finiti o situazioni che appartengono al passato.
I was having lunch at 1.30. Stavo pranzando all'1.30.
I had pasta for lunch. Ho mangiato della pasta a pranzo.

- ii Il past continuous e il past simple si possono usare insieme per esprimere un'azione avvenuta nel passato mentre un'altra era in corso di svolgimento.

I fell asleep while I was watching TV last night.

Mi addormentai mentre stavo guardando la TV ieri sera.

It was raining. We were driving down a dark country lane when suddenly the car in front of us stopped.

Stava piovendo. Stavamo guidando lungo un viottolo buio di campagna quando la macchina davanti a noi si fermò.



In italiano per indicare l'azione in corso di svolgimento si usa spesso la costruzione 'stare + gerundio'.

I was studying German when I met Sabine.

Stavo studiando tedesco quando ho incontrato Sabine.



In italiano, per le azioni di sfondo si usa di norma l'imperfetto o 'stare + gerundio', per le azioni in primo piano si usa il passato remoto.

I was having breakfast when my mobile phone rang.

Stavo facendo colazione quando il mio cellulare squillò.

B When e while

- i Si usano *when* (quando) o *while* (mentre) per collegare le frasi al past continuous e al past simple. *When* può essere usato prima del past continuous o del past simple, mentre *while* può essere usato solo prima del past continuous.

They met when he was working at the university.

We were eating when he arrived.

I saw Fred while I was out jogging.

- ii Nota che la frase subordinata introdotta da *when* o *while* può trovarsi di norma o all'inizio del periodo o in seconda posizione, cioè dopo la frase principale. Quando si mette all'inizio del periodo, si separa dalla frase principale con una virgola.

When it started raining, we were playing tennis.

We were playing tennis when it started raining.

► Vedi unità 21 per altre regole sul past continuous e vedi unità 16 e 17 per altri usi del past simple.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta nei seguenti testi.

Smith quickly ⁰took was taking the free kick while Liverpool ¹organized / were organizing their defensive wall. The Liverpool players ²ran / were running to the referee to protest, but he ³already walked / was already walking back to the centre circle.

Titanic ⁴sailed / was sailing from Southampton to New York when it ⁵hit / was hitting the iceberg at 11.40 pm on 14th April 1912. The ship ⁶carried / was carrying 2,224 passengers. Only 711 ⁷survived / were surviving.

but lucky lottery winner Jim Jones's wife was more interested in her favourite TV show than in their good fortune. Mr Jones explains: 'I ⁸listened / was listening to the radio in the kitchen when they ⁹announced / were announcing the winning numbers. I ¹⁰ran / was running to tell my wife, but she ¹¹watched / was watching TV at the time and she just ¹²told / was telling me to be quiet. It was only after I ¹³shouted / was shouting "I don't believe it, fifty million euros" for the tenth time, that she finally ¹⁴realized / was realizing what I ¹⁵said / was saying.'

2 Completa le frasi con i verbi in corsivo. Usa il tempo corretto: il past simple o il past continuous.

- 0 I fell asleep while I was watching TV last night. fall, watch
1 Ron his leg while he rugby. break, play
2 I you last night. You along Queen Street. see, walk
3 We in the park when it to rain. We
refuge in the café. walk, start, take
4 My parents when they in the same school. They
married six months later. meet, teach, get
5 Yesterday, I a coffee in the café on the High Street when Kate and Dave suddenly
and at my table! And they for their
drinks when they ! have, appear, sit down, not pay, leave

3 Completa l'articolo di giornale con il past simple o il past continuous dei verbi tra parentesi.



The Beatles

In July 1957, 15-year-old Paul McCartney ⁰went (go) to a garden fete at St Peter's Church in Liverpool. John Lennon ¹..... (perform) at the event with his band *The Quarry Men*. Paul ²..... (look) for a band to join at the time and a mutual friend ³..... (introduce) him to John. Soon after, John ⁴..... (invite) Paul to join *The Quarry Men*. On October 18th 1957, John Lennon and Paul McCartney first ⁵..... (play) together live. Later, John ⁶..... (look) for another guitarist and Paul ⁷..... (suggest) an old school friend, George Harrison. George ⁸..... (join) the band in the summer of 1958. After several name changes, including *Johnny and the Moondogs* and *Long John and the Beatles* they finally ⁹..... (become) *The Beatles* in 1960. At first, the band mainly ¹⁰..... (play) American rock 'n' roll covers, but they soon ¹¹..... (begin) to write their own songs and by the early 1960s they ¹²..... (perform) mostly original material. The line-up of the 'Fab Four' was complete when Ringo Starr ¹³..... (replace) the original drummer, Pete Best, in 1962. In the same year, they ¹⁴..... (release) their first single *Love Me Do* and 'Beatlemania' was born.

23

Used to e would

I used to be in a band. I didn't use to like opera. We'd go to Sicily every summer.

A Used to: uso

Used to si usa per esprimere situazioni che non esistono più.

Può essere usato per:

i abitudini e azioni abituali del passato,

I used to play football every Tuesday.

Giocavo (avevo l'abitudine di giocare) *a calcio ogni giovedì.*

We used to play computer games for hours.

Giocavo (avevamo l'abitudine di giocare) *di videogiochi per ore.*

ii stati del passato.

She used to have long hair. Aveva i capelli lunghi.

There used to be a shop here. C'era un negozio qui.

I didn't use to like him. Lui non mi piaceva.



In italiano si può usare un tempo passato, per esempio l'imperfetto, per esprimere azioni del passato che ora non si compiono più.

B Used to: forma

Used to è seguito dalla forma base del verbo (infinito senza *to*). Nota che non si usa la desinenza 'd' nelle frasi negative e nelle domande.

Affermativa	<i>I used to play the piano.</i>	<i>There used to be a park here.</i>
Negativa	<i>I didn't use to enjoy school.</i>	<i>She didn't use to like jazz.</i>
Domande	<i>Did you use to smoke?</i>	<i>Did there use to be a school here?</i>

i Le risposte brevi a domande del tipo *Did you use to ...?* ecc. sono *Yes, I did.*; *No, we didn't.* ecc.

Did your parents use to smoke? ~ No, they didn't.

ii Una risposta possibile alle domande con *Do you ...?* è del tipo:

No, but I used to.

Do you listen to much pop music? ~ No, but I used to.

Does your mother work? ~ No, but she used to.

C Would: uso

Talora si può usare *would* per esprimere abitudini e occupazioni abituali del passato; in questo caso assume un significato simile a *used to*.

When I was about ten, I would play computer games all the time.

Quando avevo dieci anni avrei giocato di videogiochi tutto il tempo.

Fai attenzione, *would* non si usa per parlare o esprimere stati o situazioni al passato.

I used to love computer games. Non I would love computer games.

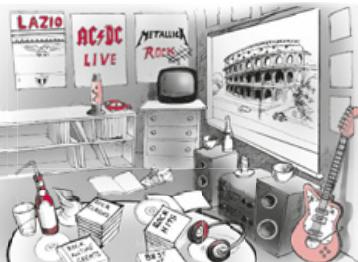
D Would: forma

Would è seguito dalla forma base del verbo. Viene spesso contratto in 'd' dopo i pronomi. *Would* con questo significato viene usato raramente nelle forme negative o interrogative.

He'd always arrive late.

When I was a child, we'd go to Greece on holiday every year.

- 1 Guarda come era Marco cinque anni fa e com'è ora. Scrivi delle frasi su di lui usando *used to* o *didn't use to* e le espressioni date.



5 years ago



Now



0 live in Rome He used to live in Rome.

1 have long hair

2 listen to rock music

3 wear glasses

4 have a computer

5 play the guitar

6 have an MP3 player

- 2 Scrivi tre cose che era tua abitudine fare o avevi in passato ma non fai e non hai più. Usa *used to* e i verbi del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

collect eat drink go have like listen to live play read study support watch wear

0 I used to play computer games all the time.

1

2

3

- 3 Scrivi risposte vere per te usando *No, but I used to*; *Yes, I do*; *No, I don't*.

0 Do you have long hair? ~ No, but I used to.

1 Do you read comics? ~

2 Do you play with dolls? ~

3 Do you ever buy CDs? ~

4 Do your parents take you to school? ~

5 Do you go to primary school? ~

- 4 È possibile usare sia *used to* che *would* in questo articolo, o solo *used to*? Cancella *would* quando non si può usare.

My school days

I went to school in the 1940s and 50s. School ⁰ *used to / would* be very different then. Today, you study lots of different subjects, but then we only studied a few. Geography was my favourite subject. I also liked history and English, but I ¹ *used to / would* hate maths. We had a maths test every day! There ² *used to / would* be lots of rules at school. The most important rule

was that we ³ *always used to / would always have to* stand up when another teacher came into the room. If you didn't do this, you ⁴ *used to / would* get into trouble. The school was mixed with both boys and girls, but we ⁵ *never used to / would never* play together. The boys ⁶ *used to / would* play football at one end of the playground and the girls ⁷ *used to / would* play at the other end. All in all, I ⁸ *used to / would* enjoy school. It was hard work and the teachers were very strict, but we had lots of fun.

- 1 Past continuous e past simple** La polizia sta interrogando un testimone che ha visto due persone che forse hanno commesso un crimine. Completa il dialogo usando il past continuous o il past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

Police officer When ⁰ did you see (see) the two people?
 Witness Yesterday, at about 4.30.
 Police officer How old ¹ (be) they?
 Witness They both ² (look) in their 20s.
 Police officer And what ³ they (look) like?
 Witness Well, he ⁴ (be) quite tall and he ⁵ (have) short dark hair.
 She ⁶ (have) long dark hair.
 Police officer And what ⁷ they (wear)?
 Witness They ⁸ both (wear) a white T-shirt and jeans, I think.
 And he ⁹ (wear) a back-to-front baseball cap. Oh, and she
¹⁰ (wear) sunglasses.
 Police officer And ¹¹ you (notice) anything else about their appearance?
 Witness Yes. They ¹² (carry) big bags – both of them.
 Police officer And what ¹³ they (do)?
 Witness He ¹⁴ (talk) on his mobile and she ¹⁵ (stand) next to him.
 Police officer OK, thank you for your help.

- 2 Used to** Scrivi delle frasi in cui spieghi com'è cambiata questa strada. Usa *There used to be* o *There didn't use to be*.



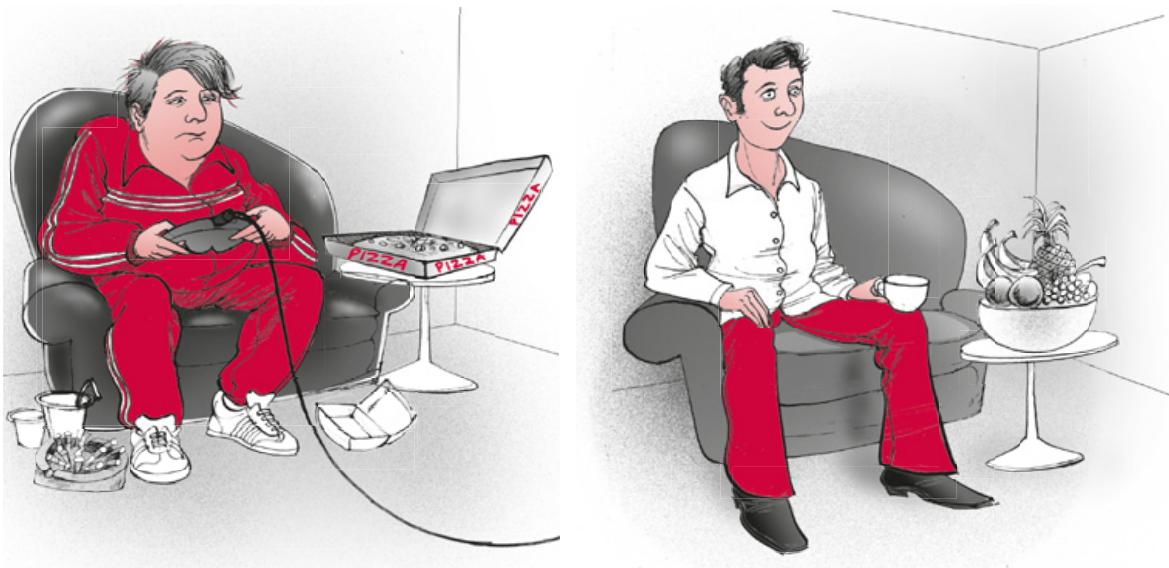
30 years ago



Today

- 0 a post office There used to be a post office.
 1 a playground
 2 a phone box
 3 an internet café
 4 a supermarket
 5 some small shops
 6 a car park

- 3** **Used to** Di recente Frank ha cambiato alcune sue abitudini. Guarda le figure, poi completa le frasi su di lui usando *used to ...* e *didn't use to ...*.



Ten years ago he ...

... stayed in bed all morning.
... played computer games all day.
... ate junk food all the time.
... smoked.
... went out every night.

Now he ...

... gets up early.
... goes for walks.
... eats fruit and vegetables.
... goes to the gym.
... stays in during the week.

0 He used to stay in bed

all morning.

1

early.

2

all day.

3

for walks.

4

all the time.

- 4** **Used to** Scrivi delle domande su Frank usando *Did he use to ...?* Poi dai le risposte brevi.

0 stay in bed all morning?

Did he use to stay in bed all morning? ~ Yes, he did.

1 smoke?

~

2 go to the gym?

~

3 go out every night?

~

4 eat fruit and vegetables?

~

5 be overweight?

~

5 Past simple, past continuous, there was/were e used to/would Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

Fairy tale ending

Pamela Bromley was born in Manchester, UK, in 1930. As a child, her favourite possession ⁰ **B** a book of fairy tales, which she ¹ all the time. When Pamela was ten years old, she and her family ² to the United States. The family took only one suitcase and Pamela ³ her precious book behind in the UK.

Many years later, when Pamela was in her sixties, she ⁴ about what to buy as a birthday present for her eight-year-old granddaughter. As ⁵ a small second-hand bookshop near to her house, Pamela ⁶ to get her a book. Pamela ⁷ in the children's section of the bookshop when suddenly a big smile ⁸ on her face. On the shelf, ⁹ a copy of the book of fairy tales that she ¹⁰ so much as a child back in the UK. And when she ¹¹ the book, she ¹² her name and her old address inside. It was the very copy that she had as a child.

- | | | | |
|----------------------|-------------------|------------------|------------------|
| 0 A were | B was | C there was | D is |
| 1 A was reading | B were reading | C reading | D used to read |
| 2 A used to emigrate | B were emigrating | C was emigrating | D emigrated |
| 3 A left | B was leaving | C would leave | D used to leave |
| 4 A thought | B was thinking | C were thinking | D thinking |
| 5 A was | B there was | C was | D there were |
| 6 A decided | B was deciding | C were deciding | D used to decide |
| 7 A looked | B was looking | C were looking | D used to look |
| 8 A was appearing | B were appearing | C appeared | D would appear |
| 9 A were | B was being | C there were | D there was |
| 10 A loved | B was loving | C were loving | D would love |
| 11 A was opening | B were opening | C opened | D used to open |
| 12 A was finding | B were finding | C found | D used to find |

6 Past simple, past continuous, there was/were e used to/would Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa non più di tre parole.

- 0 In the past I listened to pop music, but I don't now.
I used to listen to pop music.
- 1 Twenty people went to the party.
There at the party.
- 2 I sometimes used to be late for school.
I would for school.
- 3 Helena had her new dress on at the party.
Helena was dress at the party.
- 4 In the past, mobile phones were the size of a brick.
Mobile phones used the size of a brick.
- 5 I started tidying my room at 6.30 and finished it at 7.30.
I was from 6.30 to 7.30.
- 6 There was no rain between midday and 3 o'clock.
It between midday and 3 o'clock.

7 Part simple, past continuous, there was/were e used to/would Traduci le frasi.

- 0 Un tempo avevo un lettore MP3, ma l'ho venduto.
I used to have an MP3 player, but I sold it.
- 1 Un tempo avevo i capelli lunghi.
- 2 C'erano circa trenta persone alla festa.
- 3 Stavamo giocando a calcio quando iniziò a piovere.
- 4 Qualcuno telefonò mentre stavo facendo una doccia.
- 5 Un tempo non mi piaceva il caffè, ma ho iniziato a berlo l'anno scorso.
- 6 Mi dispiace non averti chiamato. Ho fatto i compiti tutta la sera.

8 Grammatica e lessico: espressioni del passato (past simple) Completa la tabella con le parole del riquadro.

afternoon evening five years Friday July month 1999 2.30 9th July

It happened	last night / Friday / week / ⁰ month / July / year
	yesterday morning / afternoon / ¹
	this morning / ² / evening
	in March / ³ / 2006 / ⁴ / the 1960s
	at 6 o'clock / ⁵ / midnight / the weekend
	on Monday / ⁶ / 15th May / ⁷
	ten minutes / two hours / ⁸ / ages ago

9 Grammatica e lessico: espressioni del passato (past simple) Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando questi suggerimenti al past simple e un'espressione di tempo.

- 0 have breakfast *I had breakfast at 7.30.*
- 1 be born
- 2 start secondary school
- 3 go on holiday
- 4 go to a party
- 5 go shopping
- 6 watch TV
- 7 get up
- 8 check my emails

A Uso

L'uso più comune del present perfect è quello di esprimere un evento o una situazione che hanno conseguenze sul presente. Quando si usa il present perfect in questo modo, si dice qualcosa sulla situazione attuale e i dettagli degli eventi passati (quando, come ecc.) sono in genere meno importanti.

I've lost my keys. My bike's gone! Have you heard? Dave's broken his leg.

Quando si usa il present perfect non si indica quando l'evento è accaduto.

I've bought a scooter. Non I've bought a scooter last week.

Ma si può usare il present perfect con espressioni di tempo 'non finito' come: *recently, today, this week, this year* ecc.

Have you seen Chiara recently? I've had a great time today.

► Vedi unità 26–28 per altri usi del present perfect.

B Forma

Si usa il presente di *have* + participio passato. Nota gli esempi:

Affermativa	I've finished the report.	He's gone to the gym.	Sara's passed her exam.
Negativa	I haven't finished.	He hasn't phoned yet.	I haven't been here before.
Domande	Has she left?	Have you phoned Ann?	Where have they gone?

i La forma non contratta si usa di norma in contesti formali e per dare enfasi.

FIFA has elected a new president. I have not taken your camera!

ii Le risposte brevi alle domande al present perfect sono: Yes, *I have.*; No, *she hasn't.* ecc.
Have you finished? ~ Yes, I have. Has Barry left? ~ No, he hasn't.

iii Il past participle dei verbi regolari è lo stesso del past simple (forma base + *-ed*). Per molti verbi irregolari il participio passato è diverso.

► Vedi pagina 416 per un elenco completo del participio passato dei verbi irregolari.

C Already e yet

Spesso con il present perfect si usano *already* (già) e *yet* (non ... ancora).

i *Already* si usa nelle frasi affermative e nelle domande.

I've already had lunch. Have you already had lunch?

ii *Yet* si usa nelle frasi negative e nelle domande. *Yet* va sempre alla fine della frase.

I haven't had lunch yet. Have you had lunch yet?

► Vedi unità 154 per altri usi di *already* e *yet*.

D Been e gone

Been e *gone* possono essere usati come il participio passato di *go*, ma c'è una differenza sostanziale.

Been = si è andati in un posto e poi si è ripartiti. *Gone* = si è ancora lì adesso.

They've been to London. Sono stati a Londra.

They've gone to London. Sono andati a Londra.

1 Completa le risposte usando il present perfect dei verbi del riquadro.

fix forget go not hear lose not invite

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| 0 A Where are you going? | B Back home. I <u>'ve forgotten</u> my books. |
| 1 A What's the matter? | B I my keys. |
| 2 A Where's Oliver? | B I think he home. |
| 3 A Is your computer OK now? | B Yes. I the problem. |
| 4 A What's Leon's new band like? | B I don't know. I them play. |
| 5 A Is Petra going to Kate's party? | B No. Kate her. |

2 Riscrivi questi titoli di giornali usando il present perfect.

0 **CHIEF EXECUTIVE OF BBC RESIGNS**

The chief executive of the BBC has resigned.

1 **School cleaner wins €100 million on lottery**

A school cleaner

2 **Wade Moody joins Inter**

Wade Moody

3 **EARTH RECEIVES ANOTHER ALIEN MESSAGE FROM OUTER SPACE**

Earth

4 **Lion escapes from Rome zoo**

A lion

3 Leggi la lista delle cose che Laura deve fare per la sua festa. Scrivi ciò che ha fatto e non ha fatto usando *already* e *yet*.

Things to do for the party:

- | |
|--|
| 0 tell the neighbours <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |
| 0 send out the invitations <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |
| 1 buy the drinks <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |
| 2 prepare the food <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |
| 3 choose the music <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |
| 4 move the furniture <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |
| 5 decide what to wear <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> |

0 She hasn't told the neighbours yet.

0 She's already sent out the invitations.

1

2

3

4

5

4 Completa le frasi con *been* o *gone*.

- 0 Where have you been? I was looking for you everywhere!
- 0 Where has Sally gone? I can't find her anywhere!
- 1 Maria isn't here. She's to the gym.
- 2 Sam's to Paris twice, I think.
- 3 Have you to that new café yet?
- 4 Where has my sandwich? It was here a minute ago.
- 5 Are you going to the library? ~ No, I've just

I've been to Rome twice. I've never played rugby. Have you ever been on TV?

Il present perfect è spesso usato per esprimere esperienze di vita senza specificare quando sono accadute. Si usa il present perfect se l'esperienza di vita ha un legame e una rilevanza con il presente.

A **Have you ever been to Paris?**

B **Yes, I have.**

A **Oh good. Can you recommend a good hotel?**

A **Do you like Indian food?**

B **I've never eaten it, so I don't know.**

- i** L'espressione *Have you ever ...?* ecc. si può usare per fare domande su esperienze di vita di qualcuno (*ever* = mai).

Le risposte brevi sono *Yes, I have. No, she hasn't.* ecc. e *No, never.*

Have you ever been to Italy? ~ Yes, I have.

Sei mai stato in Italia? ~ Sì.

Has Scotland ever won the World Cup? ~ No, never.

La Scozia ha mai vinto la Coppa del Mondo? ~ No, mai.

- ii** Gli avverbi come *never, once, twice, a few times* e *lots of times* si usano di norma per parlare delle proprie esperienze di vita.

Never si mette tra *have* e il verbo principale. *Once, twice, a few times* e *lots of times* vanno di solito alla fine della frase.

I've never been to Spain. He's been to the UK twice.

We've eaten here a few times.

- iii** Per parlare di nuove esperienze si può usare *This is/It's the first time* ecc. + present perfect.

This is the first time I've been here.

Non This is the first time I am here.

È la prima volta che vengo qui.

It's the third time we've stayed in this hotel.

Non It's the third time we stay in this hotel.

È la terza volta che stiamo in questo hotel.



Per esprimere le nuove esperienze in italiano si usa spesso: 'è la prima/terza volta che' + presente indicativo.

► Vedi unità 152 e 155 per altri usi rispettivamente di *never* e *ever*.

- 1 Scrivi delle domande usando *Have you ever?* e le espressioni del riquadro.

do one go there go there have one hear of them read it ride one

- 0 I'm going to Sicily next month. *Have you ever been there?*
- 1 I'm reading *The Lord of the Rings*.
- 2 We're going to Paris next month.
- 3 I had a sauna yesterday.
- 4 I rode a camel on holiday.
- 5 I was listening to a band called Nirvana last night.
- 6 I'm going to do a parachute jump.

2 Guarda le figure e scrivi le domande usando *Have you ever?* e le espressioni del riquadro.

be on TV break a bone eat Japanese food go to the USA go to the UK see a ghost



0 Have you ever been to the USA?

1 _____
2 _____

3 _____
4 _____
5 _____

3 Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 1. Usa *Yes, I have* o *No, I haven't*.

0 No, I haven't.

1 _____

2 _____

3 _____

4 _____

5 _____

6 _____

4 Scrivi frasi vere per te usando i suggerimenti e *never*, *once*, *twice*, *a few times*, *lots of times* ecc.

0 fall in love I've fallen in love lots of times.

1 meet a famous person _____

2 have an x-ray _____

3 ride a horse _____

4 go to Spain _____

5 play rugby _____

6 watch a football match _____

7 lose my ID card _____

8 go snowboarding _____

5 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni?

0 You are in Paris. You've never been to Paris before.

This is the first time I've been to Paris.

1 You're eating Chinese food. You haven't eaten Chinese food before.

It's _____.

2 You're watching a film. You've seen it twice already.

This is _____.

3 Your sister is in London. She has been there once before.

It's _____.

4 You are playing pool. You've never played it before.

This is _____.

Present perfect (since e for)

We've lived here for ten years. How long have you been here?

A Uso

Si usa il present perfect per esprimere un'azione iniziata nel passato e che continua nel presente.

I've had this mobile for about a year.

Ho questo cellulare da circa un anno.

I haven't seen Ben since the weekend.

Non vedo Ben dallo scorso weekend.



Nota che non si usa il present simple per esprimere un'azione che è iniziata nel passato e che continua nel presente.

We live here for six years. =
We've lived here for six years.

Abitiamo qui da sei anni.

Per descrivere questo tipo di azioni, in italiano si usa il presente.

I've worked in London for two years.

Lavoro a Londra da due anni.

B Since e for

Per descrivere la durata di un'azione si usano *since* e *for*.

i *Since* si usa per descrivere il momento d'inizio di una azione. Questo può essere un momento specificato all'interno dell'asse temporale (le dieci, aprile, 2006 ecc.) oppure può essere un 'evento' (la festa, il mio compleanno ecc.).

I've been here since 6.30. We've lived in Rome since 2008.

He's supported Arsenal since he was seven years old.

I haven't seen Andrea since the party.

ii *For* si usa per esprimere il periodo di tempo.

I've been here for two hours. It hasn't rained for weeks.

I've had this mobile for ages.

► Vedi unità 166 per altri usi di *since* e *for*.



Nota che *from* non si usa per esprimere un'azione che è iniziata nel passato e che continua nel presente.

We've lived here from 2008. =
We've lived here since 2008.

I've worked in London since 2006.

C Always, never ed espressioni con all

Si può usare *always* + present perfect per esprimere una situazione che è sempre esistita e *never* + present perfect per una situazione che non è mai esistita.

We've always lived in Milan.

Viviamo da sempre a Milano.

I've never liked punk music.

Non mi è mai piaciuta la musica punk.

Con *all* si possono usare espressioni del tipo *all morning, all day, all my life*.

We've been here all day. My grandfather's lived here all his life.

D How long ...

Si può usare *How long* + present perfect per chiedere la durata di qualcosa.

How long have you lived here? Da quanto tempo vivi qui?

1 Completa le frasi usando *since* o *for*.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 0 I've known Sam <i>since</i> 2008. | 4 We've been here 10 o'clock. |
| 0 We've lived here <i>for</i> ten years. | 5 It hasn't rained a month. |
| 1 I've played the guitar I was 12. | 6 Jo hasn't heard from Andy his birthday. |
| 2 I haven't seen Giorgio months. | 7 I haven't spoken to Gemma weeks. |
| 3 They've been married 20 years. | 8 I've worked here 2009. |

2 Completa le frasi con *since* e *for* in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 I've had a computer since I was ten.
I've had a computer for four years.
- 1 We've lived in our house since
We've lived in our house for
- 2 I've had my mobile since
I've had my mobile for
- 3 I haven't eaten since
I haven't eaten for

3 Riscrivi le frasi usando il present perfect e *since* o *for*.

- 0 I am a teacher. I became a teacher in 2006.
I've been a teacher since
2006.
- 1 Sam has a scooter. He bought it three months ago.
.....
three months.
- 2 I like classical music. I started liking it a couple of years ago.
.....
a couple of years.
- 3 I know Thomas. We met when we were at elementary school.
.....
we were at elementary school.
- 4 Jacopo is in a rock band. He joined the band last July.
.....
July.
- 5 Polly doesn't do ballet. She stopped doing ballet when she was twelve.
.....
she was twelve.
- 6 I don't buy CDs any more. I last bought a CD about two years ago.
.....
about two years.

4 Completa le frasi usando i suggerimenti tra parentesi e il present perfect dei verbi. In alcuni casi dovrai aggiungere *for* o *since*.

Dino I hear Gianni is going out with Julia.

Bella Yes, ⁰ they've been together for about a month. (they / be / together / about a month).

Alessia Hi Jenny. ¹ (I / not / see / you / ages). How are you?

Jenny I'm fine. And you?

Giorgio That's a nice car! ² (how long / you / have / it)?

Matteo About six months.

Paolo How do you know Antonella?

Lily ³ (we / be / friends / years).

⁴ (we / know / each other / we were at
primary school).

Marco I live in Rome.

Guido ⁵ (you / always / live) in Rome?

Marco No, I'm from Milan originally. ⁶ (I / be / in Rome /
about ten years).

Flora Would you like some ham?

Ben No, thanks. I don't eat meat. I'm vegetarian.

Flora ⁷ (how long / you / be / vegetarian)?

Ben Well, ⁸ (I / never / eat / meat), actually.

⁹ (I / be / vegetarian / all my life).

I've lost my ID card. I lost my ID card last week.

A Uso

La differenza principale tra il present perfect e il past simple è:

- i Il present perfect collega il passato al presente. In particolare, descrive qualcosa che ha ancora una relazione con il presente.
I've lost my ID card. (I don't have my ID card now.)
Ho perso la mia carta d'identità. (Ora non ho più la mia carta.)
- ii Il past simple descrive solo qualcosa avvenuto o iniziato nel passato. Per descrivere la situazione del presente sono necessarie altre informazioni.
I lost my ID card last week. (I may or may not have it now.)
Ho perso la mia carta d'identità. (Non è chiaro se in questo momento ho o non ho la carta d'identità.)



In italiano i tempi verbali passato prossimo e passato remoto sono spesso interscambiabili. Pertanto, in inglese occorre verificare il contesto per decidere quale tempo verbale utilizzare.

B Espressioni di tempo

Le espressioni di tempo si possono riferire ad un tempo 'finito' (*two hours ago, at 10.30, last week, in 2009*) oppure 'non finito' (*recently, this week, since 2005, so far* ecc.).

- i Si usa il present perfect con un'espressione di tempo 'non finito'.
I've been busy this week. *We've been to London twice this year.*
I've seen Tom recently.
- ii Si usa il past simple con un'espressione di tempo 'finito'.
I was busy yesterday. Non *I've been busy yesterday.*
We went to London twice last year. *I saw Tom five minutes ago.*
- iii Si può usare sia il present perfect che il past simple senza espressioni di tempo. Si fa tale uso quando l'indicazione del tempo non è importante o è sottointesa.
I've bought a new mobile. *I've finished!*
I went to school in London. *We met at university.*

C It's ... since ...

It's ... since ... è una struttura che indica da quanto tempo è compiuta o meno un'azione. Poiché *since* si riferisce ad un evento del passato si usa il past simple.

It's ages since I went to a good party.
How long is it since you last saw Roberto?

► Vedi unità 27 per l'uso di *since* con il present perfect.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 0 We <u>went</u> / 've been to Spain last year. | 5 They got married / 've got married in 1996. |
| 1 I spent / 've spent a lot of money recently. | 6 I didn't eat / haven't eaten since breakfast. |
| 2 She arrived / 's arrived at 6.30. | 7 We went / 've been to the cinema two weeks ago. |
| 3 We didn't watch / haven't watched TV recently. | 8 Have you seen / Did you see Riccardo the other day? |
| 4 I saw / 've seen Anthony earlier today. | 9 You were / 've been very busy this week. |

2 Le due coppie di frasi hanno lo stesso significato. Completale usando il present perfect o il past simple dei verbi del riquadro.

be – get have – buy move – live play – not play not rain – have see – not see

- 0 a I 've had this mobile since March.
b I bought this mobile in March.
- 1 a He to Italy when he was a child.
b He in Italy since he was a child.
- 2 a The last time I John was at Christmas.
b I John since Christmas.
- 3 a How long you married?
b When you married?
- 4 a It's six months since I tennis.
b I tennis for six months.
- 5 a It for weeks.
b It's weeks since we any rain.

3 Completa i dialoghi con il present perfect o il past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

- 0 Anne Have you been (go) to the UK?
Lara Well, I've never been (never / go) to the UK, but I went (go) to Ireland last year.
- 1 Felix you (see) *The Lord of the Rings* films?
Tessa Yes. I (see) them lots of times. I (watch) them all the time when I was about twelve.
- 2 Luca I (lose) my mobile. you (see) it?
Cosimo you (look) in the kitchen? I (see) you with it in there earlier.
- 3 Ben How long you (know) Peter?
Bice We (meet) when we were at primary school. So I guess we (know) each other for about ten years now.
- 4 Letta you (hear)? Chris (break) his leg.
Amy Oh no! How he (break) it?
Letta He (fall) out of a tree!

4 Completa l'articolo con il present perfect o il past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

Mobile mania

In the 1990s, the mobile phone ⁰ was (be) a new and exciting invention.

Since then, the mobile ¹ (become) an important part of everyday life.

And at the heart of mobile phone use is SMS text messaging. Phone companies first

² (introduce) texting in 1995, but initially it ³ (be)

possible only between people on the same network. Cross-network texting

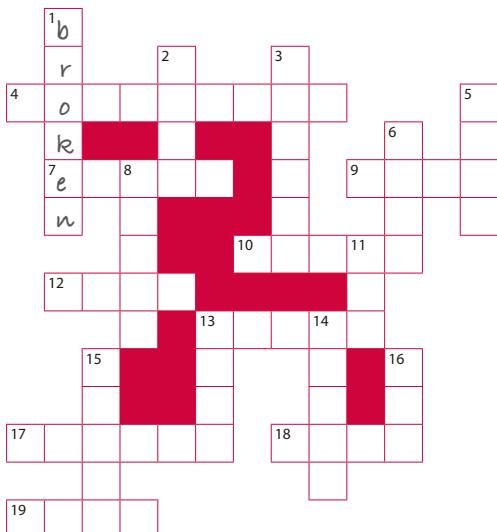
⁴ (not become) available until three years later, in 1998. Since then,

texting ⁵ (take over) from the phone conversation as the way to

communicate and today, billions of text messages are sent every day.

And the mobile phone itself ⁶ (become) a fashion object – both in the way it looks and the way it sounds. Users ⁷ (be able) to download personalized ringtones and chart music for several years now. In fact, in 2006, a song based on the Crazy Frog ringtone ⁸ (become) a chart hit in several countries.

1 Il participio passato Completa il cruciverba con il participio passato dei verbi irregolari.



ACROSS

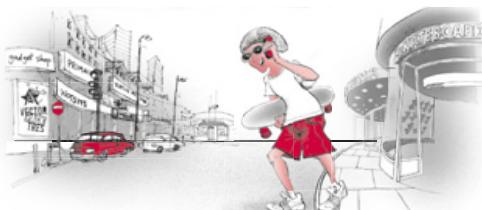
- 4 forgot
7 eat
9 do
10 hear
12 see
13 know
17 buy
18 read
19 make

DOWN

- 1 break
2 go
3 become
5 be
6 tell
8 take
11 run
13 keep
14 wake
15 find
16 have

2 Present perfect Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Completa le frasi usando le espressioni del riquadro.

be an accident break down buy a new skateboard lose my keys miss the bus stop raining



0 I've bought a new skateboard.



3 I



1 We



4 There



2 The car



5 At last it

3 Present perfect e past simple Completa il testo con il present perfect o il past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

Harrods

Harrods ⁰ has been (be) the most famous shop in the UK for over a hundred years and today it is the third most popular tourist attraction in London (after Buckingham Palace and the Houses of Parliament). It is the largest department store in the world and sells over 1.2 million different items.

The Harrods story ¹ (begin) in 1849, when a local fruit and vegetable seller called Henry Charles Harrod ² (buy) a small shop in Knightsbridge, London. At first, the shop ³ (have) only one room and ⁴ (sell) only a few items of food, but after a few years it ⁵ (expand) and ⁶ (start) to sell other goods as well. The store's motto is 'Everything for Everyone Everywhere' and over the last 150 years, Harrods ⁷ (sell) many unusual items, including luxury cars, aeroplanes and various exotic animals. In 1967, King Zog of Albania ⁸ (buy) an elephant from Harrods as a gift for the president of the United States.

Henry Charles Harrod ⁹ (die) in 1885 and since then the shop ¹⁰ (have) a number of different owners. The current owner, Egyptian businessman Mohammed al-Fayed, ¹¹ (buy) the shop in 1985.

FCE

4 Present perfect e past simple Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

0 When did you last cook dinner? *since*
How long is it since you last cooked dinner?

1 When did you last see Andrea? *saw*
How long is it Andrea?

2 We haven't heard from Katie for ages. *since*
It's been Katie.

3 It's been months since I went to a party. *been*
I for months.

4 I last played tennis about two weeks ago. *for*
I about two weeks.

5 This place is very different. *changed*
This a lot.

T

5 Present perfect e past simple Traduci le frasi e le domande.

0 Sono stato due volte nel Regno Unito.
I've been to the UK twice.

1 Non sono mai stato in un paese straniero.

5 Oh no! Ho perso il mio cellulare.

2 Vivo a Roma da dieci anni.

6 Da quanto tempo conosci Lorenzo?

3 Vissi a Milano per cinque anni.

7 Sei mai stato in TV?

4 Hai sentito? Simona si è rotta il braccio.

8 Mr Vecchio insegna qui dal 2000.

I've been playing football. What have you been doing? He hasn't been waiting long.

A Uso

Il present perfect collega il presente con il passato. Di norma si usa la forma continua del present perfect per esprimere un'attività prolungata o ripetuta. I casi in cui si usa sono per azioni:

i iniziate nel passato e che continuano ancora adesso,

I've been waiting for about an hour. It's been raining for days.

He's been going to the gym a lot recently.

ii finite di recente ma che hanno ancora ripercussioni sul presente.

I've been driving all day. I'm exhausted. You're covered in mud! What have you been doing?

Spesso si usa il present perfect continuous per parlare di attività recenti che si svolgono ad intervalli regolari.

What have you been doing lately? I've been studying a lot. I haven't been going out much.

B Forma

Per formare il present perfect continuous, si usa la forma del presente di *have + been + -ing*.

Affermativa	I've been driving all day.	Andrew's been working hard recently.
Negativa	I haven't been waiting very long.	The radio hasn't been working for ages.
Domande	Have you been waiting long?	How long has it been raining?

La forma non contratta si usa solo in contesti formali e per dare enfasi.

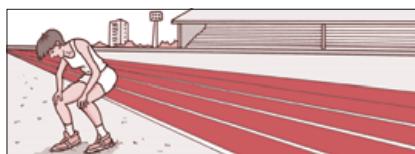
The President has been visiting troops today. I have not been borrowing your clothes!

- 1 Che cosa stavano facendo queste persone finora? Usa le espressioni del riquadro e il present perfect continuous.

argue repair his scooter paint the fence play the violin run ride all day



0 He's been repairing his scooter.



3



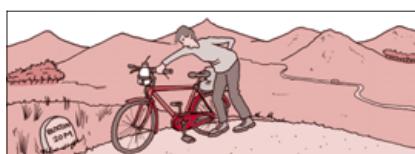
1



4



2



5

2 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando il present perfect continuous.

0 They're waiting. They started waiting twenty minutes ago.

They've been waiting

for twenty minutes.

1 Belinda lives in New York. She moved there in April.

since April.

2 It's raining. It started raining this morning.

since this morning.

3 When did you start doing your homework?

How long

?

4 Lilly plays the piano. She started playing it two years ago.

for two years.

5 When did Carlos start watching TV?

How long

?

6 I don't feel well. I didn't feel well when I woke up.

all day.

3 Completa le email usando il present perfect continuous dei verbi dei riquadri.

not do do revise stay

go out go out see study

Hi Jen,

Just a quick email to say 'hi' and to see how you are. So, what ⁰ have been doing lately? Anything interesting? As for me, I ¹ much, actually. I ² at home a lot recently. I've got my end-of-year exams next week so I ³ for them. University isn't all late nights and parties! How's Dave? Are you still together? Anyway, drop me a line and let me know your news.

Have fun, Carolina x

Hi Carolina,

I'm fine. ⁰ I've been studying quite a lot too – no exams, but lots of reports and assignments. As for my social life, I ⁴ quite a lot. And yes, Dave and I are still together. Actually, we ⁵ each other a lot recently – almost every day. We ⁶ for three months now! It must be love! Anyway, don't work too hard and let's meet up after your exams.

Jen x

4 Che cosa stavi facendo finora? Scrivi cinque frasi usando le espressioni del riquadro oppure altre a tua scelta.

work hard go out a lot have a good time do exams watch a lot of TV

stay at home spend a lot of money eat a lot of junk food

play computer games a lot do a lot of sport go to the gym listen to a lot of music

0 I've been playing football a lot recently.

1

2

3

4

5

*Have you been going to the gym much? Have you been to the gym this week?***A Uso**

A volte c'è una sottile differenza di significato nell'uso del present perfect continuous e il present perfect simple ed in qualche situazione possono essere usate entrambe le forme.

How long have you worked here? o How long have you been working here?

Ci sono talora alcune differenze notevoli tra il present perfect continuous e il present perfect simple.

- i Si usa di norma il present perfect continuous per indicare un'attività prolungata o ripetuta. Si pone enfasi sull'azione che si sta compiendo.

I've been reading the paper all morning.

We've been waiting for twenty minutes so far.

- ii Si usa di norma il present perfect simple per esprimere il completamento ed il risultato di un'azione e per dire 'quante volte' la si è compiuta. Non si vuole porre enfasi sullo svolgimento dell'azione.

I've read the book. It was great. We've waited long enough. Let's go.

I've seen him three times this week. Non I've been seeing him three times this week.

- iii Si può usare il present perfect continuous per esprimere un'azione che viene vista come temporanea o di breve durata e il present perfect simple per esprimere un'azione che è vista come permanente o di lunga durata.

He's been working there for a couple of weeks now. Lavora lì da due settimane.

He's worked there for thirty years. Lavora lì da trenta anni.

B Verbi di stato

I verbi di stato (*be, know, like* ecc.) non si usano di norma al present perfect continuous.

We've known each other for years. Non We've been knowing each other for years.

Ci conosciamo da diversi anni.

► Vedi unità 14 per altri usi dei verbi di stato e di moto.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 *She's been done / She's been doing her homework for about an hour.*
- 1 *I've finished / I've been finishing my work already.*
- 2 *Good news! Jim's fixed / Jim's been fixing the computer.*
- 3 *I've fixed / I've been fixing the computer since this morning.*
- 4 *Sorry I'm late. Have you waited / Have you been waiting long?*
- 5 *How many times have you been / have you been going to the UK?*
- 6 *They've arrived / They've been arriving at last!*
- 7 *Have you seen / Have you been seeing Frederic today?*
- 8 *You're late! What have you done / What have you been doing for the last hour?*

2 Completa le frasi usando le espressioni in corsivo due volte: al present perfect simple e al present perfect continuous.

0 go to the gym

- a I've been going to the gym for about a year now.
b I've been to the gym a few times this year.

1 watch the DVD

- a I twice.
b I non-stop ever since I bought it.

2 read the paper

- a He for twenty minutes.
b She already.

3 install those new programs

- a She all morning.
b she yet?

4 go to the gym

- a He's not here. He
b He a lot recently.

3 Scrivi le domande usando *How long* e *you*. Usa il tempo adatto: present perfect simple o present perfect continuous.

0 live / in Rome? How long have you lived in Rome?

1 know / your best friend?

2 learn / English?

3 have / your mobile?

4 sit / here?

5 do / these grammar exercises?

4 Scrivi risposte complete che siano vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 3.

- 0 I've lived in Rome for ten years. 3
1 4
2 5

5 Completa le email con il present perfect simple o il present perfect continuous dei verbi tra parentesi.

✉

Hi Diana, I'm just wondering if you ⁰ 've heard (hear) from Alex recently. I ¹ (try) to contact him for a couple of weeks now. Do you know if he ² (go) away?
Thanks, Brian

✉

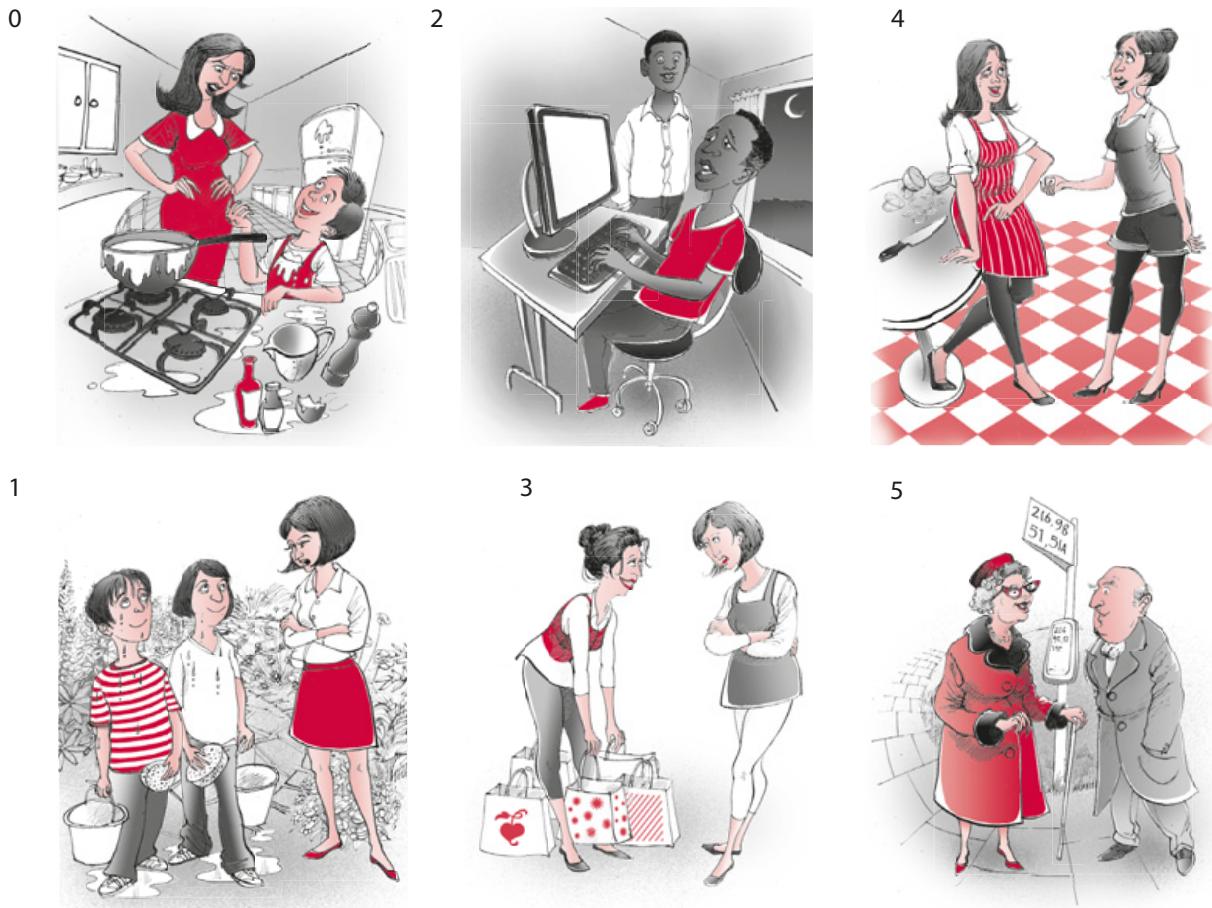
Hi Letta, I'm sorry I ⁶ (not email) you for a while, but I ⁷ (be) really busy. My boss suddenly quit last week, so it ⁸ (be) a bit hectic and we ⁹ (work) 24/7 to keep things going. Anyway, I ¹⁰ (intend) to email you for ages to invite you to our party. It's on the 28th. Hope you can make it. By the way, Oliver ¹¹ (ask) about you. In fact, he ¹² (not stop) talking about you since the last time you met!
Love, Tara

✉

Hi Karen, We ³ (think) about possibly going to Thailand this year, but we're not sure. You ⁴ (be) there, haven't you? Can you recommend any places to stay? By the way, ⁵ you (book) your holiday yet?
Best wishes, Yolanda.

- 1 **Present perfect continuous** Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Completa i dialoghi usando il present perfect continuous dei verbi del riquadro.

buy / spend cry / chop do / cook do / clean wait / try work / do



0 A What have you been doing

B I've been cooking dinner.

1 A You're soaking wet! What

B the windows.

2 A all evening?

B Yes, my science homework.

3 A What ?

B Oh, just a few clothes. my birthday money!

4 A Your eyes are red. ?

B No, onions.

5 A How long ?

B About 20 minutes. to get a taxi instead, but they're all busy.

- 2 Present perfect continuous e present perfect simple** Completa l'articolo con il present perfect continuous, il present perfect simple o il past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

THE UK'S FAVOURITE TAKE-AWAY MEAL

A recent survey ⁰ has shown (show) that Chinese is the UK's favourite take-away food. Indian food, which ¹ (be) one of the UK's official national dishes for many years, is our second favourite take-away. Of the 5000 people in the survey, 44% said they preferred Chinese food, with only 24% preferring Indian food. Surprisingly, fish and chips and pizza are less popular with only 14% and 13% of the votes.

The top reason for ordering a take-away meal is being too tired or not wanting to cook. 'When you ² (work) hard all day, the last thing you want to do is cook dinner,' explained survey participant Gary Hill. 'It's much easier to pick up the phone and order something.'

But for others, having a take-away is a ritual. 'We ³ (have) a take-away pizza every Friday night for about ten years,' says mother-of-four Beverly Stringer. 'It's our end-of-the-week treat, but only if the kids ⁴ (be) well-behaved.'

FCE

- 3 Present perfect continuous e present perfect simple** Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 I started working here two weeks ago. *for*
I've been working here for two weeks.
- 1 It's been ages since I saw Larissa. *haven't*
I ages.
- 2 It started raining at midday. *since*
It midday.
- 3 Ernesto became interested in astronomy when he was a child. *since*
Ernesto has he was a child.
- 4 The last time I went to the cinema was about six months ago. *been*
I haven't about six months.
- 5 He started waiting ten minutes ago. *for*
He ten minutes.
- 6 This is my third time in the UK. *been*
I twice already.

T

- 4 Present perfect continuous/simple e past simple** Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Ho letto due libri questa settimana. *I've read two books this week.*
- 1 Ho guardato due DVD oggi.
- 2 Sto guardando la TV da circa venti minuti.
- 3 Da quanto tempo stai facendo i compiti?
- 4 Ho finito i compiti.
- 5 Oh no! Ho perso le mie chiavi!
- 6 Ho lasciato il mio cellulare sull'autobus ieri, ma qualcuno l'ha trovato e lo ha dato alla polizia. Non l'ho ancora ritirato.

A Uso

Il past perfect si usa per un evento che è accaduto prima di un altro o che è accaduto prima di un tempo specifico del passato.

*Jim **had left** when we arrived. We'd **finished** the work by lunchtime.*

i Osserva il diverso uso del past simple e del past perfect nelle frasi seguenti.

*They **started** the meeting when we arrived. Iniziarono la riunione quando noi arrivammo.*

*They'd **started** the meeting when we arrived. Avevano iniziato la riunione quando noi arrivammo.*

ii Spesso si usa *already* (già) con il past perfect per enfatizzare la sequenza di eventi e *just* (appena) per indicare che la prima azione avviene poco tempo prima della seconda.

*Sarah **had already left** when we got there. They'd **just finished** dinner when we arrived.*

iii Con il past perfect si possono anche usare altri avverbi come *never* (mai) e *always* (sempre).

*I'd **never** met him before. My sister **had always** wanted to be a doctor.*

► Vedi unità 152 per altri usi di *never* e *always* e unità 154 per altri usi di *already* e *just*.

B Forma

Il past perfect si forma con *had* + participio passato.

	Forma completa	Forma contratta
Affermativa	I had finished . They had gone .	I'd finished . They'd gone .
Negativa	I had not finished . They had not gone .	I hadn't finished . They hadn't gone .
Domande	Had you finished? Where had they gone?	



Nota che si usa sempre *had* per formare il past perfect, mentre in italiano si può usare sia il verbo essere che avere + participio passato.

*When we arrived, Peter **had left**. Non When we arrived, Peter **was left**.*

Quando arrivammo, Peter era andato via.

La forma non contratta si usa di norma con i pronomi soggetto (*I, you, they* ecc.) in situazioni formali (come lo scritto) e per dare enfasi.
*We **had expected** a more professional service. I **had not finished**!*

1 Completa le risposte usando i suggerimenti in corsivo e il past perfect dei verbi.

0 You weren't at the party last night.

Unfortunately, I'd already arranged something else. I / already / arrange

1 Why didn't you join us for lunch?

Because I / already / eat

2 Why did you throw the milk away?

Because bad. it / go

3 I thought you and Pamela knew each other.

No, before yesterday. we / never / meet

4 Did you manage to get tickets for the Juventus vs Arsenal match?

No, when I rang. they / sell out

5 Did you see Jenny at the party?

No, I didn't. when I got there. she / already / leave

2 Completa le frasi usando il past simple o il past perfect dei verbi del riquadro.

die – water fail – not study feel = eat find – look have – not see
already leave – get – not see look – visit – just wake up

- 0 She felt sick because she 'd eaten too much chocolate.
- 1 I finally the book I wanted after I on about ten websites.
- 2 He his exam because he enough.
- 3 The plants because no one them.
- 4 We lots to talk about. We each other for months.
- 5 Sam really tired when we I think he
- 6 Roberto when we to the party, so we him.

3 Completa il blog con il tempo verbale più adatto: past simple o past perfect.

Posted by Robbo:

I'm thinking of taking a gap-year to go travelling. But my parents say I'm too young and want me to go straight to university. Any thoughts?

Posted by Matty:

I ⁰took (take) a gap-year after school before I ⁰went (go) to university. I ⁰'d always wanted (always / want) to see a bit of the world, so I ¹..... (decide) to go travelling around South America. I ²..... (be) abroad only once or twice before that, on school trips or family holidays, and I ³..... (never / be) outside Europe. For the first few months of the gap-year, I ⁴..... (work) and after I ⁵..... (save up) enough money I finally ⁶..... (set off). At the airport, I was very nervous and I ⁷..... (start) to wonder if I ⁸..... (make) the right decision. Anyway, ten minutes after the plane ⁹..... (take off) I ¹⁰..... (realize) it was too late to change my mind and I ¹¹..... (start) to relax. It ¹²..... (turn out) to be the best few months of my life. Go for it, Robbo!

4 Matty ha caricato alcune foto del suo anno sabbatico in Sud America sul suo blog. Completa le frasi scrivendo ciò che era appena successo prima che fosse scattata la foto usando *just* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

take off arrive finish have



- 0 I'm absolutely exhausted. I 'd just finished a 20km trek in the jungle.
- 1 Here's me on the beach in Rio. I a surfing lesson.
- 2 Here's me outside my hotel. I in Rio.
- 3 And this is the view of the Andes from the plane. We from Lima airport.

34 Past perfect continuous

We'd been driving all day. It had been snowing for hours.

A Uso

Il past perfect si usa per esprimere un evento che è avvenuto prima di un altro nel passato oppure prima di un momento specifico nel passato. Si usa la forma progressiva per indicare che l'attività era in corso oppure è stata ripetuta in un periodo di tempo.

They'd been going out for years before they got married.

We were exhausted - we'd been driving all day.

B Forma

Il past perfect continuous si forma con *had been* + *-ing*.

	Forma completa	Forma contratta
Affermativa	I had been waiting for ages.	I'd been waiting for ages.
Negativa	I had not been waiting long.	I hadn't been waiting long.
Domande	How long had you been waiting?	Had you been waiting long?

La forma completa si usa in genere con i pronomi soggetto (*I, you, they* ecc.) in situazioni formali (come lo scritto) e per dare enfasi.

We had been expecting to speak to the manager, not his assistant.

Ci saremmo aspettati di parlare con il manager, non con il suo assistente.

1 Completa i dialoghi con i suggerimenti dei riquadri e il past perfect continuous dei verbi.

he / worry she / cry they / argue they / play

- 0 A Did you hear Jen and Steve split up?
 B I'm not surprised. They'd been arguing for months!
- 1 A I hear Tom's interview was a disaster.
 B Well, about it all week. I think he was probably a bit too nervous.
- 2 A Sarah looked a bit upset when we saw her earlier.
 B Yes, I think, actually.
- 3 A I hear Juve lost 1–0 last night.
 B Yes, a goal in the 89th minute! And really well until then.

she / complain they / expect they / play she / work

- 4 A I hear Jane left her job. Apparently, she just walked out one day.
 B It doesn't surprise me. about it for months.
 A there long?
 B About a year or so.
- 5 A Who won the tennis?
 B Oh, they had to abandon the game because of rain. only for about twenty minutes. It was 4–2 to Murray.
 A Yes, I heard rain.

2 Danny e Ralph stanno parlando delle foto di Danny. Completa i dialoghi usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

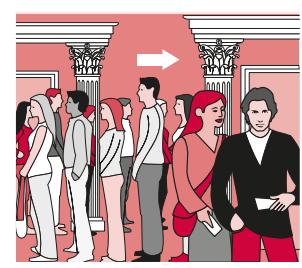
we / play football it / rain all day I / garden all afternoon

we / wait for the bus for ages we / queue for about an hour

0



2



1



3



0 Ralph You look exhausted in this one.

Danny I was. I'd been gardening all afternoon.

1 Ralph You look pretty fed up in this photo.

Danny We were fed up.

2 Ralph Where's this?

Danny We're just going into a museum.

3 Ralph You're covered in mud!

Danny Yeah, filthy. and

3 Completa le frasi con il past perfect simple o il past perfect continuous dei verbi tra parentesi.

0 When I opened the curtains, I saw that it had been raining (rain).

1 I threw the magazine away because I (read) it.

2 I was late, but luckily my friends (not wait) long.

3 When I got to work, the meeting (finish).

4 I didn't go to the cinema because I (see) the film already.

5 They (go out) with each other for five years before they got married.

6 We (play) tennis for about ten minutes when it started raining.

7 The two players (never / play) each other before they met in this year's final.

8 Tom seemed out of breath when we saw him. I think he (run).

9 Sam (run) ten kilometres before he twisted his ankle.

- 1 Past simple e past continuous** Guarda le figure e completa le frasi con il past simple o il past continuous dei verbi tra parentesi.



Bernardo ⁰ broke (break) his leg while he ¹ (play) football. He ² (go) to hospital in an ambulance.



We ³ (have) a picnic when it ⁴ (start) to rain. We ⁵ (run) to the car and ⁶ (wait) for the rain to stop.



I ⁷ (wait) for a bus when Leon ⁸ (appear) on his scooter. He ⁹ (have) a spare helmet so he ¹⁰ (give) me a lift. We ¹¹ (ride) away when I suddenly ¹² (realize) I ¹³ (not have) my bag with me. I'd left it at the bus stop.

- 2 Past simple e present perfect** Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

Matteo Sorry Mum, but I ⁰ broke 've broken a window.

Mother Oh dear. How ¹ did it happen / has it happened?

Matteo I ² kicked / have kicked the ball at it accidentally.

Angela Hi Ruth. I ³ just finished / 've just finished my exam.

Ruth How ⁴ did it go / has it gone?

Angela It ⁵ was / has been OK, I think.

Erica I ⁶ didn't know / haven't known that you wore glasses.

Sergio Yes, I ⁷ had / 've had them for a few months now.

Erica ⁸ Did you try / Have you tried contact lenses?

Sergio Yes, but I ⁹ didn't like / haven't liked them.

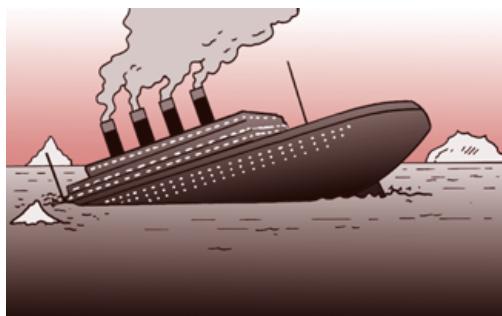
- 3** **Past perfect** Guarda questi momenti importanti del passato. Scrivi che cosa era appena successo usando le parole da ciascun riquadro.

Edison Italy Apollo 11 The Titanic hit invent land win

an iceberg the light bulb on the moon the World Cup



0 Edison had just invented the light bulb.



1

2

- 4** **Vari tempi verbali del passato** Completa il testo con il tempo verbale passato corretto dei verbi tra parentesi.

DISCOVERIES THAT CHANGED THE WORLD

>>THIS WEEK: PENICILLIN & THE WHEEL

Penicillin

Alexander Fleming ⁰ discovered (discover) penicillin by accident while he ¹ (conduct) an experiment. He ² (grow) some bacteria in a petri-dish when he ³ (notice) a strange mould that appeared to be killing it. The bacteria ⁴ (become) contaminated because one of his assistants ⁵ (forget) to replace the lid of the petri-dish the night before.

The wheel

People ⁶ (use) a horizontal 'potter's wheel' to make ceramics for hundreds of years before somebody ⁷ (turn) the same circular shape on its side and ⁸ (use) it to create a means of transport. This ⁹ (be) in about 3200 BC. Incredibly, the wheel ¹⁰ (be) in use for about 5000 years before the invention of the train and the bicycle in the mid-1800s.

MONDAY JULY 21, 1969

SPECIAL EDITION

THE HERALD

Man takes first steps on the moon

Neil Armstrong ⁰ A the first human to walk on the moon's surface early today. The spectacular moment ¹ after he ² the ladder of the lunar module Eagle, while his colleague Edwin 'Buzz' Aldrin ³ from inside the craft.

The landing, in the Sea of Tranquillity six hours earlier, ⁴ near perfect and the two astronauts on board later ⁵ that they ⁶ no difficulty in manoeuvring the module in the moon's gravity and that the module ⁷ no damage during the landing. The very first words from the moon ⁸ from Aldrin: 'Tranquillity base. The Eagle ⁹'.

During the landing, there ¹⁰ tense moments back on earth while the controllers at mission control in Houston ¹¹ for radio contact to be re-established with the astronauts. When the news of a safe landing finally ¹², the room ¹³ with shouts and cheers.

American president Richard Nixon, who ¹⁴ the events on television, ¹⁵ it as 'one of the greatest moments of our time.'



- | | | | |
|--------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|
| 0 A became | B was becoming | C has become | D had become |
| 1 A came | B was coming | C has come | D had come |
| 2 A was descending | B had descended | C had been descending | D has descended |
| 3 A has watched | B has been watching | C had watched | D watched |
| 4 A used to be | B was being | C has been | D had been |
| 5 A reported | B have reported | C had reported | D were reporting |
| 6 A have had | B had had | C had been having | D were having |
| 7 A used to suffer | B was suffering | C had suffered | D had been suffering |
| 8 A came | B were coming | C has come | D used to come |
| 9 A landed | B was landing | C has landed | D has been landing |
| 10 A were | B were being | C has been | D used to be |
| 11 A have waited | B have been waiting | C had waited | D were waiting |
| 12 A came | B was coming | C has come | D had come |
| 13 A erupted | B was erupting | C has erupted | D had erupted |
| 14 A used to watch | B has watched | C has been watching | D had been watching |
| 15 A described | B was describing | C had described | D has described |

6 Vari tempi verbali del passato Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 I started working here a month ago. *for*
I've a month.
- 1 They started dinner before I arrived. *started*
When I arrived, dinner.
- 2 It's months since I went swimming. *been*
I for months.
- 3 I watched TV from 7.30 to 8.30 last night. *was*
I at 8.00 last night.
- 4 We met for the first time last night. *never*
We before last night.
- 5 I haven't seen Lisa for about two weeks. *last*
I about two weeks ago.
- 6 Your English is better than it was when I last saw you. *improved*
Your English I last saw you.

7 Vari tempi verbali del passato Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te usando i verbi del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

eat buy go have like listen to meet play read see study watch

- 0 I was having breakfast at 7 o'clock this morning.
- 0 We went to France last summer.
- 1 at 9.30 last night.
- 2 yesterday.
- 3 for years.
- 4 never
- 5 last weekend.
- 6 I used to but I don't now.

T

8 Vari tempi verbali del passato Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Sono stato in Francia due volte.
I've been to France twice.
- 1 Non sono mai stato negli Stati Uniti.
.....
- 2 Stavo facendo una doccia quando hai chiamato ieri sera.
.....
- 3 Non ho visto Anastasia alla festa. Era appena andata via quando sono arrivato lì.
.....
- 4 Dove sei nato?
.....
- 5 Sei uscito ieri sera?
.....
- 6 Sei mai stato nel Regno Unito?
.....
- 7 Studiamo l'inglese da due anni.
.....
- 8 Non abbiamo imparato l'inglese nella scuola primaria.
.....

A Il present simple

Il present simple può essere usato per esprimere eventi futuri quando si riferiscono ad un orario o ad un programma.

Tomorrow's tour begins at 8.30 and finishes at 5.30.

The game kicks off at 7.45.

What time does the film start?

B Be (about) to

i *Be + infinito* può essere usato per riferirsi ad occasioni di tipo formale oppure ad eventi che fanno parte di un programma ufficiale. Si usa spesso anche per riportare notizie ed altre comunicazioni ufficiali.

The President is to make an announcement tomorrow.

The wedding is to take place in secret.

ii Si può usare *be about + infinito* per esprimere qualcosa che sta per avvenire in un futuro molto immediato. In questo tipo di costruzione, si può aggiungere *just* per accettuare maggiormente l'imminenza dell'evento.

The press conference is about to begin. The shop is just about to close.

Nelle risposte brevi si può usare (*just*) *about to* senza il verbo.

Have you tidied your room? ~ No, but I'm just about to.

Hai messo in ordine la tua stanza? ~ No, ma sto proprio per farlo.

► Vedi unità 37–40 per il present continuous con valore di futuro, *be going to* e *will*.

- 1 Harry sta parlando dell'itinerario del suo viaggio di un giorno a Roma. Scrivi ciò che dice usando i suggerimenti del riquadro e il present simple per il futuro.

Tour itinerary

- 9.30 collect from hotel
- 10.30 arrive Rome, sightseeing tour
- 13.30 lunch
- 14.30 free time
- 17.30 coach departs
- 18.30 arrive at hotel

we / arrive lunch / be the bus / get the bus / leave the bus / leave we / spend there / be

- | | | |
|---|----------------|---------------------------------|
| 0 | The bus leaves | from the hotel at 9.30. |
| 1 | | in Rome at 10.30. |
| 2 | | a sightseeing tour until 1.30. |
| 3 | | at 1.30. |
| 4 | | Rome at 5.30. |
| 5 | | back to the hotel at 6.30. |
| 6 | | a total of seven hours in Rome. |

- 2** Guarda le figure. Per ogni situazione scrivi una domanda con *what time* o *when* e rispondi. Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro e il present simple per il futuro.

the Los Angeles flight / arrive Andy's party / be Sport Today / start
your passport / expire the match / kick off the play / start

0



- A What time does the play start?
B It starts at 7.30.

1



- A
B

Arrivals		
AA8462	Hong Kong	Landed
BA569	Los Angeles	arr. 09.30
BA1337	Paris	-
AA817	Stockholm	-
BS056	Moscow	-

- A
B

3

7.00	FILM	Hurricane	7.00	Ct
8.30	Sport Today		7.30	Pr
10.00	News and Weather		9.00	Y
10.30	Film Review		10.00	H
11.30	The Late Show		11.30	T

- A
B

Place of birth MANCHESTER
Date of issue 31 MAY 2010
Date of Expiry 31 MAY 2020

- A
B



- A
B

- 3** Completa le notizie giornalistiche con *be* e i verbi in corsivo.

- 0 The president announced today that there *is to be* an election early next year. *be*
1 The draw for the first round of Wimbledon *take place* on 25th May.
2 The chief of police *give* a press conference this afternoon.
3 Teachers *hold* a one-day strike on Wednesday to protest about class sizes.
4 The long-awaited Picasso exhibition *open* in February next year.

- 4** Completa le frasi con *be about to* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

just / have dinner just / leave start raining start just / start just / text her

- 0 I must turn my mobile off. The lesson *is about to start*.
1 Quick! The bus
2 Get the umbrella. I think it
3 Sssh! The film
4 Mum, can I have a biscuit? ~ No, we !
5 Jane needs to know we're going to be late. ~ Yes. I

We're meeting at 7.30. Sam's having a party on Friday. What are you doing tonight?

Il present continuous si può usare per esprimere eventi futuri che sono già stati organizzati o prefissati.

I'm seeing Helen this evening. We're going for a pizza.

Pete isn't coming to the party. What are you doing at the weekend?

- i Nota che per eventi che sono già stati organizzati o prefissati e che fanno parte di un orario ufficiale o di un programma di eventi si usa il present simple. ► **Vedi unità 36.**
- ii Be going to può anche avere un uso ed un significato simili a quelli del present continuous.
► **Vedi unità 38 per be going to.**

1 Completa le frasi usando i verbi del riquadro.

collect the kids come back fly to Paris have a party meet play tennis

Please come to Harry's birthday party on 19th July.

0 Harry is having a party on 19th July.

Don't forget:
2.00 tennis with Sally
collect kids from school 3.30

2 She
Then, she

hi jim, cu at 8.
lynne x

Marco, you're booked on 09.25 flight to Paris tomorrow. Return flight at 18.50. E-ticket attached.

1 Jim and Lynne 3 Marco
He

2 Completa i dialoghi con il present continuous dei verbi dei riquadri.

I / play you / do

A What ⁰ are you doing on Wednesday?
B ¹ football. We play every Wednesday.

she / come I / see we / go

A Do you fancy going for a pizza tonight?
B I'd love to, but ² Lara tonight.
³ round to my house at about 6.30 and then ⁴ out to see a film.

we / stay you / go we / go

A Where ⁵ for your holidays this year?
B ⁶ to the USA for a couple of weeks, actually.
⁷ with my cousin in San Francisco.

we / fly we / not / stay we / come back my cousin / get you / do

A ⁸ anything at the weekend?

B ⁹ married on Saturday. In Paris, actually.

A A weekend in Paris. Nice!

B Well, ¹⁰ very long. ¹¹ there on Saturday morning and ¹² first thing on Sunday.

3 Leggi la pagina dell'agenda di Nicole e completa la conversazione telefonica.



Nicole Hello, Nicole speaking.

Angelina Hi Nicole. It's Angelina. Are you busy on Friday? I've got so much to tell you.

Nicole I am pretty busy, actually. ⁰ I'm meeting my personal trainer at the gym at ten. And then, ¹ at eleven-thirty.

Angelina OK, how about lunch then?

Nicole I'd love to, but ²

Angelina And the afternoon?

Nicole Well, ³ at three. And then at five ⁴

Angelina Dinner?

Nicole Sorry, but ⁵

Angelina Saturday?

Nicole Well, at eight-thirty ⁶ and then at ten ⁷ for the film festival. Maybe we can meet one day next week.

Angelina I'll call you. Bye.

4 Scrivi le domande con you per sapere quali sono i programmi del tuo amico / della tua amica.

0 go shopping at the weekend? Are you going shopping at the weekend?

1 go out this evening?

2 What / do tomorrow?

3 What / do at the weekend?

4 go on holiday soon?

5 Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 4. Usa Yes, I am; No, I'm not; I'm not sure; I'm going to a party ecc.

0 Yes, I am.

3
1
2
4

Be going to per il futuro

I'm going to get some milk. Sam isn't going to be at the meeting. It's going to rain.

A Uso

Be going to ha due usi principali:

- i per parlare di piani ed intenzioni future,

I'm going to get a new mobile.

Petra isn't going to be at the party.

Are you going to tell him?

- ii per formulare previsioni di eventi le cui premesse si manifestano già al tempo presente.

Look at the time - we're going to be late.

It looks like it's going to be a nice day.

B Forma

Si usa la forma del presente di *be* + *going to* + forma base (infinito senza *to*).

Affermativa	I'm going to watch TV.	She's going to be late.	We're going to leave now.
Negativa	I'm not going to tell you.	Tom isn't going to be there.	They're not going to do it.
Domande	Am I going to win?	Is she going to buy it?	When are you going to do your homework?

- i Spesso si evita di dire *going to go* perché ripetere il verbo *go* può suonare male.

Si usa invece il present continuous. *I'm going to go to bed.*

Are you going to go to the gym?

- ii Nell'inglese parlato in contesti informale, a volte *going to* viene pronunciato /gənə/.

- iii I verbi che vengono usati più frequentemente con *be going to* per parlare di piani ed intenzioni sono: *be, have, do, get, say, take e ask*.

C Be going to o present continuous?

Be going to e il present continuous possono avere un significato e un uso analogo.

Di norma si preferisce usare il present continuous per parlare di azioni che sono state pianificate dettagliatamente e che quindi sono più che semplici intenzioni. Tuttavia, a volte la distinzione tra un'intenzione e un'azione pianificata è meno evidente: in questo caso si può usare sia *be going to* che il present continuous.

I'm going to do my homework tonight. I'm doing my homework tonight.

Anche se l'azione è stata pianificata in anticipo, ci sono casi in cui si può usare *be going to*, in particolare quando l'azione implica l'attività di viaggiare in un determinato luogo. Questo si verifica soprattutto con il verbo *see*.

We're going to see my cousins at the weekend. I'm going to see a band on Saturday.

► Vedi unità 37 per altri usi del present continuous per esprimere il futuro.

1 Tutte queste risposte esprimono un'intenzione o una previsione. Completale usando *be going to* e i suggerimenti in corsivo.

- 0 A Have you phoned Tom?
B Not yet. *I'm going to do it later* *I / do it later*
- 1 A Look. It's started raining.
B Yes, I know. *I / get an umbrella*
- 2 A Are Helena and Debbie coming with us?
B No. *they / come later*
- 3 A You need to look smart for the interview.
B Yes, but *I / not / wear a tie*
- 4 A Your scooter's making a strange noise.
B I know. *Tony / look at it later*
- 5 A Come on – who were you with last night?
B I told you before. *I / not / tell you*

2 Leggi le situazioni e fai delle previsioni su ciò che accadrà in seguito usando *be going to* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

Italy / win this / not / be easy it / be expensive I / not / get the job
today / be a nightmare we / get wet

- 0 You open the menu at a restaurant. The prices are very high.
It's going to be expensive.
- 1 The score is Italy 3–1 Brazil after 89 minutes.
.....
- 2 You went to a job interview. It was terrible.
.....
- 3 You arrive at the airport in the morning. Your flight is delayed until the evening.
.....
- 4 You are walking in the countryside and it starts raining.
.....
- 5 You are trying to fix your computer. It's very complicated.
.....

3 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Scrivi le loro intenzioni usando *be going to* e i verbi del riquadro.

be late drop them rain sneeze



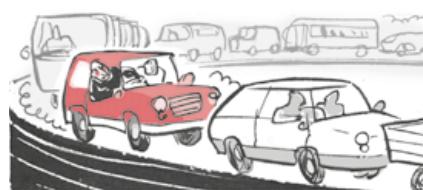
- 0 I'm going to drop them.



- 2 I



- 1 It



- 3 I think we

39

Will (e shall) per il futuro

I'll email them later. She'll be twenty next week. David won't be at the party.

A Uso

Will ha due usi principali per riferirsi al futuro:

- i Per esprimere qualcosa di non pianificato. Questo può essere:

- una decisione spontanea (incluse offerte, richieste e promesse),
I think I'll have a coffee. I'll help you if you like. I won't forget.
- un modo 'neutro' di riferirsi al futuro, spesso per esprimere azioni che vengono viste come inevitabili o automatiche.
She'll be sixteen in May. I'll be at school all day tomorrow.

- ii Per esprimere previsioni basate su sensazioni oppure su opinioni personali.
I think the score will be two nil to Italy. I don't think you'll like the film.

► Vedi unità 61 per l'uso usi di **will** per supposizioni e comportamenti tipici.

B Forma

Si usa **will** + forma base (infinito senza **to**). La forma negativa di **will** è **won't**.

Affermativa	I'll call you later.	The gym will be closed for two weeks.
Negativa	I won't tell anyone.	It won't be easy.
Domande	Will Kate be at the party?	How long will it take to get to London?

C Will o 'll?

Nell'inglese parlato si usa in genere '**'ll**' (non la forma completa **will**.)

I'll see you later. The taxi'll be here in ten minutes. I'm tired. I think I'll go to bed.

Si usa di norma la forma completa **will** e **will not** nei contesti formali e nello scritto oppure per dare enfasi.

The library will close at 5.30. I will not tolerate such behaviour.

D I think I'll ...

I think I'll ... (= penso che + futuro) è un'espressione comune. La forma negativa è generalmente *I don't think I'll ...* (= non penso che + futuro).

I think I'll have a coffee. Penso che prenderò un caffè.

I don't think I'll go out later. Non penso che uscirò più tardi.

E Shall

Shall e **shan't** si usano solo con **I** e **we**.

- i L'uso di **shall/shan't** è di norma guidato dal gusto personale. Alcuni preferiscono usare **shall/shan't** dopo **I** e **we**, altri invece non usano quasi mai **shall/shan't**.

I think I shall go to bed. o I think I'll go to bed.

We shan't be late. o We won't be late.

- ii Si usa **shall** per fare un suggerimento o un'offerta.

Shall we go soon? What shall we do today? Shall I help you?

1 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Usa i verbi in corsivo e un pronome adatto.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 0 There's a knock at the door. <i>get</i>
<i>I'll get it.</i> | 4 The phone rings. <i>answer</i> |
| 1 Your friend's homework is difficult. <i>help</i> | 5 You borrowed €50 from your friend. <i>pay back/soon</i> |
| 2 Someone has a message for your sister. <i>tell</i> | 6 Your friend wants to speak to you. <i>call/this evening</i> |
| 3 Your scooter is blocking someone's car. <i>move</i> | 7 Your mother is very tired. <i>cook/dinner</i> |

2 Scrivi le domande per queste risposte usando *will* e i suggerimenti in corsivo.

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| 0 We're driving to Paris.
<i>How long will it take?</i> | <i>how long / it / take?</i> |
| 1 I'm going out.
..... | <i>how long / you / be?</i> |
| 2 Can you call me later?
<i>Sure.</i> | <i>you / be / at home at 6.30?</i> |
| 3 It's Claudia's birthday next week.
..... | <i>how old / she / be?</i> |
| 4 Frank's having a party on Saturday.
..... | <i>it / be / any good?</i> |
| 5 I've booked a taxi.
..... | <i>when / it / be here?</i> |
| 6 I'm seeing Silvia and Marta tonight.
..... | <i>you / say / 'hello' from me?</i> |

3 Quali sono le tue previsioni per il futuro? Scrivi delle frasi usando *will* o *won't* e i suggerimenti dati.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 0 rain tomorrow | <i>It will rain tomorrow.</i> |
| 0 think / go out tonight | <i>I don't think I'll go out tonight.</i> |
| 1 watch TV tonight | |
| 2 be sunny at the weekend | |
| 3 think / be married by the time I'm 25 | |
| 4 be a millionaire by the time I'm 30 | |
| 5 think / Brazil / win the next World Cup | |

4 Completa le notizie giornistiche usando *will* (*not*) e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

space tourism / be *he / not resign* *he / not take part* tomorrow / be there / be

- | |
|---|
| 0 The president insisted yesterday that <i>he will not resign.</i> |
| 1 Travel industry experts believe that <i>a reality by 2025.</i> |
| 2 <i>a little cooler than today, with the possibility of rain later on.</i> |
| 3 <i>more about the Royal Wedding later in the programme.</i> |
| 4 Richard's injury means <i>in next week's match against Juventus.</i> |

5 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che diventino dei suggerimenti. Usa *shall I* o *shall we*.

- | |
|---|
| 0 Let's go out tonight. <i>Shall we go out tonight?</i> |
| 1 Do you want me to help you? |
| 2 Let's go for a pizza. |
| 3 Do you want us to meet at the cinema? |
| 4 What time do you want me to call you? |

Will e be going to

I'll make the coffee. I'm going to get a new phone. It'll be fun. It's going to rain.

Be going to e *will* sono spesso messi a confronto, perché tutte e due le forme possono essere usate sia per esprimere eventi futuri che per fare previsioni. Le differenze fondamentali tra *be going to* e *will* sono:

- i *Be going to* si usa per parlare di qualcosa di pianificato o che si ha intenzione di compiere prima del momento in cui si parla, mentre *will* si usa per esprimere decisioni spontanee prese nel momento in cui si parla.

I'm going to cook risotto for dinner. ~ I'll help you if you like.

- ii Si usa *be going to* per formulare previsioni fondate su premesse reali che si manifestano già nel presente, mentre si usa *will* per fare previsioni in base ad una sensazione o ad un'opinione personale.

Arsenal are playing well at the moment. It's going to be a difficult game. ~ I know, but I think it'll be a draw, 1-1.

Look at the traffic. We're going to be late. ~ Yes, we won't get there until eight o'clock.

1 Quali delle domande e frasi in corsivo nel dialogo esprime:

- a un'intenzione o una decisione presa prima del momento in cui si parla?
- b una decisione spontanea presa nel momento in cui si parla?
- c una previsione basata su dati evidenti?
- d una previsione basata su impressioni o opinioni personali?

A *Are you going to see Liverpool versus Roma next week? 0 a*

B *Yes, I am. Are you?*

A *Well, I haven't got a ticket yet, but I'm going to try to get one. 1*

B *Actually, a friend of my dad's had a spare ticket. I'll see if he's still got it, if you like. 2*

A *Great, thanks. Anyway, both teams are playing pretty well at the moment. Who do you think's going to win? 3*

B *Liverpool, of course. I think it'll be 2-0. 4*

A *No way. They've got some key players out with injuries, so I think it's going to be closer than that. 5*

I think it'll be a draw, or maybe 2-1 to Liverpool. 6

2 Completa le risposte usando *will* o *be going to* e i verbi tra parentesi.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 0 A How do I download the photos? | 3 A Here's the CD you wanted. |
| B Just a minute. I'll show (show) you. | B Thanks, I (give) it back to you tomorrow. |
| 1 A Where are you going? | 4 A Why do you want to speak to Dennis? |
| B To the shops. I (get) some bread. | B I (invite) him to the party. |
| 2 A Tea or coffee? | 5 A Have you got any plans for the weekend? |
| B I don't mind. I (have) whatever you're having. | B Yes. I (paint) my bedroom. |

3 Completa i dialoghi usando *will* o *be going to* e i verbi tra parentesi.

- 0 A Look at all this traffic!
B Yes. We're going to be (be) very late, that's for sure.
- 1 A We're going to the Tutankhamun exhibition tomorrow.
B Oh, you (love) it. It's fantastic.
- 2 A Look at those clouds!
B Yeah, I'd say it (rain) pretty soon.
- 3 A It's already midnight and we've still got a lot of work to do.
B I know. It (be) a long night.
- 4 A We (never / find) my earring. It's lost forever!
B No, it isn't. I'm sure we (find) it soon.

4 Completa i dialoghi usando *will* o *be going to* e i verbi del riquadro.

ring – be take – be see – see send – come wait – wait get – get – like

- 0 A The train is delayed by 50 minutes.
B OK, I'll ring Tania and tell her that we're going to be late.
- 1 A Have you got any plans for tonight?
B Yes, I the new James Bond film at the cinema.
A Me, too. I you there.
- 2 A How much longer this journey ?
B We there by about 6.30, I think.
- 3 A They're 30 minutes late already! How much longer you for them?
B Well, I another five minutes or so, and then I'm going.
- 4 A Where are you going?
B To the internet café. I a couple of emails.
A Oh, with you. I want to check last night's football results.
- 5 A What you Andy for his birthday?
B I him that new computer game he's always talking about.
A He that!

5 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa alcune espressioni del riquadro oppure altre a tua scelta.

watch TV go shopping go for a burger live in another country learn a musical instrument
send some emails go to the beach play tennis go for a coffee get married stay at home
go out become a millionaire do some schoolwork

- 0 I think I'll later.
- 1 I think I'll tonight.
- 2 I'm going to later today.
- 3 I think I'll at the weekend.
- 4 One day, I'm going to
- 5 I don't think I'll ever



1 Present continuous e *be going to* Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- Ana Hi Bianca. ⁹*Are you doing* / Are you going to do anything tonight?
 Bianca Yes. ¹*I'm going to see* / I'm seeing a film with Hans and Cindy.
 Ana ²*What are you going to see* / What are you seeing?
 Bianca We're not sure. ³*We're going to decide* / We're deciding when we get to the cinema. ⁴*We're going to meet* / We're meeting outside the ABC cinema at 7.00 if you want to come with us.
 Alicia You need a haircut!
 Beppe Yes I know. ⁵*I'm making* / I'm going to make an appointment later today.
 Alex ⁶*Are you going to answer* / Are you answering the phone?
 Ben Sorry, I didn't realize it was ringing.
 Amy ⁷*Are you doing* / Are you going to do anything this weekend?
 Barry Yes. ⁸*We're going* / We're going to go to Paris. ⁹*We're going to fly* / We're flying on Friday morning and ¹⁰*going to come back* / coming back on Sunday afternoon.
 Amy That's nice? Have you booked a hotel?
 Barry Well, we haven't booked a hotel. ¹¹*We're looking* / We're going to look for one when we get there.

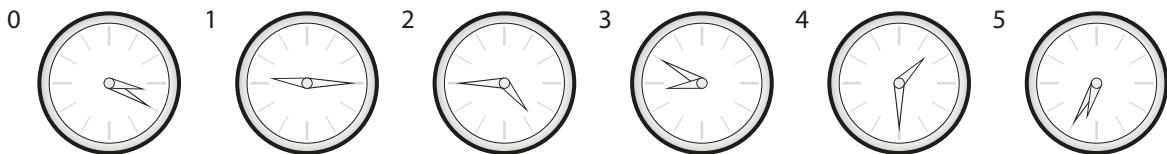
2 Varie forme del futuro Completa i dialoghi con la forma corretta del verbo tra parentesi: present simple, present continuous, *will* o *be going to*.

- 0 A Red or white wine?
 B I don't mind. I'll have (have) whatever you prefer.
 1 A Have you emailed Simona yet?
 B No, I haven't. I (do) it in a minute.
 2 A Do you want to go out tonight?
 B Sorry, I can't. My aunt and uncle (come) round for dinner.
 3 A Where you (go)?
 B To the shops. I (get) some milk.
 A I think we also need some coffee.
 B OK, I (get) some coffee as well.
 A Be quick. The shop (close) in about ten minutes.
 4 A Can you lend me €20?
 B Sure, here you are.
 A Thanks, I (pay) you back tomorrow.
 5 A Why are you putting those old clothes on?
 B I (change) the oil in my scooter.
 A I (help) you, if you like.
 6 A It's Bella's birthday on Friday. We've organized a surprise party for her.
 B Don't worry – I (not tell) her. But I think she (go out) with her family on Friday evening.
 A That's OK. The party (be) on Saturday, at my house.
 7 A you (do) anything on Friday evening?
 B Yes. I (see) a band with Carla. They're called The Change. Do you want to come? I think you (like) them.
 A Great. I (put) it in my diary.

- 8 A you (watch) the football tonight?
 B Yes. Luca and I (go) to the Sports Bar to watch it. Do you want to join us? I think the game (start) at 7.30.
 A OK, I (see) you there. So, who (win), then?
 B I don't know. It (be) pretty close, I think.

3 Grammatica e lessico: dire l'ora Scrivi le ore in due modi. Scegli tra le espressioni del riquadro.

one thirty three twenty four forty-five six thirty-five eight fifty
 nine-fifteen twenty-five to seven twenty past three
 quarter to five ten to nine half past one quarter past nine



- 0 three twenty / twenty past three
 1
 2
 3
 4
 5

4 Grammatica e lessico: dire l'ora (present simple per il futuro) Guarda le figure, poi scrivi delle frasi usando i suggerimenti in corsivo. Scrivi le ore in due modi (ricorda di usare la preposizione *at*).

0

TRAIN TIMES

TO NEWHAVEN				
Depart	3:59	4:12	4:20	4:32
Arrive	4:34	4:46	4:55	5:07

2

7.00	News	7.00	Ch
7.45	Match of the Day: Liverpool v AC Milan	7.30	Pr
10.00	Natural World	9.00	Y
10.30	Comedy hour	10.00	F
		11.30	Th

1

BUS TIMETABLE

> Oxford

Depart	4:35	5:10	5:55
Arrive	5:00	5:35	6:30

3

NOW SHOWING

MOVIE	RATING	TIMES
A Christmas Carol	15	7.00 8.30 10.00

- 0 The train leaves at four-twenty / at twenty past four. the train / leave
 1 the bus / leave
 2 Match of the Day / start
 3 the film / start

A Future continuous: uso

Il future continuous si usa per parlare di eventi che saranno in corso in un periodo del futuro.

This time tomorrow, I'll be lying on the beach.

We'll be having dinner at seven-thirty.

B Future continuous: forma

Si usa *will be + -ing*.

Affermativa	We'll be driving to the airport at 3.30.
Negativa	We won't be using DVDs in ten years' time.
Domande	Will you be using your car this afternoon?



L'azione espressa dal future perfect viene vista a partire da un determinato momento del futuro e può corrispondere in italiano al futuro semplice o al futuro anteriore – a seconda del contesto in cui essa avviene.

C Future perfect: uso

Il future perfect si usa per guardare un evento da un punto del futuro. L'evento può essere completato o ancora in corso.

I'll have gone to bed when you get back.

Sarò andato a dormire quando rientrai.

They'll have been married for forty years next month.

Il mese prossimo saranno quaranta anni che sono sposati.

D Future perfect: forma

Si usa *will have + past participle*.

Affermativa	We'll have been here for ten years in May.
Negativa	He won't have left by 6.30.
Domande	Will you have finished the report by Friday?



Nota che nelle frasi con *by / by the time* in inglese si usa il presente, mentre in italiano si usa il futuro.

E By

Il future continuous e il future perfect si possono usare con *by* (per/entro) e *by the time* (per/entro, nel momento in cui).

By the end of the 21st century, humans will be living on the moon.

Entro la fine del XXI secolo, gli esseri umani vivranno sulla luna.

I'll have got married by the time I'm 30.

Prima di avere trent'anni, sarò sposato.

► Vedi unità 128 per altri usi di *by*.

F Future perfect continuous

Per porre l'enfasi sull'attività si può usare la forma progressiva del future perfect, tuttavia tale uso non è comune. In questo caso, la forma è *will have been + -ing*.

Next week, I'll have been working here for two years.

- 1** Francesco e Rosa faranno una gita di un giorno a Oxford. Completa le frasi sui loro impegni in determinate ore del giorno usando le espressioni del riquadro.

OXFORD Day-Trips

Itinerary

8.30 – 10.00 bus to Oxford
10.00 – 12.00 tour of the city
12.00 – 1.00 lunch
1.00 – 2.00 visit Christ Church College
2.00 – 4.00 free time
4.00 – 5.30 bus to London

travel back to London travel to Oxford have lunch
have a tour of the city visit Christ Church College

- 0 At 9.00,
1 At 11.00,
2 At 12.30,
3 At 1.30,
4 At 5.00,

- 2** Completa le frasi spiegando che cosa avranno fatto Francesco e Rosa in certe ore del giorno durante la loro visita a Oxford. Usa le espressioni del riquadro.

arrive back in London arrive in Oxford finish the tour of the city have lunch

- 0 At 10.30, 2 At 1.10,
1 At 12.10, 3 At 6.00,

- 3** Ecco alcune previsioni per i prossimi 100 anni. Completa le frasi usando il future continuous o il future perfect dei verbi tra parentesi.

- 0 By 2020, everyone (drive) electric cars.
1 By 2020, we (have) holidays on the moon.
2 Fifty years from now, average human life-expectancy (increase) to about 100.
3 By 2050, a man (give) birth. And by the end of the century, we routinely (grow) babies in laboratories.
4 By 2050, humans (land) on Mars, and by the end of the century we (start) colonizing the planet.
5 By the end of the century, food (become) a thing of the past and we (live) entirely on pills.
6 By the year 2100, we (make) contact with aliens and we (communicate) with them on a regular basis.

- 4** Che cosa farai nei periodi di tempo indicati? Che cosa avrai fatto entro i periodi di tempo indicati? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te.

- 0 I'll be watching TV at 7.30.
1 in half an hour.
2 at 7.30 tomorrow morning.
3 this time tomorrow.
4 on Sunday afternoon.
- 0 I'll have finished my school project by the end of the day.
5 by the end of the week.
6 by this time next year.
7 by the time I'm 30.
8 by the time I'm 60.

I'll phone you when I get there. Will you say good-bye before you go?

Quando ci si riferisce al futuro, di norma si usa un tempo presente dopo *when*, *before*, *as soon as* ecc.

I'll phone you when I arrive. Ti telefonerò quando arrivo.

I'll talk to you again before I leave. Ti parlerò di nuovo prima di partire.

i Si può anche usare il present continuous, specialmente con *while*.

I'll read my magazine while I'm waiting. Leggerò la rivista mentre aspetto.

ii È anche possibile usare il present perfect se si vuole mettere in evidenza che un'azione (quella al present perfect) si concluderà prima di un'altra.

You can have the book when I've read it.

Shall we go for a walk when it's stopped raining?

iii In questo tipo di frasi, la posizione della frase principale e quella della subordinata è intercambiabile. Tuttavia, se la frase iniziale è introdotta da una congiunzione di tempo, si pone una virgola fra le due frasi.

When I know, I'll tell you. I'll tell you when I know.

iv Le congiunzioni di tempo usate in tale modo sono: *when* (quando), *while* (mentre), *as soon as* (non appena), *after* (dopo), *before* (prima), *until* (fino a), *the moment* (nel momento in cui), *the minute* (nell'istante in cui), *the second* (proprio nell'istante in cui), *by the time* (al momento in cui, entro), *the next time* (la prossima volta).

► Vedi unità 161 e 163 per altri usi di *before*, *after*, *when* e *while*.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 *I phone / 'll phone* you as soon as we *get / will get* to the hotel.
- 1 *I give / 'll give* you the money when I next *see / will see* you.
- 2 Before you *go / 'll go*, *I show / 'll show* you the photos.
- 3 *I email / 'll email* you when I *have / 'll have* a moment.
- 4 The second *I hear / 'll hear* anything, *I let / 'll let* you know.
- 5 Don't worry. We *don't eat / won't eat* until you *get / 'll get* here.
- 6 *I send / 'll send* a few emails while *I'm waiting / 'll be waiting* at the airport.

2 Completa le frasi con il tempo corretto dei verbi in corsivo.

- 0 *I'll call* you when I *get back* from my holiday. *call, get back*
- 1 I think I to bed when the film *go, finish*
- 2 As soon as we where to go, we you. *decide, text*
- 3 Before you , you me a hand? *go, give*
- 4 you Dan a message when you to him later? *give, speak*
- 5 I Peter about the party the next time I him. *ask, see*

3 Osserva l'ordine in cui avvengono queste azioni e completa le frasi coniugando i verbi al tempo verbale corretto.

0 we make a decision → I tell you
As soon as we make a decision, I'll tell you.

1 I give you my email address → I leave
..... before

2 I get to the hotel → I call you
..... as soon as

3 he gets back → I ask him to call you
..... the minute

4 I have a spare moment → I help you
When

5 the exams are over → I'm really happy
..... when

6 I see you → I show you my new mobile
..... the next time

4 Completa le frasi con i suggerimenti in corsivo e il tempo verbale corretto: present simple, present perfect o present continuous. Il significato delle congiunzioni temporali (*when, the moment ecc.*) ti aiuterà.

0 I'm going to watch TV when we've had dinner.
we / have dinner

1 I'll tell you the moment
I / hear any news

2 I'll give you the DVD back when
I / watch it

3 I'll get something to eat while
I / wait for the train

4 Can you give this to Bill the next time ?
you / see him

5 We need to leave before
it / be too late

6 I'm going to mend my scooter when
I / have the time

7 I'll think of you next week while !
I / lie on the beach

8 Can I look at your paper when ?
you / read it

5 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te.

0 I'll get a new computer when I've saved enough money.

1 I'll get a new mobile when

2 I'll get a job when

3 I'll be really pleased when

4 I'll stop learning English when

44**Was/were going to, was supposed to ecc.***I was going to call you. It was supposed to be a surprise.***A Uso**

Le seguenti strutture si possono usare per parlare di azioni che si aveva intenzione di compiere o di eventi che ci si aspettava avvenissero nel passato, ma che non sono effettivamente avvenuti.

i was/were going to

I was going to tell him, but I didn't see him. We were going to go for a walk, but it started raining.

ii was/were supposed to, was/were meant to, was/were due to

You were supposed to be here half an hour ago. He wasn't meant to know about the party. The train was due to leave at 6.30.

iii was/were to

The meeting was to start at 8.30, but it was delayed.

In genere si usa *was/were to* per parlare di eventi concordati in modo formale. Questa struttura si usa di frequente nei notiziari e in contesti simili.

B Would

Would si può usare per parlare di un evento del passato, che può essersi o non essersi effettivamente verificato.

I knew you'd pass - well done! I really thought he'd pass his driving test - I'm surprised he didn't.

Il verbo sul quale cade l'enfasi intonativa è l'indicatore che rivela se l'evento si è o non si è verificato.

I thought it would rain. = It did rain. I thought it would rain. = It didn't rain.

He said they would win. = They did win. He said they would win. = They didn't win.

1 Completa le frasi usando was/were going to e le espressioni del riquadro.

go to the concert go for a pizza make an omelette not rain record the programme

0 We were going to go for a pizza, but we went for some Indian food instead.

1 He, but there were no eggs.

2 I, but I forgot to set the DVD recorder.

3 They, but the tickets had sold out.

4 The weather forecast said it, but it's pouring down.

2 Rispondi usando was/were going to, but ... e le espressioni del riquadro.

I forgot. Sorry! I was too tired it started raining it was too expensive
she was too nervous we went for a burger instead

0 Did you go to the party? I was going to, but I was too tired.

1 Did they go for a walk?

2 Did you buy that book?

3 Did he cook dinner for you?

4 Did she ask him to dance?

5 Did you email me that photo?

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando le parole in corsivo.

- 0 We had planned to go to the beach, but it was a bit too cold. *going*
We were going to go to the beach, but it was a bit too cold.
- 1 They didn't arrive at 5.30 as planned. *supposed*
They but they didn't.
- 2 People said our new teacher was unfriendly, but he's really nice. *meant*
Our new teacher but he's really nice.
- 3 The plan was to start the meeting at 3.30 but it was delayed. *due*
The meeting but it was delayed.
- 4 I expected him to be late and he was. *would*
I thought and he was.
- 5 I hoped to talk to him, but I didn't get the chance. *going*
I but I didn't get the chance.

4 Descrivi le figure usando i verbi del riquadro.

mean / be easy due / arrive at 9.45 go/go swimming
not suppose / rain go / catch suppose / be in room 6



- 0 He was going to go swimming.
- 1 The flight
- 2 The exam

- 3 The meeting
- 4 They
- 5 It

5 Completa le notizie giornistiche usando *was/were to* e i verbi del riquadro.

meet play restart take place

0 Torrential rain put a stop to the game after twenty minutes. The game was to restart at 2.30, but at 2.25 the rain started again.

2 The band in Paris last night, but the mysterious disappearance of singer Kurt Richards meant the show had to be cancelled.

1 The two leaders in Washington, but the terrorist alert forced the location to be changed at the last minute.

3 The wedding at a secret location, but the paparazzi had been following the couple for weeks.

1 Present simple, present continuous, will e be going to Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone?Usa le parole del riquadro e il tempo verbale corretto: present simple, present continuous, *will* o *be going to*.

fall get it have a party help you play tennis start

0



3



1



4



2



5



0 I'll get it.

1 Help! I

2 The film

at 8.30.

3 I

at 4.30.

4 I

5 Valentina

on Friday.

- 2 **Will, future continuous e future perfect** Completa i testi con la forma verbale corretta dei verbi tra parentesi: will, future continuous o future perfect.

HOME LATEST NEWS  CONTACT

Future forecasts



Reality or fantasy?

Here are some predictions about scientific developments over the next 500 years.



Grow me a heart

Medical science predicts that in a few years we ⁰ will be (be) able to re-grow damaged body parts. At first, it ¹ (be) possible to re-grow only fingers and toes, but the treatments ² (advance) so that the regeneration of whole arms and legs and even organs such as the lungs or heart ³ (become) possible.



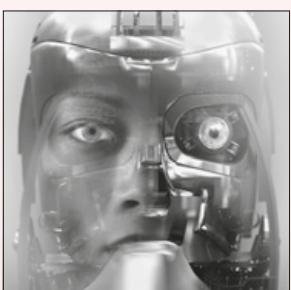
Life on Mars

By the end of the century, we ⁴ (start) colonizing Mars and humans ⁵ (travel) between the two planets on a daily basis. The colonization ⁶ (be) essential for the future of the human race in case of natural or man-made catastrophes on earth.



Talk to the animals

Scientists claim that by the end of the century, we ⁷ (communicate) with animals. Experts believe it ⁸ (be) possible to 'translate' animals' thoughts and emotions into human terms. It is predicted that there ⁹ (be) a huge rise in the number of people becoming vegetarian.

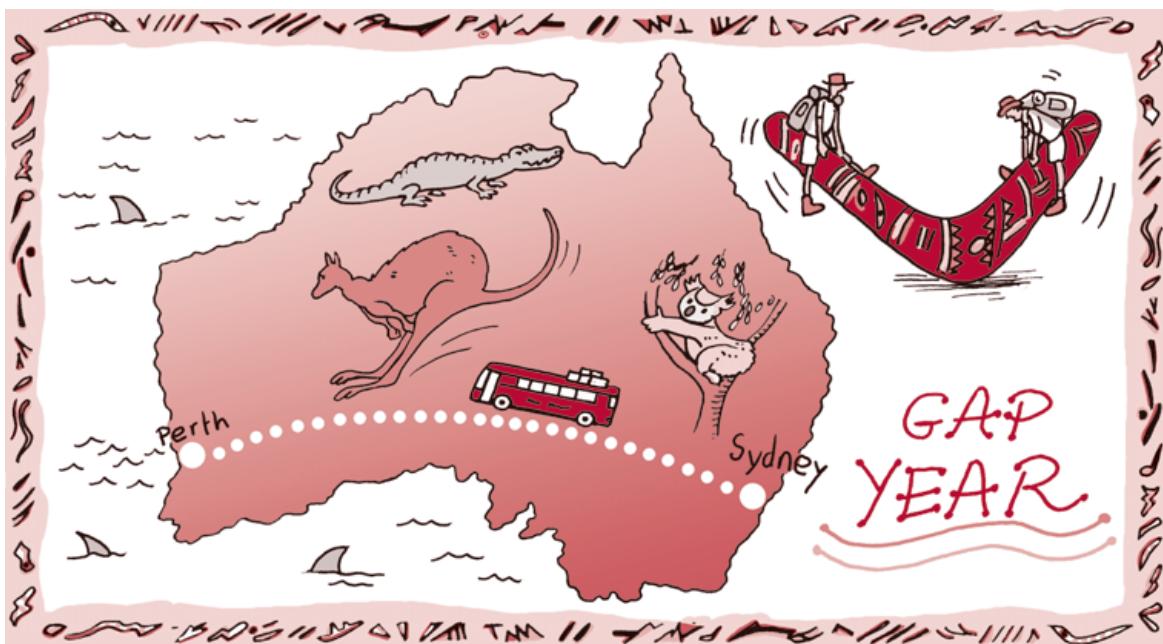


The end of humans?

Scientists believe that by the middle of the current millennium, society ¹⁰ (become) so complex and so dependent on information technology that computers ¹¹ (make) most of the decisions. Eventually, the decisions ¹² (become) so complex that humans ¹³ (not be able) to make them at all. At this stage, computers ¹⁴ (be) in control and they ¹⁵ (replace) humans as the most advanced 'organism' on earth.

3 Varie forme del futuro Andy sta raccontando a Bianca come trascorrerà il suo anno sabbatico (*gap-year*) prima di iniziare l'università. Completa il dialogo scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- Bianca Hi Andy. How are things?
- Andy Great, but I'm very busy at the moment planning my gap-year.
- Bianca Oh yes, I forgot you were taking a gap-year. ⁰ *What will you do / What are you going to do?*
- Andy Well, ¹ *I'm going / I go* to Australia.
- Bianca Lucky you! ² *When will you go / When are you going?*
- Andy At the end of October. ³ *I'll have gone / I'm going* for 6 months.
- Bianca Nice. And ⁴ *what are you going to do / what do you do* over there?
- Andy Well, first ⁵ *I'm going to spend / I'll have spent* a couple of weeks in Sydney. I've got a friend who lives there, so ⁶ *I stay / I'll be staying* with him and his family. And ⁷ *I'll probably go / I'm probably going* to the Blue Mountains for a few days while ⁸ *I'll be / I'm* there. They're not very far from Sydney. After that, ⁹ *I'll travel / I'm going to travel* by bus across the country to Perth. I think ¹⁰ *it'll take / it's taking* me about a month to get there.
- Bianca Sounds great. Have you already booked places to stay or ¹¹ *are you looking / are you going to look* for places as you go?
- Andy ¹² *I'm going to find / I'm finding* somewhere once I get to each place. I don't think ¹³ *I'll have / I'm having* any trouble – there are loads of cheap hotels. But even so, I think ¹⁴ *it's being / it's going to be* a bit of an adventure.
- Bianca Yeah, it sounds like ¹⁵ *you'll have / you're having* a great time. And ¹⁶ *what do you do / what are you going to do* in Perth?
- Andy Well, ¹⁷ *I'm going to spend / I spend* Christmas with my aunt and uncle, who live over there. And then ¹⁸ *I teach / I'm going to teach* English. My aunt has arranged a job for me in a local language school. ¹⁹ *It starts / It will start* in January. And when ²⁰ *I won't be working / I'm not working*, ²¹ *I'll enjoy / I'll be enjoying* the Australian summer.
- Bianca So I guess that while ²² *I'll be going / I'm going to* lectures each morning, ²³ *you'll lie / you'll be lying* on the beach enjoying the sun.
- Andy Well, if everything goes to plan, that's exactly what ²⁴ *I'll be doing / I'll do*.
- Bianca And when did you say ²⁵ *you'll come back / you're coming back*?
- Andy In May or June. I'm sure ²⁶ *I'll be having / I'll have had* enough sun, sea and sand by then!



4 Varie forme del futuro Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 I'm intending to buy a new mobile. *going*
I'm going to buy a new mobile.
- 1 I had intended to play tennis, but it's raining. *going*
I , but it's raining.
- 2 What do you suggest we do tomorrow? *shall*
~~What~~ tomorrow?
- 3 I'll get to the hotel and then I'll phone you. *when*
I'll phone you the hotel.
- 4 We'll be in the middle of dinner at 7.30. *having*
~~We~~ at 7.30.
- 5 Next Friday is our tenth wedding anniversary. *married*
~~Next Friday~~, for ten years.

T 5 Varie forme del futuro Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Andiamo a vedere il nuovo film di James Bond stasera.
~~We're going to see the new James Bond film tonight.~~

1 A che ora inizia il film?
.....2 Invierò un'email a Vincenza appena arrivo a casa.
.....3 Ti presterò il libro quando l'avrò letto.
.....4 Mio fratello si sposa la settimana prossima.
.....5 Domani a quest'ora starò facendo l'ultimo esame.
.....6 Domani pomeriggio avrò finito tutti gli esami.
.....**6 Grammatica e lessico: forme del futuro e cancel, postpone, delay** Abbina i verbi alla traduzione in italiano.

- | | |
|------------|---------------|
| 1 cancel | a rinviare |
| 2 postpone | b cancellare |
| 3 delay | c posticipare |

Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 The election was due to take place next month, but it has been *cancelled / postponed* until February.
- 4 The match was supposed to kick off at 3.00, but the start was *cancelled / delayed* for twenty minutes.
- 5 The meeting was going to be this Friday, but they *postponed / cancelled* it until next Tuesday.
- 6 The concert was *delayed / cancelled* due to lack of interest. Anyone with tickets can obtain a full refund.
- 7 Flight BA346 was due to arrive at 16.45, but it has been *cancelled / delayed* until 17.30.

Unità **46**

Revisione e potenziamento (unità 1–44) Tutti i tempi verbali

1 Completa i dialoghi con la forma corretta dei verbi tra parentesi.

Andrea ⁰ Have you ever been (go) to the UK?

Frida Yes. I ¹ (go) there last year, actually.

Vito Oh no! I ² (think) I ³ (lose) my wallet. ⁴ you (see) it anywhere?

Gabry Yes, I ⁵ (see) it next to the phone this morning. ⁶ you (look) there?

Toni ⁷ you (know) where Katrina is?

Paula Yes. She ⁸ (be) in the library. She ⁹ (do) her homework.

Guido ¹⁰ you (see) Katie recently?

Linda Yes. I ¹¹ (see) her this morning, actually, while I ¹² (walk) to school, but I ¹³ (not speak) to her then. In fact, I ¹⁴ (not speak) to her for weeks.

Ben ¹⁵ you (speak) to Valeria at the party last night?

Jenny No. She ¹⁶ (already leave) when we ¹⁷ (get) there.

Chloe ¹⁸ you (do) anything tonight?

Liliana Yes. I ¹⁹ (go) for a pizza with Svetlana. ²⁰ you (want) to come? We ²¹ (meet) outside school at 7.00.

Chloe Great. I ²² (see) you there.

Tom Oh no! I ²³ (leave) my money at home.

Marta Don't worry. I ²⁴ (lend) you some.

Tom Thanks. I ²⁵ (pay) you back tomorrow.

Julio How long ²⁶ you (live) here?

Emily We ²⁷ (move) here when I ²⁸ (be) about four, so I guess we ²⁹ (be) here for about ten years now.

2 Completa l'articolo con la forma corretta dei verbi tra parentesi.

FRANCE IS THE MOST VISITED TOURIST DESTINATION

■ France ⁰ continues (continue) to be the world's most visited country with around 80 million visitors a year. The country ¹ (be) at the top of the World Tourist Organization's annual survey ever since the survey began in 1950. Paris ² (be) the country's most visited city and the Eiffel Tower ³ (remain) the city's top attraction.

Spain, the United States and Italy ⁴ (be) the second, third and fourth most visited destinations, and all three ⁵ (become) more popular every year. However, the country that ⁶ (currently / see) the greatest increase in tourists ⁷ (be) China. The number of

visitors to the country ⁸ (increase) by almost 50% since the year 2000 and it is predicted that China ⁹ (become) the world's top tourist destination by the year 2020.

According to the WTO, about three-quarters of a billion people ¹⁰ (travel) abroad each year and international tourism ¹¹ (generate) over half a trillion dollars per year.

In a separate survey, travellers ¹² (vote) the Pantheon in Rome as the world's best free tourist attraction. Others in the list ¹³ (include) the National Gallery in London, Notre Dame in Paris and St Mark's Basilica in Venice.

3 Leggi l'articolo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.**Phelps wins historic eighth gold**

American swimmer Michael Phelps ⁰ ~~B~~ history today when he ¹ his eighth Olympic gold medal of the Beijing Games to beat Mark Spitz's 1972 record of seven gold medals. He ² new world records in seven of his eight finals.

Phelps ³ 17 times over nine days and, by his final race, he ⁴ gold in each of the previous seven events that he ⁵. Although the final race ⁶ a team relay, all eyes ⁷ on Phelps and his record-in-waiting.

Phelps's total Olympic medal haul now ⁸ at 16 – eight golds from Beijing plus six golds and two bronzes from the previous Olympics in Athens in 2004.

After his final race in Beijing, Phelps said: 'I ⁹ what to feel right now. So many emotions ¹⁰ through my head. I just ¹¹ to see my mom. The whole event ¹² a rollercoaster, but fun.'

Australian swimmer Grant Hackett said: 'You can't put into words what Michael Phelps ¹³ here in Beijing. His achievement ¹⁴ phenomenal and I don't think we ¹⁵ anything like it again.'

- | | | | |
|------------------|-------------------|-----------------------|---------------------|
| 0 A makes | B made | C was making | D had made |
| 1 A has won | B won | C was winning | D had won |
| 2 A sets | B is setting | C set | D was setting |
| 3 A swim | B swims | C swam | D was swimming |
| 4 A won | B was winning | C has won | D had won |
| 5 A enters | B was entering | C had entered | D had been entering |
| 6 A has been | B was being | C was | D were |
| 7 A have been | B were being | C was | D were |
| 8 A is standing | B has stood | C stand | D stands |
| 9 A doesn't know | B don't know | C hasn't known | D haven't known |
| 10 A go | B goes | C are going | D there was |
| 11 A want | B wants | C am wanting | D have wanted |
| 12 A were | B was being | C had been | D has been |
| 13 A does | B was doing | C has done | D had done |
| 14 A are | B is | C had been | D was being |
| 15 A ever see | B are ever seeing | C will ever be seeing | D will ever see |

4 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 I'm going to see my grandparents at the weekend.
- 1 last night.
- 2 At 7.30 this morning,
- 3 recently.
- 4 for ages.
- 5 tonight.
- 6 This time tomorrow,
- 7 One day,
- 8 at the moment.

A Uso

Il passivo si usa per esprimere un'azione che qualcosa o qualcuno subisce. La forma attiva invece si usa per esprimere un'azione che qualcuno o qualcosa compie.

Forma passiva

Oranges **are grown** in Spain.

My bag **was stolen**.

Arsenal **were beaten** by Juventus.

Forma attiva

They **grow** oranges in Spain.

Someone **stole** my bag.

Juventus **beat** Arsenal.

Nota che il soggetto di una frase passiva (*oranges, my bag* ecc.) è il complemento oggetto della frase attiva.

- i** Nella maggioranza dei casi si usa il passivo quando non si esprime chi o cosa compie l'azione. Ciò avviene di norma perché la persona o l'oggetto che compie l'azione è ovvio, sconosciuto, non importante oppure non si vuole specificare.

*Millions of emails **are sent** every day. My bike **was stolen**.*

- ii** Quando si vuole esprimere chi o cosa compie l'azione, il nome della persona o cosa è preceduto da *by*, che equivale all'italiano 'da' per introdurre il complemento d'agente o di causa efficiente.

*'Romeo and Juliet' was written **by** Shakespeare. The car is powered **by** solar energy.*

B Forma

Si usa la forma appropriata di *be* + participio passato.

Affermativa	Cricket is played in India. The rooms were cleaned yesterday.
Negativa	The Euro isn't used in the USA. David wasn't told about the meeting.
Domande	Are the rooms cleaned every day? When were these photos taken ?

La forma negativa completa *is not, were not* ecc. si può usare in situazioni formali e per accrescere l'enfasi.

*Credit cards **are not accepted**. I **was not told** about the changes.*

- Vedi pagina 416 per un elenco completo del past participle dei verbi irregolari.

C Passivo con get

A volte si può usare *get* invece di *be* al passivo. Si usa di norma *get* nell'inglese parlato informale, in particolare per eventi che non sono pianificati o sono inaspettati.

*I **got sacked** last week. Sono stato licenziato la scorsa settimana.*

*We **got stopped** by the police. Siamo stati fermati dalla polizia.*

- Vedi unità 48 per il passivo con altri tempi verbali.

1 Completa il testo con la forma passiva corretta dei verbi tra parentesi.

A brief history of the internet

The Internet as we know it today ⁰ was first developed (develop) in the late 1960s to enable the US military and the US government to access each other's computers. The first email program ¹ (create) a few years later, in 1972. But the World Wide Web ² (not set up) until 1993 – with just 100 websites. The Web grew at a phenomenal rate, and in 1994, Pizza Hut became the **first retailer** to offer online ordering. Online banking and other financial services ³ (introduce) in the same year. There are now over ten billion web pages and over a hundred thousand new ones ⁴ (add) each week. The Google search engine ⁵ (launch) in 1998 and today around a billion searches ⁶ (make) daily. P2P (peer-to-peer) music file sharing became widely available in 2003 and today over a million songs ⁷ (download) every hour. The internet ⁸ (use) regularly by over a billion people worldwide.

2 Usa i suggerimenti per scrivere delle domande alla forma passiva.

- 0 when / the first Harry Potter book / publish

.....
When was the first Harry Potter book published?

- 1 where / the 2010 World Cup / hold

- 2 when / the first text message / send

- 3 how often / the Olympics / hold

- 4 when and where / the bicycle / invent

- 5 in which country / 'Thanksgiving' / celebrate

- 6 who / *The Complete English Grammar* / publish by

3 Scrivi risposte complete per le domande dell'Esercizio 2 usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

In 1992 in 1997 in 1839 in Scotland every four years
by Oxford University Press in South Africa in the United States

- 0 It was published in 1997.

4

- 1

5

- 2

6

- 3

4 Completa le frasi alla forma passiva usando *get* e i verbi del riquadro.

beat not blow down break recycle stop

- 0 I'm afraid a window got broken at the party.

- 1 Luckily, the fence in the storm last night.

- 2 I was driving too fast and I by the police.

- 3 Not enough rubbish

- 4 We didn't win the game. In fact, we 5–1.

Al passivo si possono usare diversi tempi. Si usa il tempo adatto di *be* + participio passato.

A Present e past simple

Credit cards are accepted here. Our website is updated daily.

The Lord of the Rings was filmed in New Zealand.

We weren't told about the meeting.



Nota che in inglese si usa la forma progressiva al passivo per azioni in corso di svolgimento.

My scooter is being serviced at the moment. Non My scooter is serviced at the moment.

B Present e past continuous

My car is being serviced at the moment.

The houses are being renovated.

The room was being cleaned when I arrived.

C Present e past perfect

I've been invited to Sabina's party.

Has the computer been fixed?

The room had been tidied before we arrived.

The windows hadn't been cleaned for ages.

D Be going to e verbi modali

My scooter's going to be serviced next week.

The new sports centre will be opened by the mayor.

I will not be spoken to like that!

Can the island be reached by boat?

The report should be submitted by Friday at the latest.

i Nota che con *be going to* e i verbi modali si usa l'infinito al passivo: *be serviced*, *be opened* ecc.

ii Si può anche usare la forma dell'infinito passato: *have been serviced*, *have been opened* ecc.

The computers should have been fixed this morning, but there was a problem.

1 Riscrivi le frasi alla forma passiva.

0 Bill Gates and Paul Allen founded Microsoft in 1975.

..... in 1975.

1 About 95% of all computer users use Microsoft software.

..... computer users.

2 A phone company employee sent the world's first text message in 1992.

..... by a phone company employee in 1992.

3 Someone is repairing my computer at the moment.

..... at the moment.

4 People aged between 14 and 25 send most text messages.

..... aged between 14 and 25.

5 You can download a lot of music for free.
..... for free.

6 You can translate most web pages automatically.
..... automatically.

2 Che cosa sta accadendo nelle figure? Scrivi delle frasi usando i suggerimenti del riquadro e il present continuous passivo.

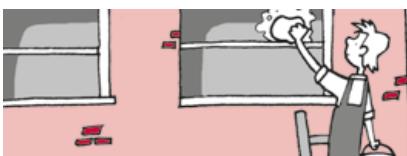
the children / tell off the room / paint my scooter / service the windows / clean



0 The room is being painted.



2



1



3

3 Guarda le figure e completa le frasi con la forma passiva corretta.

0 **CUP FINAL POSTPONED**

The Cup Final has been postponed.

0 **EIFFEL TOWER TO BE DEMOLISHED NEXT YEAR**

The Eiffel Tower is going to be demolished next year.

1 **Dali painting stolen**

A Dali painting

2 **20 killed in bus crash**

Twenty people

3 **USE BEFORE 15 MAY**

The eggs must

4 **Flight delayed. Still in London. Ann x**

Ann's flight She's still in London.

5 **International moonbase to be built by 2020**

An international moonbase

6 **OXFORD MUSEUM OPENED BY THE QUEEN 28 AUGUST 2008**

Oxford Museum

- 1 Passivo: present e past simple** Completa il testo usando la forma passiva del present simple o del past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

American English spelling

Most of the spelling differences between American and British English

⁰ were made (make) shortly after American Independence in 1776.

And the individual who ¹ (consider) most responsible for the ‘Americanization’ of English spelling was the lawyer, writer and fervent nationalist Noah Webster (1758–1843).

In the late 1700s, America was a new country and Webster wanted to promote an American sense of identity. Among other things, he believed that America should have its own standards of English which were different from the English of the recently-departed British colonists.

Spelling changes were the easiest aspect of the language to ‘Americanize’ and Webster and his team of like-minded writers and academics set about initiating the revolution.

Basically, ‘silent’ letters ² (remove) (colour → color, dialogue → dialog, etc.) and spelling ³ (make) more literal and phonetic (centre → center, grey → gray, etc.).

In 1783, Webster began publishing school textbooks and his new ‘American’ spellings

⁴ rapidly (accept). His textbooks ⁵ in fact (use) in schools for the next 100 years. In 1793, Webster published New York’s first daily newspaper and in 1828 he published *An American Dictionary of the English Language*, which ⁶ still (publish) today.

FCE

- 2 Passivo: vari tempi verbali** Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 Uruguay won the first football World Cup. *won*
The first football World Cup was won by Uruguay in 1930.
- 1 The Chinese invented sunglasses about a thousand years ago. *invented*
Sunglasses about a thousand years ago.
- 2 You can buy most things on the internet these days. *bought*
Most things the internet these days.
- 3 They have held the modern Olympics every four years since 1896. *held*
The modern Olympics years since 1896.
- 4 NASA is planning a manned flight to Mars. *planned*
A manned flight to Mars NASA.
- 5 People make more than 200 million internet searches each day. *made*
More than 200 million each day.

3 Passivo: vari tempi verbali Leggi i testi e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.**Performance halted by mobile**

When a mobile phone ⁰ C during a performance of The History Boys at New York's Broadhurst Theatre last night, lead actor Robert Griffiths ¹ the scene and shouted at the offending audience member, 'You ² to turn them off by the stage manager; he ³ you it was against the law. If we hear one more phone, the performance ⁴.' The law to which Griffiths referred is a ban on using mobiles in all theatres, museums, galleries and libraries in New York, which ⁵ in 2003. Violators of the law ⁶ \$50.

Mobiles go back to the future

They can play music, connect to the internet and take photographs and videos, but today's mobile phones are simply too complicated for many older people. In response, a new telephone ⁷ which has none of these added extras; you can make and receive calls and nothing more. The PhoneMe Simply, which ⁸ mainly for the over 55s, is twice the size of most of today's mobiles and has a large screen and large buttons. Features such as battery and signal strength ⁹ in words rather than by symbols, which ¹⁰ older users. In Japan, a similar phone which went on sale last year became the fastest selling mobile this century.

0 A rings

B is rung

1 A stops

B stopped

2 A told

B are told

3 A told

B is told

4 A cancels

B is cancelled

5 A passed

B is passed

6 A fine

B is fined

7 A introduced

B has been introduced

8 A designs

B were designed

9 A explains

B is explained

10 A can confuse

B can be confused

C rang

D was rung

C is stopped

D was stopped

C was told

D were told

C was told

D were told

C will cancel

D will be cancelled

C was passed

D were passed

C are fined

D were fined

C is introduced

D was introduced

C was designed

D designed

C explained

D are explained

C is confused

D are confused

T 4 Passivo: vari tempi verbali Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

0 Stanno riparando il mio computer in questo momento.

My computer's being fixed at the moment.

1 Il vetro è prodotto dalla sabbia.

2 La Coppa del Mondo del 2010 si è tenuta in Sud Africa.

3 Il mio cellulare è stato rubato.

4 Perché è stata cancellata la riunione?

5 I libri di Harry Potter sono stati scritti da JK Rowling.

5 Grammatica e lessico: *be born* *Be born* è un esempio di forma passiva. Completa le frasi indicando dove o quando sono nate queste persone.0 My brother was born in Rome in 2001.1 I2 My mum3 My dad

We were given lots of homework. It can be reached by boat.

A Verbi con doppio complemento

Alcuni verbi possono avere due complementi. Si possono avere due strutture sia nella forma attiva sia in quella passiva. Nota che alla forma passiva uno dei due complementi diventa soggetto.

Attiva	The judges awarded Jim the prize . The judges awarded the prize to Jim .
Passiva	Jim was awarded the prize. The prize was awarded to Jim.

Quando si usa la forma passiva, la struttura con la persona all'inizio della frase è normalmente la più usata (**Jim was awarded ...**), in particolare in contesti informali e nelle conversazioni. La seconda struttura (**The prize was awarded to ...**) di norma è usata in contesti più formali.

► Vedi unità 95 per altri usi dei verbi con doppio complemento.

B Soggetto impersonale

Quando ci si riferisce alle 'persone in generale' in inglese si preferisce di norma la forma attiva usando i pronomi personali soggetto come *you*, *we*, *they* o *people* in senso impersonale, senza usare la forma passiva. Tale uso avviene per lo più in situazioni informali, in particolare nelle conversazioni. Osserva i seguenti esempi.

You can buy tickets in advance. *Tickets can be bought in advance.*

They say broccoli is good for you. *Broccoli is said to be good for you.*

People don't use this road much. *This road isn't used much.*

1 Completa le frasi usando i suggerimenti dei riquadri.

Nelson Mandela an American charity Fabio Cannavaro Zinedine Zidane

a \$37 billion donation the Nobel Peace Prize FIFA footballer of the year the red card

- 0 Fabio Cannavaro was awarded FIFA footballer of the year in 2006.
FIFA footballer of the year was awarded to Fabio Cannavaro in 2006.
- 1 was awarded in 1993 for
his stand against apartheid.
..... was awarded to in 1993
for his stand against apartheid.
- 2 was given by
businessman Warren Buffet in 2005.
..... was given to by
businessman Warren Buffet in 2005.
- 3 was shown in the 2006
World Cup Final.
..... was shown to in the 2006
World Cup Final.

2 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando le parole date.

0 The teacher gave us lots of homework.

We were given lots of homework.

1 Oxford University has offered him a place to study English.

He at Oxford University.

2 They didn't give us enough time to finish the exam.

We

3 My mother is teaching me French.

I

4 Someone sent the email to the wrong person.

The email

5 They sent it to Alison by mistake.

It

3 Riferisci le informazioni come se fossero fornite in una conversazione informale.

Inizia con le parole date.

0 A bridge joining the UK and France is going to be built.

They are going to build a bridge joining the UK and France.

1 Life has been discovered on Mars.

They

2 Seats for the first passenger trips to the Moon can already be booked.

You

3 The Great Wall of China can't actually be seen from space.

You

4 Five portions of fruit and vegetables should be eaten each day.

We

5 The Leaning Tower of Pisa is going to be demolished next year.

They

4 Riscrivi i titoli di giornale in due modi: (a) usando la forma passiva così come accadrebbe in un giornale e (b) iniziando con *They* così come faresti per riportare la notizia oralmente a qualcuno.

0 **Stolen Picasso found**

a The stolen Picasso has been found.

b They've found the stolen Picasso.

1 **Gene for language learning discovered**

a A gene

b

2 **NEW NATIONAL SPORTS STADIUM TO BE BUILT NEXT YEAR**

a A new

b

3 **OSCARS CANCELLED DUE TO TERRORIST THREAT**

a The Oscars

b

A Uso

Si possono usare strutture passive di discorso indiretto per riferire le opinioni di dominio pubblico. Queste strutture sono di norma usate in contesti formali come i notiziari e in contesti scientifici ed accademici.

It has been reported that 20 people were injured in the explosion.

Si riporta che 20 persone sono state ferite nell'esplosione.

B Forma

i Le due principali strutture passive di discorso indiretto sono:

- *It + verbo passivo + that*
It is believed that the president will resign. ***It has been claimed that life has been found on Mars.***
- Soggetto + verbo passivo + infinito
Depp's latest film is said to be his best yet. ***The film is expected to break all box-office records.***

Nota che si possono anche usare altre forme dell'infinito.

Footballer David Moody is rumoured to be dating Hollywood star Keira Kingston.

Twenty prisoners are reported to have escaped from Bullingdon prison last night.

ii Tra i verbi usati più frequentemente nelle strutture di discorso indiretto si trovano: *accept, allege, assume, believe, claim, consider, expect, fear, hope, know, recommend, report, rumour, say, suggest, think, understand.*

- *Hope, recommend e suggest* sono di norma usati solo per la prima struttura: *It is hoped/recommended/suggested that.*
- *Supposed to* può avere un significato simile a quello di *said to, thought to o believed to.*
Supposed si usa solo con la struttura soggetto + verbo passivo + infinito.
Women are supposed to be better drivers than men.
Si suppone che le donne siano guidatrici migliori degli uomini.

1 Sottolinea la forma passiva impersonale in questi testi.

0

It is rumoured that Prince Henry and his pop star girlfriend Bryony James have separated. *It is thought that* the news was revealed after a close friend of the Prince accidentally sent a private email message to the wrong address.

2

At least fifty people are believed to have died in yesterday's fire at a shopping centre in Los Angeles. It is thought that the fire was started deliberately.

1

It has been reported that humans have already set foot on Mars. It is claimed that two astronauts spent ten hours on the planet as part of a secret US mission. NASA is believed to be planning a further mission to take place next year.

3

The football world is in crisis after it was reported that last year's World Cup final was fixed. It is claimed that the referee was paid €1 million to influence the game. Football's governing body, FIFA, is expected to release a statement later today.

2 Completa le notizie giornistiche usando la struttura passiva impersonale adatta e i verbi tra parentesi.

0

It is believed that (believe) the president is going to resign.
He is expected to announce (expect / announce) his immediate resignation at a press conference later today.

1

As the freezing temperatures continue, (recommend) homeowners keep their central heating on during the night.

2

A prisoner has escaped from Leeds high-security prison. Jim Jones, who is serving five years for robbery, (say / be) highly dangerous. (think) Jones escaped by jumping over the prison wall during an exercise period.

3

..... (hope) Formula One driver Larry Harris will compete in next week's Italian Grand Prix after his recent illness. The 28-year-old (say / be) desperate to get back behind the wheel after being out of action for over six weeks.

4

The damage caused by last week's hurricane (believe / be) much worse than expected. (now / fear) over fifty thousand homes were destroyed by the winds.

5

..... (understand) a new operating system will be released by a leading software company next year. The software company (expect / reveal) the name of the operating system on its website at midnight tonight.

3 Riscrivi questi brani di conversazione usando *be supposed*.

0 They say the new James Bond film is the best ever.

.....

1 They say Bill Gates is the richest man in the world.

2 They say the Japanese diet is good for you.

3 They say English is an easy language to learn.

I'm having my computer fixed. Where do you get your hair cut?

A Uso

L'espressione *have something done* si usa in due modi:

- i Per dire che qualcuno fa qualcosa per noi. In particolare, ci si riferisce a quando si fa in modo che qualcuno faccia qualcosa per noi, spesso in qualità di servizio. Si può anche usare *get something done* in contesti informali, soprattutto nel parlato.
We're having the house decorated at the moment. Stiamo facendo imbiancare la casa in questo momento.
I'm going to get a key cut. Faccio duplicare una chiave.
- ii Per dire che ci accade qualcosa di inatteso o spiacevole. In questo caso normalmente non si usa *get something done*.
I've had my passport stolen. Mi hanno rubato il passaporto.

B Forma

Si usa *have/get + complemento oggetto + participio passato*.

	have/get	something (complemento oggetto)	done (participio passato)	
I	'm having	my car	serviced	tomorrow.
Where do you	get	your hair	cut?	
We	had	the windows	cleaned	last week.
Tom	had	his bike	stolen	the other day.
You need to	get	your car	washed.	

1 Guarda le figure e scegli la frase corretta.



- 0 a The players are taking their photo.
b The players are having their photo taken. ✓



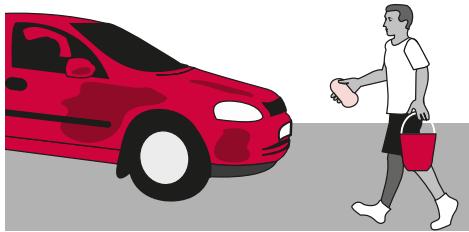
- 2 a She's painting her nails.
b She's having her nails painted.



- 1 a He's fixed his computer.
b He's had his computer fixed.



- 3 a She's searching her bags.
b She's having her bags searched.



- 4 a He's going to clean his car.
b He's going to get his car cleaned.



- 5 a He's stolen his scooter.
b He's had his scooter stolen.

2 Immagina di aver scritto questi appunti. Scrivi che cosa accadrà ciascun giorno della prossima settimana.

- 0 On Monday, I'm having my new computer delivered.
1 On Tuesday, I
2 On Wednesday, we
3 On Thursday, I
4 On Friday, I

Next week
Monday - new computer delivered
Tuesday - broadband installed
Wednesday - new TV delivered
Thursday - scooter serviced
Friday - hair cut

3 Scrivi dei consigli usando You need to get e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

scooter / check windows / clean hair / cut eyes / test



- 0 You need to get your windows cleaned !



- 2 !



- 1 !



- 3 !

1 Passivo e attivo: present e past simple Completa le frasi con la forma attiva o passiva del present simple o del past simple dei verbi tra parentesi.

Google – a brief history

- 0 Google began (begin) in January 1996 as a research project by Larry Page, a student at Stanford University, USA.
- 1 Page (soon / join) by Sergey Brin, a close friend and also a research student at Stanford.
- 2 The name 'Google' (originate) from a misspelling of 'googol', which is the name of the number 10^{100} (one followed by a hundred zeros).
- 3 The domain name Google.com (register) by Page and Brin on September 15th 1997 and Google (launch) on the World Wide Web shortly afterwards.
- 4 The word 'Google' quickly (find) its way into everyday language and the verb 'to Google' (add) to the Oxford English Dictionary in 2006.
- 5 On the Google search page, the logo (often / modify) to celebrate special occasions such as public holidays, anniversaries or major sporting events. These (know) as 'Google Doodles'.
- 6 Today, Google (process) around 200 million internet searches a day.

2 Passivo: vari tempi verbali Completa i testi con la forma passiva del tempo corretto dei verbi tra parentesi.

News in brief

A winning argument

A pizza restaurant ⁰ has been ordered (order) to pay Amy Moore of Brooklyn, New York, \$15,000 after she slipped on a soft drink and ¹ (knock) unconscious. The restaurant owner protested against the award as the beverage was on the floor because Ms Moore had thrown it at her boyfriend two minutes earlier during an argument. However, the judge ruled that the restaurant was at fault because the drink should ² (clean up) immediately. Ms Moore ³ (ban) from the restaurant for life for her 'unacceptable public behaviour'.



Plane lands upside down

A pilot has escaped injury after his light aircraft landed upside down. 56-year-old Ewan Jones crash-landed yesterday in a field in north Wales. It ⁴ (think) that the plane was experiencing fuel problems. Mr Jones ⁵ (help) from the aircraft by a local farmer and he ⁶ (then/take) to Wrexham Hospital with just a few cuts and bruises. A North Wales Fire Service spokesman said, 'The pilot ⁷ (force) to land due to fuel problems but he landed upside down. The pilot ⁸ (not hurt) in the incident. It's a miracle.'



Queen's head for sale

The original artwork of the Queen's head which appears on UK stamps

- 9 (rediscover) over 40 years after it
10 (first / produce). The 46 x 41cm design
11 (find) by chance in a cupboard in the artist's studio in
the family home. It ¹² (sell) next month in an auction and it
13 (expect) to reach at least £10,000. The image
14 (reproduce) on more than 320 billion stamps since 1968.



FCE 3

Passivo: vari tempi verbali Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

'La Gioconda'

'La Gioconda' is probably the most famous painting of all time. It ⁰ C by Leonardo Da Vinci over 500 years ago and her image is the most copied in the history of art.

The woman in the picture ¹ Lisa Gherardini Giocondo, who ² in Florence in 1479. She ³ about 24 years old when Leonardo painted her. Her legendary and enigmatic features, especially her smile, ⁴ by the process of sfumato, a style of painting which ⁵ by the artist. Da Vinci ⁶ four years to complete the painting.

At the beginning of the 1500s, the painting ⁷ by King Francis I of France and ⁸ from Italy to Paris. In 1650, the painting ⁹ to the Louvre, which was then a royal palace. In 1911, it ¹⁰ by a Louvre employee, who ¹¹ out of the museum with it under his coat.

'La Gioconda' ¹² at around \$1 billion. However, it ¹³. Today, the painting ¹⁴ about six million visitors a year.

- | | | | |
|----------------------------|----------------------------|--|---------------------------|
| 0 A painted | B has painted | C <input checked="" type="radio"/> was painted | D has been painted |
| 1 A believed to be | B is believed | C believes to be | D is believed to be |
| 2 A born | B is born | C was born | D were born |
| 3 A thought she was | B thought to be | C is thought to be | D is thought to have been |
| 4 A created | B are created | C were created | D was created |
| 5 A invented | B is invented | C was inventing | D was invented |
| 6 A is taken | B was taking | C took | D was taken |
| 7 A bought | B has bought | C has been bought | D was bought |
| 8 A took | B has taken | C was taken | D has been taken |
| 9 A moved | B was moved | C has moved | D has been moved |
| 10 A stole | B was stealing | C was stolen | D was being stolen |
| 11 A walked | B was walking | C was walked | D has walked |
| 12 A believes to be valued | B is believed to be valued | C is believed valued | D believed to be valued |
| 13 A will never sell | B is never sold | C will never be sold | D will be never sold |
| 14 A is attracting | B attracts | C is attracted | D is being attracted |

4 Passivo: vari tempi verbali Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 JRR Tolkien wrote *The Lord of The Rings* in the 1950s. *by*
The Lord of the Rings was written by JRR Tolkien in the 1950s.
- 1 Peter Jackson directed *The Lord of The Rings* films. *by*
The Lord of The Rings films Peter Jackson.
- 2 You must not use your mobile in the museum. *used*
Mobile phones in the museum.
- 3 Someone has stolen Antonella's bike. *has*
Antonella's bike stolen.
- 4 It is expected that the film will win the Oscar for best picture. *to*
The film the Oscar for best picture.
- 5 When did Rome hold the Olympics? *held*
When in Rome?
- 6 Tickets can be booked online or by phone. *book*
You or by phone.

T

5 Passivo: vari tempi verbali Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Stanno imbiancando la nostra casa in questo momento.
Our house is being decorated at the moment.

- 1 Mi farò tagliare i capelli alle 3.30.
.....
- 2 La Ferrari SpA è stata fondata nel 1929.
.....
- 3 Hanno rubato la bicicletta a Paolo.
.....
- 4 I giochi olimpici del 2008 si sono tenuti a Beijing.
.....
- 5 Quando è stato introdotto l'Euro?
.....

6 Have/get something done Completa i dialoghi usando la forma corretta di *have/get something done* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

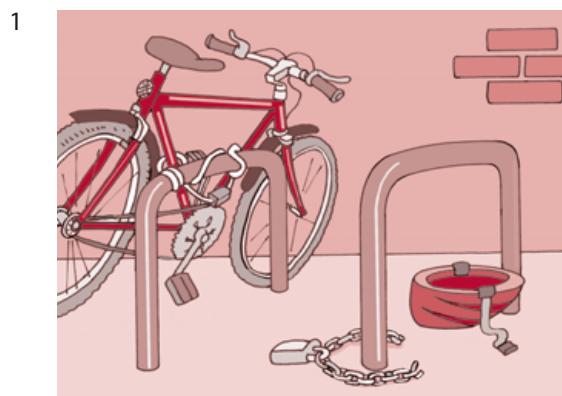
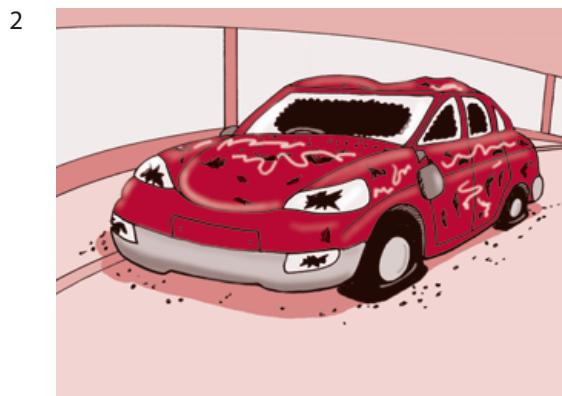
it / deliver it / service a new one / cut your hair / cut

- 0 A I've lost my house key.
B Don't worry. I'll get a new one cut this afternoon.
- 1 A Where ?
B At that hairdresser's on Green Street.
- 2 A I was at the supermarket for over an hour today!
B You should use the internet. We do our shopping online each week
and to the house.
- 3 A Can I borrow your scooter this afternoon?
B Sorry, but I at the garage today.
You can borrow my bike if you want.

7 Grammatica e lessico: crimini Abbina i verbi alla traduzione in italiano.

- | | |
|--------------|------------------|
| 1 break into | a danneggiare |
| 2 steal | b rompere |
| 3 break | c fare irruzione |
| 4 vandalize | d rubare |

8 Grammatica e lessico: have something done + crimini Guarda le figure e descrivi i crimini commessi usando i verbi dell'Esercizio 7 e le parole in corsivo.



0 We've had our windows broken. *our windows*

1 I *my bike*

2 I *my car*

3 We *our flat*

He can speak Italian. I couldn't find my keys. I was able to fix my bike.

A Can: uso

- i Si usa *can* (potere/saper fare) e *can't* (non potere/non saper fare) per parlare di abilità e capacità in generale. *Sara can swim.*
I can't play the guitar.
- ii Si può anche usare *can* (potere) and *can't* (non potere) per dire che qualcosa è possibile oppure che non è possibile.
You can book tickets online.
I can't go out tonight - I'm busy.
- iii Si può anche usare *can't* (non riuscire a) per indicare non riuscire, non avere successo nel fare qualcosa.
I can't find my keys.

B Can: forma

- i *Can* è un verbo modale, e come tutti i verbi modali non cambia forma ed è seguito dalla forma base del verbo.
He can swim Non *He cans swim.*
She can ski. Non *She can to ski.*
- ii La forma negativa è *can't*. (Si può anche usare *cannot* in contesti più formali.)
He can't swim. Non *He doesn't can swim.*
- iii Non si usa con *do/does* nelle domande.
Can he drive? Non *Does he can drive?*
- iv Le riposte brevi alle domande sono *Yes, she can.*; *No he can't.* ecc.

C Could

Di solito si usa *could* e *couldn't* per le forme del passato di *can* e *can't*.
I could swim when I was three.
We could see the sea from our hotel room.
I couldn't go out last night - I was busy.

D Could e was / were able to

Si usa *was/were able to*, non *could*, per parlare di una situazione particolare del passato in cui il significato è 'riuscire a', 'farcela a'.
We didn't have a map, but we were able to find the house.

E Be able to

- i Si può a volte usare *be able to* come alternativa a *can* per parlare della possibilità nel futuro. *Be able to* è di norma usato in contesti più formali o per essere più indiretti o più cortesi.
I won't be able to go to the party I'm afraid.
I can't go to the party I'm afraid.
Will you be able to give me a lift to the station later?
Can you give me a lift to the station later?
- ii Si usa *be able to* con un tempo perfect.
I've been able to ski since I was six.

 Nota che in italiano si usa spesso il presente indicativo per esprimere la capacità di fare qualcosa. *Can you play tennis? Giochi a tennis?*

 Occorre inoltre fare attenzione a non confondere l'uso di *can* per le abilità (saper fare) con *know* (sapere). *Can you swim?* *Sai nuotare?*
Do you know the title of the latest Harry Potter book? *Sai il titolo dell'ultimo libro di Harry Potter?*

► Vedi anche unità 55 (*can* per esprimere permesso) unità 56 (*can* per richieste e offerte) e unità 14 (uso di *can* con verbi relativi ai sensi).

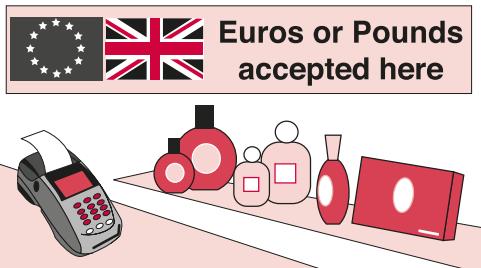
- 1** Scrivi delle frasi vere per te sulle tue abilità usando i verbi del riquadro. Usa *can* o *can't* nelle frasi 1–3 e *could* o *couldn't* nelle frasi 4–7.

cook play ride speak speak speak swim use

0	I can speak	English.	4 English when I was ten.
1	German.	5 a bike when I was six.
2	the piano.	6 a computer when I was five.
3	pasta.	7 when I was three.

- 2** Scrivi delle domande relative alle figure usando i suggerimenti del riquadro. Poi dai risposte brevi usando *can* o *can't*.

you / book online he / find his keys you / pay in euros
they / see the band she / rollerblade he / sing



0 Can you pay in euros? ~ Yes, you can.



3 ~



1 ~



4 ~



2 ~



5 ~

- 3** Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 My computer had a problem, but I could / was able to fix it in the end.
- 1 You've left the oven on! I thought I could / was able to smell gas.
- 2 The train was really busy, but eventually we could / were able to find two seats.
- 3 I couldn't / wasn't able to swim until I was about six.

55

Can, can't e be allowed to (permessi e proibizioni)

Can I park here? You can't smoke in here. You're not allowed to take photographs.

A Uso e forma

Si usa *can* (potere) e *can't* (non potere) per dire che qualcosa è o non è permessa.
Ciò può verificarsi in questi casi:

- i Secondo regole e leggi ufficiali ecc.
You can leave school when you are seventeen.
You can't smoke in public buildings.

Nota che spesso si usa *you* col significato di 'gente in generale'.

- ii Permesso accordato o richiesto.
You can leave when you've finished.
Can I go out tonight, Mum?

B Passato

Il passato di *can* e *can't* per dire che cosa era o non era permesso è *could* e *couldn't*.
In the UK, women couldn't vote until 1925. Before then only men over 21 could vote.

Si usa *be able to* per il present perfect.
Women have been able to vote since 1925.

C Be allowed to

Si può usare la forma passiva *be allowed to* per porre l'enfasi sul fatto che si sta parlando di una regola.

Are you allowed to wear jeans to school?

Avete il permesso di indossare jeans a scuola?

I wasn't allowed to play computer games when I was younger.

Non avevo il permesso di giocare con i videogiochi quando ero più piccolo.

1 Spiega il significato dei cartelli usando *You can* o *You can't*.



0 *You can't* walk on the grass.



3 turn right.



1 take photos.



4 pay in euros.



2 park here.



5 use your mobile.

2 Completa i dialoghi relativi alle leggi inglesi e americane usando *can('t)* o *could(n't)*.

Alex What are the laws concerning alcohol in the UK?
Ben Well, in general you ⁰ *can't* buy or drink alcohol if you're under 18. But I think you ¹ drink wine or beer in a restaurant with a meal when you're 16, but only if you are with an adult.
And in the USA?
Alex Well, you ² drink alcohol in the USA until you're 21.
Ben ³ you? I didn't know that.
Alex ⁴ you smoke in public buildings in the UK?
Ben No, you ⁵ But you ⁶ until 2007. How about in the USA?
Alex It depends on the state, but I think it's banned in most places.
Ben And is there a minimum age you ⁷ buy cigarettes in the USA?
Alex Again, it depends on the state. In most states it's 18, but it's 19 in some. And how about in the UK?
Ben In the UK, you ⁸ buy cigarettes if you're under 18. I think you ⁹ buy them at 16 a few years ago though.
Alex At what age ¹⁰ you vote in the UK?
Ben You ¹¹ vote when you're 18. That's the same as the USA, isn't it?
Alex Yeah, it is.
Ben And when were women allowed to vote in the USA?
Alex I think it was 1920.
Ben Yeah, I think it was about the same time in the UK, but for the first ten years only women over 30 ¹² vote. You know, there are still a few countries where women ¹³ vote.

3 A partire da quale età è consentito compiere le seguenti azioni in Italia? Usa *You can ... when you're ...*.

- 0 vote *You can vote when you're 18.*
1 vote to elect a senator
2 buy alcohol
3 buy cigarettes
4 drive a car
5 ride a scooter
6 leave school

4 Usa i suggerimenti dati per formare delle domande.

At school

- 0 allow / use your mobile *Are you allowed to use your mobile?*
1 allow / wear jeans
2 can / wear jewellery
3 allow / go home early

At home

- 4 can / watch TV whenever you like
5 can / choose when to go to bed
6 people / allow / smoke

5 Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 4. Usa *Yes, you are.*; *No, I can't.* ecc.

- 0 *No, you aren't.*
1 4
2 5
3 6

A Richieste

- i Il modo più comune di fare una richiesta è con *can* o *could*. *Could* è in genere più cortese o più formale di *can*.
- Can you help me for a minute?** Puoi aiutarmi un attimo?
Could you open the window, please? Potresti aprire la finestra, per piacere?
Can I borrow your pen? Posso prendere in prestito la tua penna?
Could I open the window? Potrei aprire la finestra?
- ii Se si vuole essere più indiretti, gentili o formali si può usare *Do/Would you mind ...?*
- Do you mind waiting a few minutes?** Le dispiacerebbe aspettare alcuni minuti?
Do you mind if I open the window? Le dispiacerebbe se aprissi la finestra?
Would you mind giving this book to Jane? Le dispiacerebbe dare questo libro a Jane?
Would you mind if I opened the window? Le dispiacerebbe se aprissi la finestra?
- Nota l'uso del passato con *Would you mind if ...?*
- iii Per chiedere oggetti si usa *Can I have ...?* e *Could I have ...?*
- Can I have the TV remote?** Posso avere il telecomando della TV?
Could I have a receipt, please? Potrei avere la ricevuta, per favore?

In un negozio o in un bar si dice in genere ciò che si desidera + *please*.

Quando si ordina del cibo, si può anche usare *I'll have ...*

A café latte, please. Un latte macchiato, per favore.

I'll have the risotto. Prendo il risotto.

B Offerte

Si possono fare offerte in diversi modi. Alcuni dei modi più comuni sono:

- i *Do you want (me to) ...?* e *Would you like (me to) ...?*
Would you like ...? è di norma più cortese o formale di *Do you want ...?*
Do you want something to drink? Vuoi qualcosa da bere?
Would you like me to help you? Vorresti che ti aiutassi?

Nota che non si usa *that* dopo *Do you want ...?* e *Would you like ...?*

Would you like me to come with you? Non *Would you like that I come with you?*

- ii Si può anche usare *I can ..., I'll ..., Can I ...?* e *Shall I ...?*
Spesso si usa *I'll ...* e *I can ...* con *if you like*.
Can I help you? Posso aiutarti?
I'll make the coffee if you like. Farò il caffè se ti fa piacere.
- iii Si può anche usare *Let me ...*.
Let me help you. Lascia che ti aiuti.

1 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Usa *Can ...?* o *Could ...?* e le espressioni del riquadro.

check my emails close the window have the dictionary
have your name give me a hand pass me the sugar



0 Can I have your name?



3



1



4



2



5

2 Riscrivi le richieste in modo da renderle più indirette, cortesi e formali usando *Do you mind ...?* o *Would you mind ...?*

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 0 Can I sit here? | Do you mind if I sit here? |
| 1 Can I use your phone? | Do ? |
| 2 Can you help me? | Would ? |
| 3 Can I leave early today? | Do ? |
| 4 Can you pick me up at my house? | Would ? |
| 5 Can I open the window? | Would ? |

3 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni?

- | | |
|---|--|
| 0 Offer your friend a drink.
Would you like a drink? | 5 Offer to put a CD on.
Shall ? |
| 1 Offer your friend something to eat.
Do ? | 6 Offer your friend some chocolate.
Would ? |
| 2 Offer to make the coffee.
Would ? | 7 Offer to help your friend.
Let |
| 3 Offer to cook dinner
I if you like. | 8 Offer to help your friend.
Do ? |
| 4 Offer to give your friend a lift.
Can ? | 9 Offer to do the washing-up.
I'll |

You **must** be on time. You **mustn't** be late. You **don't have to** go.

A Must e mustn't

Si usa *must* (dovere) per dire che qualcuno è obbligato a fare qualcosa.

You must arrive on time. Devi arrivare in orario.

We must win this game. Dobbiamo vincere questa partita.

La forma negativa *mustn't* (non dovere) si usa per dire che qualcuno è obbligato a non fare qualcosa. La forma non contratta *must not* si può usare in contesti piuttosto formali e per enfasi.

You mustn't be late. Non devi essere in ritardo.

You must not feed the animals. Non devi dare cibo agli animali.

► Vedi le unità 59 e 62 per altri usi di *must*.

B Have to

Have to ha un significato molto simile a quello di *must* e spesso i due verbi sono intercambiabili.

I must fix my computer. o I have to fix my computer.

Devo aggiustare il mio computer.

Tuttavia, per dare enfasi al fatto che l'obbligo è 'esterno', cioè è imposto da qualcun altro o da qualche forza esterna, di norma si usa *have to*.

I have to give a presentation at school tomorrow.

Devo fare una presentazione a scuola domani.

I don't want to leave, but I have to. Non voglio andarmene, ma devo.

Nota che *have got to* costituisce un'alternativa a *have to* e viene comunemente usato nei contesti informali, prevalentemente nella lingua parlata.

I've got to go now. Adesso devo andare.

C Don't have to

Si usa *don't have to* (non dovere, non essere obbligato a) per dire che qualcuno non è obbligato a fare qualcosa.

We don't have to wear a uniform at school.

Non dobbiamo indossare una divisa a scuola.

D Forma

Must è un verbo modale, e come tutti i verbi modali non cambia forma è seguito dalla forma base del verbo.

He must leave. Non He musts leave. He must leave Non He must to leave.

E Passato

Si usa *had to* come passato sia di *must* sia di *have to*.

I had to go to Rome last week. Ho dovuto andare a Roma la scorsa settimana.

Did you have to reinstall the program? Hai dovuto reinstallare il programma?

Didn't have to è il passato di *don't have to*.

We didn't have to go to school yesterday.

Non abbiamo dovuto andare a scuola ieri.



Mustn't esprime una proibizione ed equivale in italiano a 'non devi', mentre *don't have to* equivale a 'non è necessario'.

You don't have to use a pencil. You can use a pen if you prefer.

Non è necessario che tu usi una matita.

Puoi usare una penna se preferisci.

You mustn't use a pencil. You have to write in ink.

Non devi usare una matita. Devi scrivere con l'inchiostro.

- 1 Riferisci le informazioni contenute nella pagina web usando *must* o *mustn't*.

UK MOTORING REGULATIONS



When driving a car in the UK, remember:

→ It is the law ...

- 0 to have a valid driving licence
- 1 to have valid insurance
- 2 to be at least 17 years of age
- 3 for all passengers to wear a seatbelt

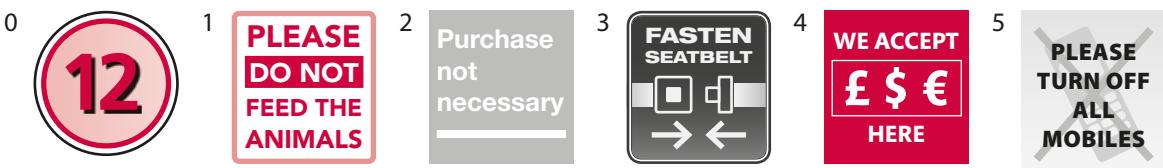
→ It is against the law ...

- 4 to drive under the influence of alcohol or drugs
- 5 to use a mobile phone while driving
- 6 for under 12s to sit in the front

For more information, click [here](#)

- 0 You must have a valid driving licence.
- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6

- 2 Riscrivi le informazioni contenute negli avvisi e cartelli usando *You have to*, *You mustn't* o *You don't have to*.



- 0 You have to be at least 12 years old.
- 1 feed the animals.
- 2 buy anything.
- 3 fasten your seatbelt.
- 4 pay in pounds.
- 5 turn off your mobile.

- 3 Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa che risulta essere più naturale al contesto.

- 0 A Must you / Do you have to go to school on Saturdays?
B Yes, we do.
- 1 A Must you / Do you have to wear a school uniform?
B No, we don't.
- 2 A I can't come out tonight. I must / 've got to visit my grandmother.
B Oh, that's a shame. Must you definitely / Have you definitely got to go?
- 3 A Late again!
B Sorry, but I must / had to go to the doctor's.
- 4 A Have you seen Lara recently?
B No, I haven't. We really must / have to get in touch with her, though.
- 5 A What time must we / do we have to be at school for the trip tomorrow?
B I think the coach is leaving at 6.30. You mustn't / don't have to be late, or they'll go without you.

58

Need, needed e don't need to (necessità)

I need a drink. I needed to make a phone call. You don't need to be there until 6.30.

A Uso

Si usa *need* (dovere, necessitare, avere/esser(ci) bisogno, occorrere) per dire ciò che è necessario o è richiesto. Si può usare:

- i *need + nome*

I need a drink. Ho bisogno di una bevanda.

- ii *need + infinito*

I need to finish my work. Devo finire il mio lavoro.

- iii *need + complemento oggetto + infinito*

I need you to help me. Ho bisogno che tu mi aiuti.

- iv *need + forma -ing del verbo*

Your room needs tidying. La tua camera deve essere messa in ordine.

B Forma

Need è un verbo regolare.

- i Si usa *I/you/we/they need* e *he/she/it needs*. Il passato è **needed**.

I need to leave. She needs to leave.

They needed to leave ten minutes ago.

- ii Il verbo ausiliare *do* si usa per le forme negative e le domande.

I'm OK. I don't need any help. We didn't need to leave until 5.30.

Does the car need washing? Did you need any money?

C Needn't e needn't have

- i Si può anche usare *needn't* come alternativa a *don't/doesn't need to*.
We needn't leave until 5.30. = We don't need to leave until 5.30.

- ii Si può anche usare l'espressione *needn't have + past participle* come alternativa a *didn't need to*.

You needn't have bought me a present. = You didn't need to buy me a present.

D There's no need

Si può usare l'espressione *There's no need to ...*

There's no need to hurry - we're not late.

Non c'è bisogno di affrettarci - non siamo in ritardo.

There's no need to get any milk - we've got some.

Non c'è bisogno di prendere del latte - ne abbiamo un po'.



Nota la differenza tra **needn't**, che equivale in italiano a 'non è necessario', e **don't have to** = 'non c'è obbligo di' fare qualcosa.

You needn't buy any milk. You bought some yesterday.

Non devi (= non è necessario) comprare del latte.

Ne hai comprato un po' ieri.

You don't have to wear a helmet when you ride a bike.

Non devi (= non c'è obbligo di) usare il casco quando vai in bicicletta.

1 Di che cosa hanno bisogno queste persone? Scrivi delle frasi usando le parole del riquadro.

a drink a shower a new mobile some help



0 He needs a drink.

2



1

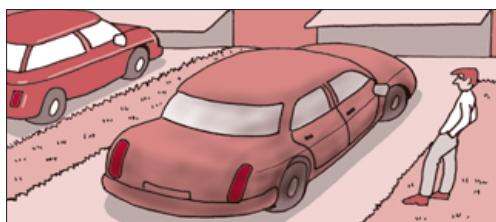
3

2 Completa le frasi usando la forma adatta di *need* e i verbi tra parentesi.

- 0 I'm tired. I think I need to go (go) to bed.
 1 Can I use your computer? I (check) my emails.
 2 If you haven't got an exam in the morning, you (not come) to school.
 But you (be) here in the afternoon.
 3 I fixed my computer. I (reinstall) the program.
 4 A What (you buy) in town?
 B Oh, I (get) a birthday present for Paula. She's 16 on Friday.
 5 A There's no (hurry.) We've got lots of time.
 B Yes, but we (make sure) we're not late – the traffic will be bad.

3 Scrivi una frase per ogni figura. Usa *need + -ing* e le parole dei riquadri.

the car the grass his hair her room cut cut tidy wash



0 The grass needs cutting.

2



1

3

59 Must, might, could e can't (certezza e deduzione)

He must be hungry. They might have missed the bus. You can't be serious!

A Must e can't

- i Si usa *must* (dovere) quando si è sicuri che qualcosa sia vero.

You haven't eaten all day. You must be hungry.

Non hai mangiato tutto il giorno. Devi avere fame.

You must be joking! Devi stare scherzando!

- ii L'opposto di *must* è *can't* (non potere). Si usa *can't* quando si è sicuri che qualcosa sia impossibile.

You've just eaten three burgers - you can't still be hungry.

Hai appena mangiato tre hamburger - non puoi avere ancora fame.

You can't be serious! Non puoi fare sul serio!

B Might, could e may

- i Si usano *might* o *could* (potrei, potresti ecc.) quando si pensa che qualcosa sia possibile. *Might* e *could* hanno lo stesso significato quando sono usati in questo modo. Si può usare anche *may*, di norma, in contesti più formali.

It might rain later. Potrebbe piovere più tardi.

This could be Jim's coat, but I'm not sure.

Potrebbe essere il cappotto di Jim, ma non ne sono sicuro.

There may be a slight delay. Ci potrebbe essere un leggero ritardo.

- ii Nota che non si usa mai *can* in questo modo. *It can rain later.*

La forma negativa è *might not* oppure *may not*.

It might not rain later. Potrebbe non piovere più tardi.

We may not get there in time. Potremmo non arrivare lì in tempo.

Nota che non si usa mai *couldn't* in questo modo. *#couldn't rain later.*

C Forma

Must, might, may, could e can't sono verbi modali, e come tutti i verbi modali non cambiano forma e sono seguiti dalla forma base del verbo.

He must leave. Non He musts leave.

It might rain later. Non #might to rain later.

D Forma del passato

La forma del passato è *must, might, may, could e can't + have + participio passato*.

Julie wasn't at the meeting. She must have forgotten about it.

Julie non era alla riunione. Deve averlo dimenticato.

Peter's not here yet. He might have got lost.

Peter non è ancora qui. Potrebbe essersi perso.

- 1** Guarda la stanza di Mario: che cosa puoi dedurre sui suoi gusti e preferenze? Completa le frasi usando *He must*, *He might* o *He can't*.



- 0 He must like football.
1 play the guitar.
2 play in a band.
- 3 have a scooter.
4 be English.
5 be interested in sport.

- 2** Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando *might (not)*, *must* o *can't*.

- 0 It's possible that it will rain later. *It might rain later.*
1 I'm sure there's a mistake.
2 It's possible we'll be late.
3 It's possible Sara won't go to the party.
4 I'm sure that's not his car.

- 3** Completa le frasi usando *must be* o *can't be* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

he / out that / right you / serious you / hungry you / joking

- 0 A Shall we go to the beach?
B *You can't be serious!* It's pouring with rain.
1 A I haven't eaten since breakfast.
B
2 A The bill is €30.
B ! We only had two coffees!
3 A He isn't answering the phone.
B Try his mobile.
4 A Have you ever done a bungee jump?
B A bungee jump? !

- 4** Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 This afternoon, I might
1 Tonight, I might
2 Tomorrow, I might not
3 At the weekend, I might
4 One day, I might

- 5** Riscrivi le frasi usando la forma del passato del verbo modali in corsivo.

- 0 It's possible they missed the bus. *could*
1 It's possible they have got lost. *might*
2 I'm sure they have gone out. *must*
3 Maybe they got lost. *could*
4 It's possible that Tom didn't get your email. *might not*

It's bound to rain. I'm sure you'll like it. It's possible we'll be late.

Si possono esprimere diversi gradi di certezza usando verbi modali come *must* e *might*.

I diversi gradi di certezza si possono anche esprimere in diversi modi:

- i *Think/expect/suppose/imagine/guess/doubt* (penso/mi aspetto/suppongo/immagino/credo/dubito)

I think he lives here. Credo che viva lì.

I expect we'll go by car. Mi aspetto che andremo tutti quanti in macchina.

I imagine you'll have a great time. Immagino che ti divertirai.

I doubt it will rain. Dubito che pioverà.

Nota che, quando si usa un'espressione negativa con *think*, si dice in genere *I don't think ...*.

*I don't think Sam is here. Non *I think* Sam isn't there.*

- ii *Perhaps/maybe* (può darsi/forse)

Perhaps he gave you the wrong number. Può darsi che ti abbia dato il numero sbagliato.

Maybe we'll go to Greece this year. Forse andremo in Grecia quest'anno.

- iii *Possibly/probably/definitely* (possibilmente/probabilmente/sicuramente)

Tom's possibly going to be late. Tom può essere in ritardo.

I'll probably go out tonight. Stasera probabilmente uscirò.

The game definitely starts at 3.00. La partita inizia sicuramente alle 3.00.

- iv *It's possible/probable/(un)likely (that) ...* (È possibile/probabile/(im)probabile (che) ...)

It's possible we'll be late. È possibile che saremo in ritardo.

It's unlikely that he'll win. È improbabile che vinca.

- v *Be bound/certain/sure to/(un)likely to ...* (essere destinato/certo/sicuro di/(im)probabile che...)

It's bound to rain later. Pioverà di sicuro più tardi.

They're sure to be late. Sono certi di arrivare in ritardo.

The cost is likely to be about €1000. Il costo è probabilmente di circa €1000.

- vi *Be certain/sure/positive (that) ...* (essere certo/sicuro/convinto (di, che))

He's certain that you'll like it. È sicuro che ti piacerà.

I'm sure it'll be a nice day. Sono certo che sarà una bella giornata.

Nota che si può usare *not* in due modi con diversi significati. Confronta le seguenti frasi.

I'm sure it won't snow. Sono sicuro che non nevicherà.

I'm not sure it will snow. Non sono sicuro che nevicherà.

► Vedi unità 59 per l'uso dei modali per esprimere diversi gradi di certezza.

1 Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

0 A Anna's not here – where is she?

B Oh, she's *bound*/possible to be late – she always is!

1 A My emails to Frank aren't being delivered.

B *Likely / Maybe* you're using the wrong address.

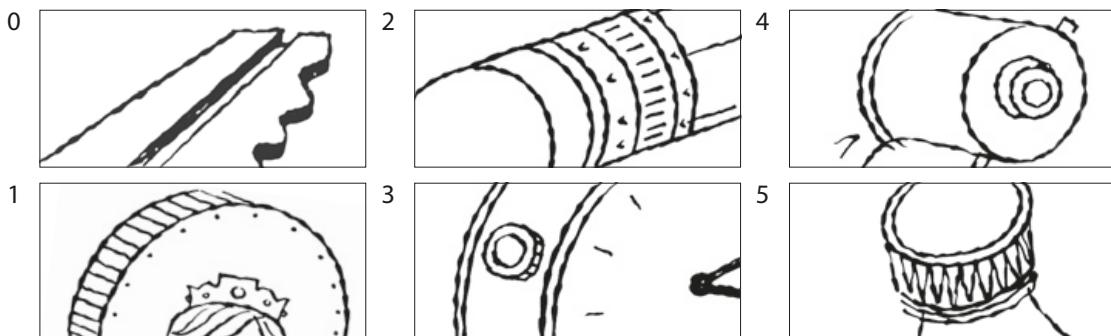
2 A Are you going away at the weekend?

B *I think we aren't / I don't think we are* – my parents are so busy at the moment.

- 3 A Are you going on holiday this year?
 B Yes. We're *likely* / *probably* going to the UK. And you?
 A No plans yet, but I'm *bound* / *sure* we'll go somewhere.
- 4 A I've got my driving test this afternoon. Wish me luck!
 B I'm *sure* / *likely* you'll be fine.
 A I *doubt* / *unlikely* it – I've only had one lesson!
- 5 A Is the concert *likely* / *probable* to be sold out?
 B No, I'm *not sure* it will / I'm *sure* it won't be. I *imagine* / *sure* you'll be able to get a ticket.

2 Che cosa sono questi oggetti? Scrivi delle frasi in cui fai delle ipotesi più o meno sicure usando *Perhaps* o *I'm sure*. Usa le parole del riquadro.

bottle coin fork key knife light bulb memory stick
 mobile pencil saw spoon toothpaste watch wheel



- 0 Perhaps it's a key.
 1 _____
 2 _____
- 3 _____
 4 _____
 5 _____

3 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa le parole dei riquadri.

possible likely unlikely

- 0 It's *likely* I'll go to university.
 1 It get married one day.
 2 It live in a different country.
 3 It be a multi-millionaire one day.
 4 It become famous.

possibly 'm sure doubt

- 0 I *doubt* I'll have pasta for dinner tonight.
 5 I watch TV tonight.
 6 I go out tonight.
 7 I go to bed before midnight.

bound likely unlikely

- 0 It's *unlikely* to rain tomorrow.
 8 Fiorentina win this year's Serie A.
 9 Italy qualify for the next World Cup.
 10 Italy have a woman president one day.

A Uso e forma

Si usa spesso *will* per riferirsi al futuro. Comunque, si usa *will* anche per parlare del presente.

i Per fare supposizioni o trarre conclusioni sul presente.

That'll be James at the door. Questo sarà James alla porta.

The car won't start. La macchina non vuole partire.

I imagine Helen's plane will have arrived by now.

Immagino che l'aereo di Helen sarà arrivato adesso.

Hurry up! Lavinia will be waiting for us. Sbrigati! Lavinia ci starà aspettando.

ii Per parlare di comportamenti prevedibili o tipici, come abitudini.

After school, I'll usually watch TV for an hour or so.

Dopo la scuola, vedo di solito la TV per un'ora o giù di lì.

Nota che questo specifico uso di *will* è analogo a quello del present simple quando si parla di azioni abituali; tuttavia la differenza è che *will* si usa quando si vuole porre l'enfasi su un'azione che è frutto di un comportamento tipico o prevedibile e non un 'fatto'.

B Would

Si usa *would* come forma al passato di *will*.

Sorry I'm late. The car wouldn't start.

Mi spiace di essere in ritardo. La macchina non voleva partire.

As a child, I'd spend hours playing computer games.

Da bambino, stavo delle ore a giocare con i videogiochi.

► Vedi unità 39 e 40 per *will* con significato futuro.

► Vedi unità 23 e 56 per *would* e *used to*.

► Vedi unità 102 e 103 per l'uso di *would* nei condizionali.

1 Riscrivi le seguenti affermazioni in modo che diventino supposizioni. Usa *will* o *won't*.

0 Sara has passed her driving test. She's really pleased.

Sara has passed her driving test. *She'll be really pleased.*

1 I'll get the phone. It's Jake.

I'll get the phone.

2 Come on! Sebastian is waiting for us.

Come on!

3 Patrick failed his exam. He isn't pleased.

Patrick failed his exam.

4 There's a problem with my computer. It's that new software.

There's a problem with my computer.

5 Samuel's at the door. He's forgotten his keys.

Samuel's at the door.

6 The dog's barking. There's someone at the door.

The dog's barking.

2 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Usa 'll o won't e le espressioni del riquadro.

not be cheap be Jenny be the postman be a birthday card



0 That'll be the postman.



2 They



1 It



3 This

3 Pensa a tre persone che conosci. Scrivi una frase su dove saranno o che cosa staranno facendo in questo momento. Scegli tra le persone del riquadro e scrivi delle frasi usando will.

mum dad brother sister boyfriend girlfriend

0 My mum will be doing some shopping at the moment.

1

2

3

4 Riscrivi le riposte dei dialoghi. Usa will o would per sottolineare che queste affermazioni esprimono un comportamento tipico o prevedibile.

0 A Do you go out much?

B I generally go out two or three times a week.

I'll generally go out

two or three times a week.

1 A Do you use your phone for texting much?

B I generally send about ten text messages a day.

..... about ten text messages a day.

2 A How often do you change your mobile?

B I usually get a new one about once a year.

..... about once a year.

3 A What do you do in the evenings?

B Most evenings, I watch a bit of TV.

Most evenings,

4 A Do you read comics?

B Not any more. But as child, I read them all the time.

Not any more.

all the time.

5 A Computers are so reliable these days.

B Yes. My first computer crashed all the time.

Yes.

all the time.

Should, ought to, must e had better

You **should** work hard. They **ought to** win easily. He'd **better** not be late.

A Should: uso

Should (dovrei, dovrassi) e *shouldn't* (non dovrei, non dovrassi) si usano in tre modi principali:

- i Per dire ciò che si pensa sia la cosa corretta da fare. Si usa spesso per dare consigli e suggerimenti.

You should stop smoking. Dovresti smettere di fumare.

You shouldn't eat so many sweets. Non dovresti mangiare così tanti dolci.

Should I phone her? Dovrei chiamarla?

- ii Per fare correzioni.

*You wrote '.com'. It **should** be '.co.uk'.*

Hai scritto '.com'. Dovrebbe essere '.co.uk'.

- iii Per dire ciò che ci si aspetta che avvenga.

*If the traffic's OK we **should** arrive at about 11.30.*

Se il traffico è scorrevole, dovremmo arrivare alle 11.30 circa.

B Should: forma

- i *Should* è un verbo modale, e come tutti i verbi modali non cambia forma ed è seguito dalla forma base.

*He **should drink** more water. Non **He shoulds drink** more water.*

*You should work hard. Non **You should to work** hard.*

- ii La forma del passato è *should have* + participio passato.

*We got lost. We **should have taken** a map.*

Ci siamo persi. Avremmo dovuto portare una cartina.

*You **shouldn't have told** him! Non avresti dovuto dirglielo!*

C Ought to

Si può spesso usare *ought to* con lo stesso significato di *should*.

*You **ought to** stop smoking. Dovresti smettere di fumare.*

*Italy **ought to** beat France. L'Italia dovrebbe battere la Francia.*

D Must

Si può usare *must* per dare consigli e suggerimenti.

*You **must** see the new James Bond film.*

Devi vedere l'ultimo film di James Bond.

*You really **must** visit Oxford.*

Devi davvero visitare Oxford.



Nota che **had better** corrisponde in italiano alle espressioni: 'dovrei' / 'farei bene/meglio a' nonché all'espressione impersonale: 'sarebbe bene/meglio a/che...' ecc.

You'd better buy a new car.

Sarebbe bene che ti comprassi una nuova macchina.

E Had better

Si usa *had better* per dire ciò che pensiamo sia la cosa corretta da fare. Il significato di *had better* è generalmente più forte di quello di *should*.

We'd better go now or we'll miss the bus.

Dovremmo andare ora o perderemo l'autobus.

You'd better not be late. Faresti bene a non arrivare

in ritardo. = Non dovresti arrivare in ritardo.

1 Dai consigli e suggerimenti usando le parole in corsivo e le espressioni del riquadro.

eat so much junk food get a more powerful one get a part-time job
go to the dentist go up the Eiffel Tower take an aspirin

- 0 I've got a headache. *ought to*
You ought to take an aspirin.

- 1 I've got toothache. *should*

- 2 I've got no money. *had better*

- 3 I never have any energy. *shouldn't*

- 4 My computer is too slow. *ought to*

- 5 We're going to Paris soon. *must*

2 Completa le frasi. Usa *should* o *should have* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

.org €6.80 1861 'at' arrive at 5.30
be hot tomorrow win worked harder

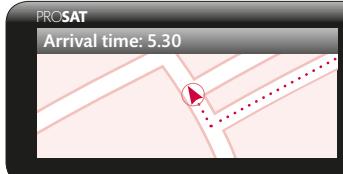
See you on 6.30,
Jim



- 0 It *should be 'at'* , not 'on'.

- 4 It

Italy was unified in 1881. Garibaldi
was



- 1 It , not 1881.

- 5 We



- 2 It , not €6.90.

EXAM RESULTS

FAIL



- 3 It , not .com.

- 6 I

19.00	News	19.00	Ch
19.30	The Big Match: Juventus v Chievo	19.30	P
20.30	FILM Alien Invasion	20.30	Y
22.00	Football highlights	22.00	H
23.45		23.30	Th

- 7 Juventus

Do you want to come? ~ I might as well. How did it get broken? ~ I couldn't help it.

Ci sono numerose espressioni che includono verbi modali.

Alcune delle espressioni più comuni comprendono:

I can't believe it! Non posso crederci!

You can't be serious! Non puoi fare sul serio!

I can't be bothered. Non mi interessa.

I couldn't help it. Non ho potuto farne a meno.

I couldn't tell you. Non potevo dirtelo.

I couldn't agree more. Non potrei essere maggiormente d'accordo.

I couldn't care less. Non potrebbe importarmi di meno.

You must be joking! Devi stare scherzando! = Stai scherzando!

You must be mad! Devi essere pazzo!

I might as well. Potrei anche.

You might have told me! Avresti potuto dirmelo!

(Nota che l'accento intonativo cade su *told*.)

I should have known. Avrei dovuto saperlo.

You shouldn't have! Non avresti dovuto!

How should I know? Come potrei saperlo?

(Nota che l'accento intonativo cade sul soggetto *I*.)

1 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Scegli tra le espressioni del riquadro.

I can't be bothered. I can't believe it! I couldn't help it.

You might have told me! You must be mad! You shouldn't have!



0 A present! You shouldn't have!



2 I'll just stay here.



1 No way!



3 98%!



4 It's not a fancy dress party? 5 Sorry,



2 Completa le battute di B con le parole in corsivo e un'espressione adatta.

- 0 A We're going for a coffee. Do you want to come with us? *might*
B *I might as well.* I've got nothing else to do.
- 0 A I've got a spare ticket for the gig tonight. Do you want it? *might*
B *You might have told me!* I've just bought one!
- 1 A We need to finish the report by Friday. *must*
B ! We'll never get it done by then.
- 2 A What a brilliant film! *couldn't*
B ! It was absolutely fantastic!
- 3 A Who's that over there? *couldn't*
B I've never seen him before.
- 4 A Italy lost 4–0. *can't*
B ! Against England!
- 5 A Did you break the glass? *couldn't*
B It just fell out of my hand, sorry.
- 6 A Paul's told everyone about you and Louisa! *should*
B He just can't keep a secret.
- 7 A Do you want a game of chess? *might*
B There's nothing on TV.
- 8 A There's some football on TV tonight. *couldn't*
B I hate football.
- 9 A Who broke the window? *should*
B ? I wasn't here at the time.

3 Reagisci alle seguenti affermazioni e domande usando le espressioni di pagina 150.

- 0 I'm going to do a parachute jump. *You must be mad!*
- 1 Italian food is the best in the world.
- 2 What's the fifth biggest city in the UK?
- 3 I'm going to swim across the Mediterranean Sea.
- 4 What happened? How did you spill your drink?

FCE 1 Forme del presente Leggi i testi e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

BRENT UNIVERSITY

Your interview

Your interview is at 2.30 on Monday 14th February.

You ⁰ contact us to confirm this, but if you ¹ attend at this time, please inform us as soon as possible so we ² arrange another time.

On the day, we will do all we ³ to make sure that the interview is on time, but sometimes you ⁴ have to wait.

If you fail to attend your interview, you ⁵ contact us within seven days or you ⁶ be offered another interview.

Where to go

When you arrive at the university you ⁷ report to the main reception.

What to bring

You ⁸ bring your exam certificates and your ID card or passport. These ⁹ be the original documents and not photocopies.

Coming to your university interview

If you plan to come by car, please allow plenty of time for parking as spaces ¹⁰ be difficult to find and you ¹¹ need to park some distance from the university main entrance. You ¹² park in the university car park as this is for permit-holders only and your vehicle ¹³ be clamped.

Alternatively, you ¹⁴ take the number 5 bus from the city centre. This bus stops at the university main entrance.

- | | | | |
|---------------------|------------------|------------------|------------------|
| 0 A must not | B cannot | C could not | D do not need to |
| 1 A cannot | B could not | C would not | D must not |
| 2 A could | B can | C should | D must |
| 3 A must | B would | C can | D could |
| 4 A may | B can | C should | D have to |
| 5 A can | B will | C must | D would |
| 6 A must not | B cannot | C should not | D may not |
| 7 A had better | B should | C could | D can |
| 8 A could | B need to | C can | D might |
| 9 A must | B can | C would | D might |
| 10 A cannot | B can | C must | D do not have to |
| 11 A have to | B should | C can | D may |
| 12 A do not have to | B do not need to | C must not | D might not |
| 13 A can | B is likely to | C is possible to | D is bound to |
| 14 A ought to | B are likely to | C can | D would |

2 Forme del passato Descrivi le figure usando le parole in corsivo e le espressioni dei riquadri.

have an accident have a late night revise more see the no-smoking sign



0 He must have had a late night.

must

1 _____

should

2 _____

must

3 _____

can't

wear a coat fall in the river leave the house earlier win the lottery



4 _____

might

5 _____

should

6 _____

must

7 _____

should

3 Varie forme Completa i dialoghi con la forma affermativa o negativa del verbo modale corretto. In alcuni casi sono possibili più soluzioni.

- 0 Tom can you play a musical instrument?
Louisa Yes, I can – the piano.
- 1 Rick How was the exam?
Will It was OK. But I answer question 3.
- 2 Elena you like some more coffee?
Matteo No, thanks. But I have a glass of water?
- 3 Julia you smoke in public buildings in Italy?
Sandro No, you But you until 2005.
- 4 David You tell Fiona about the party. It's a surprise.
Bella OK, I won't say anything to her.
- 5 Luke Sorry I'm late. I stop at the ATM on the way here.
Josh No problem. But we really leave now or we'll be late.
- 6 Wilma You haven't eaten since breakfast. You be hungry.
Jake I am. I possibly have a sandwich or something?
- 7 Alice What's the matter?
Erica I find my door key. Have you seen it?
Alice No, I haven't. When did you last have it?
Erica Well, it be in the house somewhere. I used it to get in just five minutes ago, but I remember where I put it.
Alice Well, it still be in the door. Have you checked?
- 8 Helen Hi, Sam. I'm afraid we be a little late. The taxi hasn't arrived.
Sam No problem. I pick you up, if you like. I'm sure I borrow my dad's car. Go back to your house and I be there in about twenty minutes.

4 Varie forme Completa gli articoli usando la forma del passato dei verbi modali dei riquadri e i verbi tra parentesi.

News in brief

can must should should

Expensive exam

Britney Lopez, an 11th grade High School student, is suing her school for \$50,000. Lopez was awarded an 'A' grade, but she believes this ⁰should have been (be) an 'A+'. 'I ¹ (not believe) it when I saw my grade. The person who marked my paper ² (be) asleep,' says Lopez. She also claims that the school ³ (not publish) the exam results before the case was settled.

can might must

Parrot rescue

A zoo-worker who accidentally locked himself in a cage was rescued after a parrot alerted a colleague. Steve Jones said: 'I didn't have a key and I ⁴ (not open) the door. The parrot ⁵ (realize) that I was in trouble and it copied my cries for help. If it hadn't, I ⁶ (be) there all weekend.'

5 Varie forme Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 You are not allowed to smoke here.
- can't*

You can't smoke here.

- 1 It's possible it will rain later.
- might*

It later.

- 2 Could I open the window?
- mind*

Do you the window?

- 3 There's no need to hurry.
- have*

We hurry.

- 4 Someone needs to clean the windows soon.
- need*

The windows soon.

- 5 It's not possible that you saw Federica. She wasn't here.
- can't*

You She wasn't here.

- 6 I'm sure Paolo will have arrived by now.
- must*

Paolo by now.

- 7 I'll answer the door. I assume it's Harry and William.
- will*

I'll answer the door. It and William.

- 8 You should go to bed if you're tired.
- ought*

You if you're tired.

- 9 I think we need to order a taxi.
- had better*

We a taxi.

- 10 I recommend that you visit the Vatican when you're in Rome.
- must*

You when you're in Rome.

6 Varie forme Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Sai parlare l'italiano?

Can you speak Italian?

- 1 Non riesco a trovare il mio cellulare.

.....

- 2 Siete autorizzati a indossare gioielli a scuola?

.....

- 3 Non puoi fumare qui.

.....

- 4 Se non ti piace la pasta, non la devi mangiare.

.....

- 5 L'esame inizia alle 9.30. Devi essere qui per le 9.15.

.....

- 6 L'autobus parte alle 5.15. Non devi arrivare tardi.

.....

- 7 Abbiamo perso l'autobus, ma siamo stati in grado di prendere un taxi.

.....

- 8 Ho comprato la gonna che ho visto in vetrina. Non ho potuto farne a meno.

A Present simple e past simple

- i Per il verbo *be*, le domande si costruiscono mettendo la forma appropriata di *be* prima del soggetto.
Is he British? Are you OK? How old is the film? When was the party?
- ii Per gli altri verbi al present e al past simple, le domande si costruiscono con il verbo ausiliare *do*. La struttura è *do + soggetto + forma base (infinito senza to)*.
Do you play tennis? Does Samantha live near here? When did they get home? Did you enjoy the party?

B Altri tempi, have got, il passivo e i verbi modali

Gli altri tempi, *have got*, il passivo e i verbi modali hanno già un verbo ausiliare. La domanda si costruisce mettendo l'ausiliare prima del soggetto. La struttura è ausiliare + soggetto + verbo principale.

Are you feeling OK? Have you got a car? Was Hamlet written by Shakespeare? Where are you going? How long have you lived here? When was this book published? Can you play tennis? May I open the window? Would you please sit down?

C Parole interrogative

- i Le parole interrogative in inglese sono, in ordine di frequenza d'uso: *What* (Che cosa), *Which* (Quale/i), *Who* (Chi), *When* (Quando), *How* (Come), *Where* (Dove), *Why* (Perché), *Whose* (Di chi).
- ii Le parole interrogative vengono collocate all'inizio della frase.
What is it? Which do you prefer? Where are you going? What time is it? How much are the tickets? How far is it to Cambridge?
- iii Si può anche fare una domanda usando solo la parola o l'espressione interrogativa. Questa costruzione si usa per chiedere nuove informazioni o per domandare a qualcuno di ripetere qualcosa.
I've got a new mobile. ~ What make? ~ It's a Nokia.
This is Sam's coat I think. ~ Whose? ~ Sam's.

► Vedi anche unità 66–72 per altri usi delle domande.

1 Completa i dialoghi usando le parole interrogative.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 0 A I saw Danny last night. | 4 A I've just won some money on the lottery. |
| B Who? _____ | B _____ |
| A Danny, he was at the gym. | A Oh, just €50. |
| 1 A The film starts at 7.30. | 5 A I saw Toni at the weekend. |
| B _____ | B Oh, really? _____ |
| A 7.30. Let's meet at the cinema at 7.00. | A In town. He was buying a new mobile. |
| 2 A I sold my camera. | 6 A The film lasts about 2 hours. |
| B _____ | B _____ |
| A Oh, I never used it and I need some money. | A About 2 hours. Just over, actually. |
| 3 A I think this is Petra's bag. | 7 A We went to the beach yesterday. |
| B _____ | B _____ |
| A Petra's. | A Yesterday. But it rained all day. |

2 Scrivi le domande usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

what / your first film? what kind of music / like? what / do in your free time?
what / your favourite food? have got / a nickname? where / born?
when / start acting? have a favourite actor? how / get your name?

2 minute interview

This week: Leonardo Di Caprio

0 Where were you born?

I was born in Hollywood, actually.

1

I'm named after the painter Leonardo Da Vinci.

2

Yes, I have. My close friends call me 'The Noodle'.

3

When I was 14. I was in a TV advert for toy cars.

4

My first film was *Critters 3* in 1991.

5

Yes, I do. Jack Nicholson.

6

I love all kinds of pasta, and fries with ketchup.

7

My all-time favourite bands are Pink Floyd and The Beatles.

8

I like to play pool and hang out with my friends.

3 Leggi gli annunci e scrivi delle domande seguendo le istruzioni.

FOR SALE

electric guitar €300

contact Eric 07694567002

0 What make?

2 How old?

1 What colour?

3 Why selling it?

Sei interessato a comprare la chitarra. Scrivi delle domande per ottenere informazioni su di essa. Usa gli appunti scritti a fianco.

0 What make is it?

1

2

3

LOST CAMERA

IF FOUND

CONTACT 07910556673

4 Where lose it?

5 When lose it?

6 What make?

Hai trovato una macchina fotografica. Scrivi delle domande per assicurarti che si tratta della macchina fotografica dell'annuncio. Usa gli appunti scritti a fianco.

4

5

6

A Uso e forma

Quando la domanda riguarda il soggetto di una frase, l'ordine delle parole è lo stesso della frase affermativa. La parola che introduce la domanda sostituisce il soggetto. Le domande-soggetto spesso iniziano con *who*, ma sono possibili altre parole interrogative.

Domanda	Affermazione
Who teaches you English?	Ms Holmes teaches us English.
Who gave you the book?	Harry gave me the book.
Which countries border Spain?	France and Portugal border Spain.
What is making that noise?	The washing machine is making that noise.
How many people are going to the party?	Twenty people are going to the party.

Nota che per i tempi del present e del past simple non si usa il verbo ausiliare *do*.

Who lives here? Non *Who does live here?*

Who told you? Non *Who did tell you?*

What caused the problem? Non *What did cause the problem?*

Nota che il verbo ausiliare *don't* o *didn't* si può usare per fare domande negative.

Who doesn't want a coffee? *Who didn't go to the party?*

B Risposte brevi

Le risposte brevi alle domande-soggetto si formano usando il verbo ausiliare o il modale appropriati, per esempio *I do*, *he does*, *she didn't*, *they are*, *he can*.
Who wants a drink? ~ *I do*.

Who lives near Danielle? ~ *Jenny does*.

Who made this mess? ~ *We did. Sorry*.

1 Completa le domande sugli Stati Uniti usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

which countries / share who / discover who / invent
 how many people / live who / star who / work

- | | | |
|---|-----------------------|---|
| 0 | <i>Who discovered</i> | <i>America in 1492?</i> |
| 1 | <i>.....</i> | <i>in the White House?</i> |
| 2 | <i>.....</i> | <i>jeans in 1850?</i> |
| 3 | <i>.....</i> | <i>in the Pirates of the Caribbean films?</i> |
| 4 | <i>.....</i> | <i>a border with the USA?</i> |
| 5 | <i>.....</i> | <i>in the USA?</i> |

2 Sai rispondere alle domande dell'Esercizio 1? Usa le risposte del riquadro e la forma corretta dell'ausiliare *do*.

about 300 million Canada and Mexico Christopher Columbus
 Johnny Depp the President of the USA Levi Strauss

- | | | | |
|---|--|---|--------------|
| 0 | <i>Christopher Columbus</i> <i>did</i> . | 3 | <i>.....</i> |
| 1 | <i>.....</i> | 4 | <i>.....</i> |
| 2 | <i>.....</i> | 5 | <i>.....</i> |

3 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Scrivi le domande usando *who* e le espressioni del riquadro.

break the window eat all the biscuits fancy a pizza
make this mess score not do their homework



0 Who made this mess?



3



1



4



2



5

4 Completa i dialoghi scrivendo domande e risposte. Usa *who* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

cut – my friend Petra drive – Anna fix – Steve take – I tell – Jo win – she

0 A I heard the news about Jo and Rob.

B Who told you?

A Jo did.

1 A We came by car.

B Who drove us?

A Steve did.

2 A This is a great photo.

B Who took it?

A I did.

3 A My scooter's being fixed today.

B Who fixed it?

A Steve did.

4 A Your hair always looks great.

B Who cuts it?

5 A I played tennis with Sue this morning.

B Who did you play with?

A She did.

5 Formula le domande adatte per scoprire le informazioni che cerchi su qualcosa o qualcuno.

0 Someone phoned Harry. Who phoned Harry?

0 Archie found something. What did Archie find?

1 Someone lost the keys.

2 Something woke me up this morning.

3 Valentina bought something.

4 Something happened to Maria.

5 Someone deleted the file.

6 I deleted something by mistake.

7 I didn't email some people.

8 Some people didn't help.

A Uso

Le domande negative si formano senza parole interrogative nelle seguenti situazioni.

i Per mostrare sorpresa o quando qualcosa non è come ci si aspettava.

Don't you like it? Hasn't she told you yet? Wasn't the party fun?

ii Quando ci si aspetta o si spera che l'ascoltatore sia d'accordo.

Haven't we met before? Aren't you a friend of Jill's? Isn't it a lovely day?

Le domande negative si usano con una parola interrogativa per chiedere informazioni.

Why didn't you wait?

What don't you like about it?

Who isn't coming with us?



In italiano le domande negative sono spesso introdotte dall'espressione 'Forse ... non?' *Don't you like him, too?* (Forse) non piace anche a te?

B Forma

Le domande negative si formano con un verbo ausiliare negativo o con una forma negativa di *be*.

Domanda negativa	Domanda neutra
Isn't he Spanish?	Is he Spanish?
Aren't they going to the UK?	Are they going to the UK?
Don't you play the piano?	Do you play the piano?
Didn't you like the film?	Did you like the film?
Haven't they already left?	Have they already left?
Can't you come with us?	Can you come with us?
Why didn't you like it?	Why did you like it?

1 Che cosa domanderesti in queste situazioni? Scrivi le domande usando *Aren't you ...?*

0 Your friend has just won the lotto, but doesn't seem excited.

Aren't you excited?

1 Your friend doesn't seem hungry even though he hasn't eaten all day.

2 Your friend failed an exam, but doesn't seem disappointed.

3 Your friend is going to take an exam, but doesn't seem nervous.

4 Your friend doesn't seem tired even though she was working all night.

- 2** Che cosa domanderesti in queste situazioni? Scrivi le domande usando *Don't you* e le espressioni del riquadro.

eat meat feel well like it want it



0 *Don't you want it?*

2



1

3

- 3** Scrivi delle domande negative per chiedere conferma di informazioni che ritieni corrette.

You think ...

- 0 ... Christopher likes rap music.
Doesn't Christopher like rap music?
- 1 ... Simona can speak German.
- 2 ... Elena and Jo are going on holiday soon.
- 3 ... Katy is from Scotland.
- 4 ... Martin got a computer for his birthday.
- 5 ... Steve has got a car.
- 6 ... Melissa has been to the USA.
- 7 ... Sean failed his Maths test.

- 4** Completa le risposte alle domande dell'Esercizio 3 usando Yes o No.

- 0 No ..., he hates it.
- 1 ..., but she can speak some Polish.
- 2 ..., to Spain, I think.
- 3 ..., she's from Ireland.
- 4 ..., a really cool laptop.
- 5 ..., he uses his parents' car.
- 6 ..., a couple of years ago, I think.
- 7 ..., he's really depressed.

- 5** Usa le informazioni per fare delle domande sulla festa del tuo amico.

- 0 Your friend didn't enjoy the party. Ask why.
Why didn't you enjoy the party?
- 1 Some people didn't come. Ask who.
- 2 People didn't dance. Ask why.
- 3 They didn't like some of the music. Ask which music.
- 4 They didn't eat the food. Ask why.
- 5 Some people didn't stay long. Ask who.
- 6 Your friend isn't having another party. Ask why.

A What is/was ... like?

What is/was ... like? ecc. si usa per chiedere una descrizione o un giudizio generico su qualcosa o qualcuno.

What's Simon like? ~ He's really nice. Very friendly.

What was the film like? ~ Excellent. The acting was superb.

What are your teachers like? ~ They're good. The lessons are always interesting.

B How is/was ...?

Si può usare *How's/was ...?* in due modi.

- i Si può usare in modo simile a *What is/was ... like?* per chiedere una descrizione o una valutazione generica in merito a qualcosa o qualcuno.

How was the film? ~ Excellent. The acting was superb.

How are your teachers? ~ They're good. The lessons are always interesting.

- ii Si può usare *How's* per fare domande sulla condizione, stato di benessere o di salute di qualcuno o qualcosa.

How's your new scooter? ~ Great. I love it!

How's life? ~ Not too bad. But I'm very busy at the moment.

C What do/does ... look like?

- i Per domandare una descrizione o una valutazione più specifica di qualcosa, si può usare *What do/does ... look/taste/sound/smell/feel like?* ecc.

What does Des look like? ~ He's tall and really good-looking.

What do they sound like? ~ They sound a bit like the Rolling Stones, actually.

What does it taste like? ~ It's a bit sweet, but quite tasty.

- ii Nelle conversazioni informali *does* è a volte pronunciato *s* in domande del tipo:

What's Des look like?

What's it taste like?

What's it smell like?

1 Scrivi le domande usando *What ... like?*

0 Your friend went to a party. Ask about it.

A What was the party like? B It was great!

1 Your friend went to a football match. Ask about it.

A B It was a really good game.

2 Your friend went to New York. Ask about it.

A B Amazing! Really exciting.

3 Your friend has bought some new boots. Ask about them.

A B They're black with a zip up the side.

4 Your friend has a new girlfriend. Ask about her.

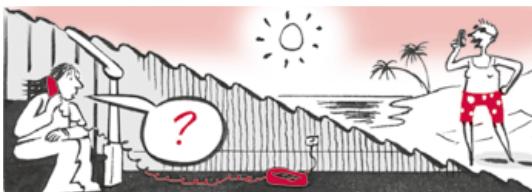
A B She's great fun, and really friendly.

5 Your friend watched a film. Ask about it.

A B It was really funny.

- 2 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Scrivi delle domande usando *How's* o *How was* e le parole del riquadro.

the exam life your pizza the weather



- 0 A *How's the weather?*
B Hot and sunny!



- 2 A
B It was OK, I think.



- 1 A
B Delicious!



- 3 A
B Great thanks. I'm a bit busy though.

- 3 Lara sta parlando con il suo amico Jim, che è appena rientrato da un viaggio in Italia. Completa le domande di Lara usando *How's/was ...?* o *What's/was ... like?* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

how / the weather how / Italy how / the food how / your hotel what / Pisa what / it

- Lara Hi Jim. ⁰ *How was Italy?*
Jim Great, thanks. We had a fantastic time.
Lara Good. ¹ _____?
Jim It was perfect. About 30 degrees and clear blue skies every day.
Lara You stayed in Rome, didn't you? ² _____?
Jim Oh, it's an amazing city. There's so much to see – the Forum, the Coliseum, the Pantheon, ...
Lara And ³ _____?
Jim It was very comfortable. It was in a great location – next to the river and close to the Pantheon.
Lara And ⁴ _____?
Jim Delicious. I love Italian food, so for me it was paradise.
Lara And did you just stay in Rome?
Jim No, we went on a couple of day trips to Pisa and Pompeii.
Lara ⁵ _____? Did you go up the Leaning Tower?
Jim Yes, we did. You must go to Italy sometime. It's wonderful.

- 4 Scrivi delle domande usando la struttura *What do/does ... like?* e i verbi del riquadro. Usa ciascun verbo almeno una volta.

look smell sound feel taste

- 0 A *What does it taste like?*
1 A _____
2 A _____
3 A _____
4 A _____
5 A _____
B It's a bit salty.
B They're a bit like The Beatles.
B It's quite soft.
B It's disgusting. Like old socks!
B They're silver with a diamond in the middle.
B It's delicious.

1 Domande con you Vorresti conoscere qualcosa di più su una persona.Scrivi delle domande usando i suggerimenti dati e il pronome *you*.0 where / from? *Where are you from?*

1 how old? _____

2 where / live? _____

3 how long / live there? _____

4 have / got / any brothers or sisters? _____

5 what sort of school / go to? _____

6 do / any sports? _____

7 what kind of music / like? _____

8 have / got / a favourite band? _____

9 read / a good book at the moment? _____

10 can / speak / any other languages? _____

11 what / do / last night? _____

12 what / do / next weekend? _____

2 Risposte complete e risposte brevi Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 1.Usa le risposte brevi (*Yes, I do.*; *No, I don't.*, ecc.) oppure fornisci risposte complete.

0 I'm from Siena. 7 _____

1 _____ 8 _____

2 _____ 9 _____

3 _____ 10 _____

4 _____ 11 _____

5 _____ 12 _____

6 _____

3 Domande con your Scrivi le domande usando la parola interrogativa adatta e *your*.0 name? *What's your name?*

1 phone number? _____

2 email address? _____

3 birthday? _____

4 favourite actor? _____

4 Espressioni interrogative con how e what Scrivi una domanda e una risposta per ogni figura.Usa le espressioni del riquadro e *is it*.

how far how tall how long how much how old

what colour what size what time

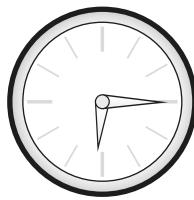
0 How old is he?
He's six.

1 _____ ?



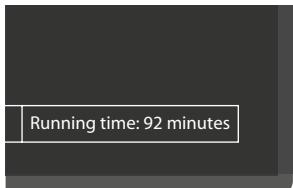
2

?



5

?



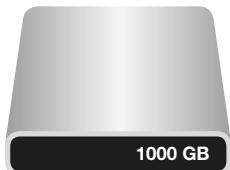
3

?



6

?



4

?



7

?

- 5 Domande-soggetto** Completa le domande del quiz usando *who* e il tempo verbale corretto dei verbi del riquadro. Poi scegli la risposta corretta.

invent live live sing write

FAMOUS BRITS

Answer the questions and win a copy of
the book *Famous British People*.

- | | | | |
|---|---------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------|
| 0 | Who lives | in Buckingham Palace? | |
| a | The Prime Minister | b The King or Queen | c The Mayor of London |
| 1 | Who sing | at number 10 Downing Street? | |
| a | The Prime Minister | b The King or Queen | c The Mayor of London |
| 2 | Who wrote | the Harry Potter books? | |
| a | JK Rowling | b Philip Pullman | c JRR Tolkien |
| 3 | Who invented | 'All You Need Is Love'? | |
| a | The Rolling Stones | b Elton John | c The Beatles |
| 4 | Who built | the steam engine? | |
| a | James Watt | b George Stephenson | c Isaac Newton |

Answers: 0b, 1a, 2a, 3c, 4a

6 Domande Leggi il testo, poi completa le domande.

EVERYDAY INVENTIONS

THIS WEEK

Correction Fluiδ

Correction fluid was invented over 50 years ago by a woman called Bette Nesmith Graham. In 1951, she got divorced and needed to go to work to support herself and her son. She found work as a typist, but she wasn't a very good one and continually made lots of mistakes. To hide this from her boss, she used her kitchen as a laboratory and she developed a white liquid that she

'painted' over her mistakes. Soon, her colleagues began to buy the liquid from her. Bette decided to call her product 'Liquid Paper' and she continued to sell it from her house for the next 17 years. In 1979, she sold the formula to 'Liquid Paper' for \$48 million. Bette's son became even more famous than she did. He is Michael Nesmith, a member of the 1960s pop group The Monkees.

0 When was correction fluid invented?

~ Over fifty years ago.

1
? ~ Bette Nesmith Graham.

2
in 1951? ~ She got divorced.

3
? ~ To support herself and her son.
4
the white liquid? ~ To paint over her typing mistakes.

5
from her? ~ Her colleagues.

6
her product? ~ She called it 'Liquid Paper'.
7
in 1979? ~ She sold the formula.

8
? ~ For \$48 million.

T 7

Domande negative e What ... like? Traduci le domande.

0 Non ti piace il calcio? Don't you like football?

1 Com'è il tuo insegnante?

2 Che aspetto ha il tuo insegnante?

3 Non è un giornata incantevole?

4 Perché non ci hai aspettato?

5 Non ti piacciono i giochi al computer?

6 Come sarà il tempo domani?

8 Grammatica e lessico: *Why don't you ...?* Leggi le frasi. Poi dai dei consigli usando *Why don't you ...?* e le espressioni del riquadro.

buy her some flowers close the window get a scooter go to bed go to the doctor's

- 0 I'm exhausted. ~ *Why don't you go to bed?*.....
1 It's really cold in here. ~
2 I've been feeling unwell for days. ~
3 I had an argument with my girlfriend. ~
4 I'm fed up with getting the bus everywhere. ~

9 Grammatica e lessico: *What ... like?* e generi musicali Alcuni generi musicali possono essere usati come aggettivi. Riscrivi le risposte dei dialoghi usando *They're* e gli aggettivi del riquadro.

bluesy dancey grungy jazzy punky rocky

- 0 A What are they like?
B They play quite a lot of blues.
They're quite bluesy......
1 A What are they like?
B They play quite a lot of punk.
.....
2 A What do they sound like?
B They play rock music.
.....
3 A What do they look like?
B They look quite like a grunge band.
.....
4 A What are they like?
B They play quite a lot of jazz.
.....
5 A What's their music like?
B You can really dance to it.
.....

10 Grammatica e lessico: *What ... like?* e generi musicali Scrivi dialoghi simili a quelli dell'Esercizio 9 su cantanti o gruppi che conosci. Usa *What ... like?* e alcuni degli aggettivi dell'Esercizio 9.

- 0 A *What are Snow Patrol like?*
B *They're quite rocky.*.....
1 A
B
2 A
B
3 A
B

A Uso

Le domande indirette si usano per due ragioni principali:

i quando si vuole essere più formali o educati,

Could you tell us why you'd like this job?

Excuse me. Do you know if there's an ATM near here?

ii quando si vuole essere più cauti perché non si vuole mettere sotto pressione la persona a cui si rivolge la domanda.

Do you happen to know Luke's email address?

Have you any idea where Sam is?

B Forma

i Le domande indirette iniziano con un'espressione interrogativa.

Could you tell me ...? Have you any idea ...? Do you know ...? ecc.

ii L'espressione interrogativa è seguita da una parola interrogativa o da *if*.

Si usa *if* nel caso di una domanda di tipo *yes/no*.

*Could you tell me **where** ...? Have you any idea **when** ...? Do you know **if** ...?*

iii Questa a sua volta è seguita dal soggetto + verbo. Nota che l'ordine delle parole è diverso da quello delle domande dirette e che non si usa il verbo ausiliare *do*.

Could you tell me where the office is? Non Could you tell me where is the office?

Have you any idea when the bus leaves? Non Have you any idea when does the bus leave?

Do you know if Valentina speaks English? Non Do you know if Valentina does speak English?

iv È possibile inoltre usare un'espressione interrogativa + parola interrogativa + infinito.

Do you know how to get to my house? Could you tell me what to do?

► **Vedi unità 84 per altri usi delle parole interrogative + infinito.**

v Si può anche usare un'espressione interrogativa + nome.

Do you know his name? Could you tell me the times of trains to York?

vi *Would you say ...? e Do you think ...?* si usano per chiedere un'opinione e non sono seguite da una parola interrogativa o da *if*.

Would you say you are a good student? Do you think it's going to rain later?

1 Riordina le parole per formare delle domande indirette.

0 where / lives / she / Do you know

Do you know where she lives?

1 win / this evening / Do you think / will / Juve

2 the nearest ATM / is / where / Could you tell me

3 park the car / we / where / Do you know / can

4 Have you any idea / where / is / Belinda

5 coming back / Vincenzo / Do you happen to know / is / when

- 2 Lucia sta chiedendo delle informazioni su Oxford al suo amico Steve. Completa il dialogo con domande indirette, riformulando le domande del riquadro. Inizia con la domanda già inserita.

How far is Oxford from London?
When are you coming?
Is Oxford any good for shopping?
How much does the bus cost?
Can you actually go inside the university colleges?

How long does it take to get there?
Could you recommend a place to stay?
~~Is it worth visiting for a few days?~~
Is two or three days enough?

- Lucia I'm thinking of going to Oxford.⁰ Would you say it's worth visiting for a few days?
Steve Yes, I would. There are lots of things to see and do.
Lucia OK.¹ Do you know ?
Steve Yes, you can. I think most of the famous colleges are open to the public.
Lucia Great.² And would you say ?
Steve Well, the shops are OK. But if you want to do some serious shopping, London isn't far.
Lucia ³Do you know ?
Steve It's about 50 miles. That's about 80 kilometres.
Lucia ⁴And have you any idea ?
Steve By bus it takes about 90 minutes. I think there's a bus every ten or fifteen minutes.
Lucia Great.⁵ And do you happen to know ?
Steve It's not expensive. About £20 or so for a return ticket. It's cheaper if you have a student card.
Lucia OK.⁶ And do you think ?
Steve Yes, I'd say two or three days with a day in London is just perfect.
Lucia ⁷And I was wondering
Steve You can stay with me.⁸ Do you know yet ?
Lucia I'm not sure. I'll let you know as soon as I decide.

- 3 Hai letto questi annunci: scrivi le domande indirette che faresti per ottenere maggiori informazioni. Usa gli appunti scritti a fianco.

**STAR
SCHOOL OF ENGLISH**
Courses all year
contact 01866 406899

⁰ How much?

¹ When start?

0 Could you tell me how much the courses are?

1

FOR SALE
Computer games console
Used twice €400

² Why you selling?

³ Which games included?

2

3

**Camden Town
Pop Festival**

July 17 & 18 over 30 bands

⁴ Which bands playing?

⁵ Where buy tickets?

⁶ How much?

4

5

6

A Uso

Le question tags si usano per invitare o incoraggiare l'ascoltatore a rispondere.

- i La question tag si usa con intonazione discendente (la voce scende) quando ci si aspetta l'assenso dell'ascoltatore.

It's a nice day, isn't it? È una bella giornata, non è vero?

You've been to Greece, haven't you? Sei stato in Grecia, non è vero?

- ii La question tag si usa con intonazione ascendente (il tono della voce sale) quando si tratta di una vera e propria domanda. Ciò può avvenire:

- perché colui che parla non è sicuro se l'affermazione sia vera,

It's the 15th today, isn't it? Sam's got a car, hasn't he?

- per chiedere o richiedere qualcosa,

You haven't got a pen, have you?

You couldn't lend me €10, could you?

- per mostrare disapprovazione o incredulità.

You haven't bought another new mobile, have you?



In italiano, le question tags si rendono di solito con le espressioni 'È vero?' e 'Non è vero?'.

B Forma

- i La question tag si forma usando *be* o un verbo ausiliare + pronome soggetto. Per il present e past simple, si usa il verbo ausiliare *do*.

La question tag negativa si usa dopo una frase positiva.

He's French, isn't he? Anne's been to Sicily, hasn't she?

You saw the film, didn't you?

La question tag affermativa si usa dopo una frase negativa.

She wasn't late, was she? Henrik has never been to England, has he?

You don't like football, do you?

- ii Nota le seguenti forme di question tag:

- Dopo *I am ...*, si usa la question tag *aren't?*
I'm invited too, aren't I? I'm coming with you, aren't I?

- Dopo *Let's ...*, si usa la question tag *shall we?*
Let's go, shall we? Let's get a taxi, shall we?

- Con un soggetto che termina in *-one* o *-body*, si usa *they* nella question tag.

Somebody told you, didn't they? No one liked the food, did they?

- Con un soggetto che termina in *-thing*, si usa *it* nella question tag.
Something is wrong, isn't it? Everything was fine, wasn't it?

- iii Si può usare una frase affermativa + question tag affermativa quando si vuole controllare o chiarire un fatto.

I can't help you at the moment I'm afraid. ~ Oh, you're busy, are you?

Tom didn't get here on time. ~ I see. He was late again, was he?

1 Completa le frasi usando la question tag corretta.

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| 0 The party was great, <u>wasn't it</u> ? | 7 Yuko doesn't speak English, ? |
| 1 That's the new teacher, ? | 8 We've met before, ? |
| 2 You live near the park, ? | 9 I'm invited to the party, ? |
| 3 You're not originally from London, ? | 10 Let's go, ? |
| 4 That's not your car, ? | 11 We first met in 2009, ? |
| 5 Everyone's heard of The Beatles, ? | 12 You won't tell anyone, ? |
| 6 Freddy can play the piano, ? | 13 Ann's singing beautifully, ? |

2 Completa le risposte usando le parole in corsivo e la question tag adatta.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 0 A What time does the film start? <u>at 8.30</u> | B It <u>starts at 8.30, doesn't it</u> ? |
| 1 A Do you know where Samantha lives? <u>on Green Road</u> | B She ? |
| 2 A How old will he be next birthday? <u>18</u> | B He ? |
| 3 A What's the new student's name? <u>Isabel</u> | B It ? |
| 4 A I suppose the weather wasn't too bad. <u>not rain</u> | B Well, at least it ? |
| 5 A Who are Italy playing in the quarter final? <u>England</u> | B They ? |
| 6 A The meal was quite expensive. <u>not cheap</u> | B Well, it ? |
| 7 A Wasn't the film terrible? <u>leave before the end</u> | B Yes. Everyone ? |
| 8 A The hire-car was rubbish: the radio and the air-conditioning were broken. <u>work properly</u> | B Yes. Nothing ? |

3 Scrivi delle richieste usando la question tag corretta.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 0 You need to use a pen. Ask your friend if he's got one.
You <u>haven't got a pen, have you</u> ? | |
| 1 You don't know Kerry's email address. Ask your friend if she's got it.
You ? | |
| 2 You need €50. Ask your friend if you could borrow it.
I ? | |
| 3 You can't find your keys. Ask your friend if he's seen them.
You ? | |
| 4 You don't understand your homework. Ask your friend if she could help you.
You ? | |

4 Completa le domande chiedendo un chiarimento su quanto detto. Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro e la question tag corretta.

you / hear you / go out they / split up you / leave Liverpool / won someone / call

- | | |
|--|--|
| 0 A The taxi will be here in a minute.
B Oh, <u>you're going out, are you</u> ? | 3 A There's a phone message for you on the table.
B Oh, ? |
| 1 A 6–0 to Liverpool!
B Oh, ? | 4 A Sorry about your exam results.
B Oh, ? |
| 2 A Jen and Steve aren't together any more.
B Oh, ? | 5 A The party's boring.
B Oh, ? |

A Uso e forma

Le domande-eco possono essere usate per esprimere sorpresa o per chiedere chiarimenti. Ci sono quattro tipi fondamentali di domande-eco.

- i** Le informazioni su cui si fanno domande possono essere sostituite da un'espressione interrogativa.

I'm seeing Jane tonight. ~ You're seeing who?

The exam's at 9.30 on Friday. ~ It's when on Friday?

Tara's quit school. ~ She's what?

- ii** Per le azioni, *do + what* possono sostituire una intera espressione verbale. Ciò avviene di solito quando si vuole mostrare sorpresa o anche incredulità.

Paolo crashed his scooter. ~ He did what?

I've split up with Anna. ~ You've done what?

- iii** Si può ripetere l'informazione.

Leo's broken his leg. ~ He's broken his leg?

Juanita's getting married. ~ She's getting married?

- iv** Si può usare *be* o verbo ausiliare + pronomi. Per il present e past simple, si usa il verbo ausiliare *do*.

I saw Larry last night. ~ Did you?

Tracy's gone on holiday. ~ Has she?

I'm not coming with you. ~ Aren't you?

B Intonazione

L'intonazione delle domande-eco è molto importante in quanto in tutte le domande-eco l'intonazione sale. Sebbene l'intonazione sia un fenomeno complesso, in generale, più sale la voce, più grande è la sorpresa.

William's bought a Ducati. ~ He's bought what?

He's changed his mind. ~ He's done what?

Sorry I'm late. I got lost. ~ You got lost?

I'm learning Spanish. ~ Are you?

► Vedi unità 71 per altri usi di *Are you?, Have they?, Did she?* ecc.

- 1** Completa le battute di B usando le parole interrogative del riquadro. In alcuni casi la stessa parola va usata più volte.

how much how old what when where who whose

0 A Peter's gone to Australia.

B He's gone where?

A To Australia. For a month.

1 A I've bought a car.

B You've bought ?

A Yes. A second-hand car.

2 A The tickets were €50 each.

B They were ?

A €50, plus €5 booking fee.

3 A Alex's party's on the 15th.

B The party's ?

A The 15th. Two weeks tomorrow.

- 4 A I saw Jerome last weekend.
 B You saw?
 A Jerome. He was in the library.
 B He was?
 A In the library.
- 5 A This jacket is twenty years old.
 B It's?
 A Twenty years old. It used to be my mum's.
 B It used to be?
 A My mum's. She bought it in Paris.
 B She bought it?
 A In Paris. My parents were on their honeymoon.
 B They were on their?
 A On their honeymoon!

2 Scrivi delle domande-eco che esprimano sorpresa o incredulità. Usa il tempo verbale corretto di *do + what*.

- 0 My brother's quit his job! He's done what?
 1 Simon's doing the washing-up!
 2 My dad's bought a motorbike!
 3 I'm going to get married!
 4 Tom was tidying his bedroom earlier!
 5 Roberto told Suzy everything!
 6 I've crashed my parent's car!

3 Scrivi delle domande-eco usando il verbo ausiliare + il pronome.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 0 I passed all my exams! <u>Did you?</u> | 4 I've never been to Milan. |
| 1 My brother's getting married! <u>....</u> | 5 My mum's won the lottery! |
| 2 I've bought a car! <u>....</u> | 6 Marta didn't come to school today! |
| 3 Danny and Sandy are going out together! <u>....</u> | |

4 Che cosa pensi stiano dicendo queste persone? Leggi l'esempio e scrivi dialoghi simili usando le espressioni del riquadro.

be afraid of heights fall in the river not / like spaghetti lose the dog

0



1



2



3



- 0 Harry Sorry, Mum. I fell in the river!
 Mother You fell in the river?
- 1 Dave I'm sorry
 Ulrika You're joking. ?
- 2 Ian Sorry, but
 Jane ?
- 3 Jimmy Sorry, Dad. !
 Father What? ?

A Uso

In inglese può a volte essere poco cortese rispondere solo *Yes* oppure *No*. Spesso è meglio dare una risposta come *Yes, I am*; *Yes, I did* o *No, she isn't*. Se non si è sicuri della risposta si possono usare espressioni come *I think so* (Penso di sì) o *I hope not* (Spero di no).

B Forma

- i Si usa *Yes* o *No* + pronomo soggetto + verbo ausiliare (o *be* quando è il verbo principale).

Is Jane American? ~ Yes, *she is*. o No, *she isn't*.

Do you like Indian food? ~ Yes, *I do*. o No, *I don't*.

Have they finished? ~ Yes, *they have*. o No, *they haven't*.

Did Julian speak to you? ~ Yes, *he did*. o No, *he didn't*.

Can Suzy play the piano? ~ Yes, *she can*. o No, *she can't*.

- ii Nota che non si usa la forma affermativa nella forma contratta e si usa sempre il pronomo soggetto.

Are you OK? ~ Yes, *I am*. Non Yes, *I'm*.

Was Eva there? ~ No, *she wasn't*. Non No, *Eva wasn't*.

- iii Se non si è sicuri della risposta, si può usare *think/believe/guess/hope/expect/suppose + so*.

Are they French? ~ *I think so.* (= *I think they are French.*)

Is Mary coming with us? ~ *I expect so.* (= *I expect Mary is coming with us.*)

Did someone speak to Bill? ~ *I hope so.* (= *I hope someone spoke to Bill.*)

Are they here yet? ~ *I don't think so.* (= *I don't think they are here yet.*)

Will Jim be at the party? ~ *I don't expect so.* (= *I don't expect Jim will be at the party.*)

- iv Per formare il negativo di *hope* e *guess* si usa *not* (non *I don't hope so* o *I don't guess so*).

Is Mary coming with us? ~ *I hope not.* (= *I hope Mary isn't coming with us.*)

Did he leave a message? ~ *I guess not.* (= *I guess he didn't leave a message.*)

1 Scrivi risposte brevi affermative e negative a queste domande.

0 Does Katie speak English?

Yes, she does.

No, she doesn't.

1 Is Pedro from Madrid?

.....

.....

2 Does Silvia speak English?

.....

.....

3 Did Alan pass his exams?

.....

.....

4 Will John be at the meeting?

.....

.....

5 Was it a good film?

.....

.....

6 Is there a bank near here?

.....

.....

7 Have Sue and Bob arrived yet?

.....

.....

8 Is Nancy coming with us?

.....

.....

2 Scrivi risposte vere per te usando *Yes, I am.; No, I don't.* ecc.

- 0 Are you tired? No. I'm not.
1 Have you got a computer?
2 Do you go to the gym?
3 Is it raining?
4 Do your parents speak English?
- 5 Did you go out last night?
6 Can you play the piano?
7 Are you married?
8 Have you been to the UK?
9 Do you like cheese?

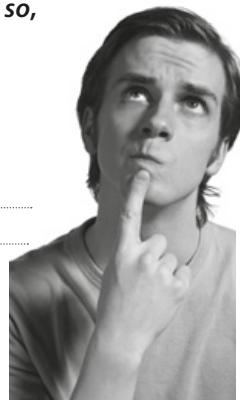
3 Completa i dialoghi usando i verbi tra parentesi e *so*.

- 0 Ben Did you manage to fix your computer?
Steve I guess so (guess). It's working fine now.
1 Sara We're going for a pizza on Friday, aren't we?
Fiona Yes, (think). But check with Andrew.
2 Alan Do you think it will rain later?
Russ (expect). It always rains at this time of year.
3 Keira Do you think Italy will beat England in the rugby six nations?
Brad (think). England should win easily.
4 Tamas Will you finish your assignment before the weekend?
Olga (hope). I want to go to the beach at the weekend.
5 Eric Is the lesson at the usual time?
Jana (suppose). I haven't heard anything different.
6 Ben Has the football match been cancelled?
Steve (hope). I'm really looking forward to playing.

4 Quali sono le tue previsioni per il futuro? Rispondi alle domande usando *I think so, I don't think so, I expect so, I hope so, I hope not* ecc.

Do you think ...

- 0 ... it will be sunny tomorrow? I think so.
1 ... it will rain later today?
2 ... you'll go out with friends at the weekend?
3 ... you'll have a party for your next birthday?
4 ... you'll get married one day?
5 ... you're going to fail all your exams?
6 ... you'll be a millionaire one day?



5 Traduci le seguenti domande e risposte.

- 0 A Pensi che pioverà stasera? Do you think it will rain tonight?
B Penso di sì. I think so.
1 A Pensi che il Milan vincerà il campionato?
B Penso di no.
2 A Pensi che Chris verrà in vacanza con voi?
B Spero di sì. È così simpatico!
3 A Hai già aggiustato il motorino?
B Sì, certo.
4 A Pensi che lo sentirai ancora?
B Spero di sì.
5 A Sei già andato allo stadio quest'anno?
B Sì, certo!

- 1 Domande indirette** Leggi le domande dell'intervista al famoso chef inglese Jude Smith. Riscrivile alla forma indiretta.



- 0 When and why did you start to cook?
Could you tell me when and why you started to cook?
- 1 Why are you so successful?
Why do you think ?
- 2 Has fame changed you?
Would you say ?
- 3 Where do you get your recipes from?
Do you mind if I ask you ?
- 4 Do you have a favourite kind of food?
I'd like to know
- 5 Do you ever get fed up with cooking and just go for a burger instead?
I was wondering
- 6 What is your favourite meal?
Could you tell me ?

2 Abbina le risposte alle domande dell'Esercizio 1.

- a It changes from time to time, but at the moment it's probably Indian food.
- b When I was about nine. I wanted pocket money. I was living in a pub so I started cooking with my mum. O
- c I sometimes borrow recipes from other chefs or restaurants, but I always name them in my books.
- d I'd say my success is down to a little bit of luck, a little bit of passion and a little bit of knowledge!
- e Yes, I've been known to drop in on the local burger shop. But I never get bored with cooking.
- f My mum's Sunday lunch, with vegetables from the garden.
- g I don't think my personality has changed, but I've become a bit of a businessman.

3 Domande indirette Immagina di intervistare un personaggio famoso. Completa le domande con le informazioni che vuoi sapere.

Celebrity's name:

- 1 Could you tell me ?
- 2 I'd like to know
- 3 Would you say ?
- 4 Do you think ?

4 Question tags Alice e Jane stanno discutendo sul riscaldamento globale. Completa il dialogo con le question tag corrette.

Alice So, what exactly is global warming?
Jane Well, basically it's the rise in temperature of the Earth's atmosphere, ⁰ isn't it ?
Alice But why is the earth getting warmer?
Jane Well, radiation from the sun heats the Earth,
¹? Some of this heat is reflected back into space and some is naturally trapped in the atmosphere. If there are too many greenhouse gases, then too much heat is being trapped.
Alice OK, but where do greenhouse gases come from?
Jane Primarily from burning coal and petrol. But also from other things as well, such as cleaning fluids, and I think fridges contain greenhouse gases as well,
²?
Alice OK, and the main consequence of global warming will be the melting of the ice-caps,
³? Is that right?
Jane Well, yes, but there are lots more problems as well. If the ice-caps melt, sea levels will rise, ⁴? And that means that coastal areas will flood. Weather patterns will change, and farming and food production will be affected. There'll be all sorts of problems.
Alice It's not going to be good, ⁵? But there are lots of ways we can help reduce greenhouse gases and help stop global warming,
⁶?
Jane Yes, there are lots of things you can do. You can recycle things and turn off lights when you are not in the room. And you can always travel less by car and walk more,
⁷?
Alice People knew about global warming years ago, ⁸? So why didn't they do anything about it?
Jane Good question. It's like everything, ⁹? If people aren't directly affected by it, they don't see it as a problem,
¹⁰?



5 Domande-eco Completa le risposte con la parola interrogativa corretta.

- | | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| 0 A I'm going to quit my job. | B You're going to do <u>what</u> ? |
| 1 A My dad's going to buy a sports car. | B He's going to buy <u>.....</u> ? |
| 2 A Sam's moving to New York. | B He's moving <u>.....</u> ? |
| 3 A Roberto's broken his arm. | B He's done <u>.....</u> ? |
| 4 A The exam's on the 12th. | B The exam's <u>.....</u> ? |
| 5 A I think this is Fred's bag? | B It's <u>.....</u> ? |
| 6 A Can I borrow your blue pen? | B Sorry, <u>.....</u> pen ? |
| 7 A Elisa's going out with Carlo! | B She's going out with <u>.....</u> ? |
| 8 A Vittoria told me. | B <u>.....</u> did? |

6 Risposte brevi Scrivi delle risposte brevi vere per te (*Yes, I am.; No, I'm not.; Yes, he did.; No she can't. ecc.*).

- 0 Are you Italian? Yes, I am.
- 1 Were you born in Rome? _____
- 2 Do you like rap music? _____
- 3 Can you play the piano? _____
- 4 Have you ever been to the USA? _____
- 5 Did you watch TV last night? _____
- 6 Have you got a scooter? _____
- 7 Are you going out tonight? _____
- 8 Do your parents speak English? _____
- 9 Is your English teacher Italian? _____
- 10 Is it raining at the moment? _____

7 Varie domande e risposte Leggi i dialoghi e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

- 0 A That's the new student, B.
B Yes. His name's Toni.
- 1 A Is it going to rain later.
B I'm playing tennis at 4.30.
- 2 A Do you know?
B I think she's sixteen.
- 3 A Do you like punk music?
B Yes,
- 4 A Julia's getting married.
B?
- 5 A Do you know how much?
B It's about €30 I think.
- 6 A Where does he work?
B He works for Rai Uno,?
- 7 A You can speak French,?
B Well, a little.
- 8 A Is Valeria going to be at the party?
B
- 9 A Are you coming with us?
B
- 10 A Are you ready?
B Yes. Let's go,?

- | | | | |
|--------------------|-------------------|------------------|--------------------|
| 0 A is it | <u>B</u> isn't it | C isn't he | D isn't that |
| 1 A I not hope | B I don't hope so | C I don't hope | D I hope not |
| 2 A how old is she | B she is how old | C is she how old | D how old she is |
| 3 A I like | B I do like | C I do | D do I |
| 4 A What she's | B She's what | C What she | D What is she |
| 5 A does it cost | B it does cost | C costs it | D it costs |
| 6 A doesn't he | B does he | C he doesn't | D works he |
| 7 A don't you | B do you | C can't you | D can you |
| 8 A I don't think | B I not think | C not so | D I don't think so |
| 9 A Yes, I'm | B Yes, I am | C Yes, am I | D Yes, I do |
| 10 A let us | B do we | C shan't we | D shall we |

8 Risposte brevi Che cosa ne pensi? Scrivi delle risposte vere per te usando le parole in corsivo alla forma affermativa o negativa (*I think so* o *I don't think so* ecc.).

- 0 Is it going to rain tomorrow? *I hope not.* *hope*
1 Is it going to be nice tomorrow? *hope*
2 Are you going to go to university? *think*
3 Will France win the next World Cup? *hope*
4 Is the UK bigger than Italy? *think*
5 Will you have children one day? *expect*
6 Will you use the internet later today? *suppose*

T 9 Varie domande Traduci le domande.

- 0 È spagnola, non è vero?
She's Spanish, isn't she?
1 Per caso sai dove vive Orlando?
.....
2 Puoi farmi vedere come usare il registratore DVD?
.....
3 Sono invitato alla festa, non è vero?
.....
4 Hai qualche idea su dove sia Salvatore?
.....
5 Vediamo di rado Rosa, vero?
.....
6 Sai se Marco andrà alla festa?
.....

10 Grammatica e lessico: risposte brevi (modi di dire *I don't know*) Qui di seguito trovi alcuni espressioni comuni per dire 'Non so'. Abbina le frasi alla traduzione in italiano.

- 1 I don't know. a Non sono sicuro.
2 I'm not sure. b Non so.
3 I've no idea. c Non ne so niente.
4 I haven't a clue. d Non ho idea.

11 Grammatica e lessico: risposte brevi (modi di dire *I don't know*) Rispondi alle seguenti domande usando le espressioni dell'Esercizio 10.

- 0 Who was the first king of the United Kingdom? *I've no idea.*
1 In what year did the UK join the European Union?
2 What's the population of Scotland?
3 In what year were the Olympics first held in the UK?
4 What is the capital city of Wales?
5 Who lives in Lambeth Palace in London?

I enjoy cooking. It's stopped raining. Do you mind helping me?

Quando un verbo (a parte gli ausiliari e i verbi modali) regge un altro verbo, il secondo può essere seguito dalla forma *-ing* o dall'infinito. I verbi più comunemente seguiti dalla forma *-ing* sono:

- i Verbi che esprimono simpatie/antipatie: *adore, love, like, don't mind, dislike, can't stand, hate.*

*I love lying on the beach. I really don't like getting up early.
When I was a child, I hated going to school.*

- ii Alcuni verbi con *can't*: *can't face, can't imagine, can't help, can't resist, can't stand, can't stop.*

*I'm exhausted. I can't face going for a run. I can't imagine being twenty!
I couldn't help feeling sorry for John when he failed his exam.*

- iii Altri verbi:

admit avoid (don't) bother consider delay deny dread enjoy fancy feel like finish imagine involve look forward to mention miss postpone/put off practise recommend risk spend/waste time stop/give up suggest.

We're really looking forward to seeing you next week.

Do you feel like going for a pizza?

Peter recommended going by taxi.

Poiché non esiste una regola per i verbi seguiti dalla forma *-ing*, bisogna imparare tali verbi a memoria.

► Vedi unità 77, 78 e 80–82 per altri usi di *-ing*.

- 1 Questi ragazzi stanno esprimendo delle opinioni sullo shopping. Completale usando i verbi dei riquadri.

buy compare go go look queue try on

Li I hate ⁰ *going* shopping with my boyfriend. He's useless and he's always bored after twenty minutes.

Marta I really enjoy ¹ presents for other people. That's the best kind of shopping.

Karl I can't bear ² shopping with my girlfriend. She always spends hours and hours ³ the same clothes again and again. And I also can't stand ⁴ at the checkout. It takes forever!

Toni I think it's always important to spend time ⁵ in different shops. It's definitely worth ⁶ prices and quality.

be able go walk wait

Linda I don't bother with supermarkets any more. You waste too much time ⁷ up and down the aisles again and again. And I hate not ⁸ to find what I want. I do all my shopping on the internet these days. If you don't mind ⁹ for your food to arrive, it's the perfect way to shop. I just can't imagine ¹⁰ into a supermarket ever again!

2 Guarda le figure e completa la frasi usando i verbi del riquadro.

can't stop / eat deny / break the window enjoy / cook
love / play computer games practise / play the guitar stop / rain



0 Sam loves playing computer games.

1 Samantha _____.

2 It _____.

3 Jimmy _____.

4 Stanley _____.

5 My brother _____.

3 Che cosa pensi delle attività 1–6? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando i verbi del riquadro.

love like don't mind don't like can't stand hate

0 study English I love studying English.

1 play computer games _____.

2 get up early _____.

3 watch football _____.

4 do the ironing _____.

5 go to the dentist _____.

6 do exams _____.

4 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te usando la costruzione verbo + forma -ing + complemento.

0 I'm considering getting a part-time job.

1 I really enjoy _____.

2 I spend a lot of time _____.

3 I waste a lot of time _____.

4 Tonight, I feel like _____.

I hope to see you soon. We've arranged to meet at 6.30. I don't want to go.

A Uso e forma

Quando un verbo (esclusi gli ausiliari o i modali) è seguito da un altro verbo, il secondo verbo può avere la forma all'infinito o la forma -ing. I verbi più comunemente seguiti dalla forma all'infinito sono:

agree aim appear arrange ask attempt can('t) afford claim decide demand deserve expect fail forget hope intend learn (how) manage need offer plan prepare pretend promise refuse seem tend threaten can't wait want would like

I hope to see you later. We're planning to leave at about 6.30. I promise not to be late. Did you manage to fix your computer? What time have you arranged to meet?

Poiché non esiste una regola per i verbi seguiti dalla forma all'infinito, bisogna imparare tali verbi a memoria.

B Tend, seem e appear

Si usa *tend* (tendere a), *seem* (sembrare) and *appear* (apparire) per esprimersi in modo non troppo diretto.

- i Si usa *tend* per esprimere qualcosa che avviene in generale o abitualmente.
Si può anche usare *tend* per evitare di esprimersi in maniera troppo critica.
I tend to go to bed at about 10.30. I tend not to go out during the week.
Tom tends to be a bit silly at times.
- ii Si usano *seem* e *appear* quando si pensa che qualcosa sia vero, ma non se ne è sicuri o quando non si vuole affermare che ciò di cui si parla è un fatto.
Larissa seems to be a little upset at the moment. We appear to be lost!

C Forma progressiva dell'infinito e dell'infinito passato

- i La forma progressiva dell'infinito (per esempio *to be doing*, *to be working*) si usa per qualcosa che è in corso di svolgimento.
My computer doesn't seem to be working. I plan to be revising tomorrow.
- ii L'infinito passato (per esempio *to have done*, *to have stopped*) si usa per qualcosa che è avvenuto nel passato.
It appears to have stopped raining. He pretended to have hurt his foot.

1 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Inizia con le parole date.

- 0 Harry says he won't help me.
Harry refuses to help me.
- 1 I'm really looking forward to going on holiday.
I can't wait
- 2 Lorenzo can count to ten in Chinese.
Lorenzo has learnt how
- 3 They think they'll arrive at about 9.30.
They expect
- 4 The plan is to leave before it gets dark.
We aim

- 5 It's important that I speak to Susanna later today.
I need
6 I won't tell anyone, believe me.
I promise not

2 Guarda le figure e scrivi che cosa è successo usando i verbi del riquadro.

meet buy speak to turn off the tap help move



- 0 He can't afford to buy the bike.



- 3 They've arranged



- 1 He offered



- 4 The dog's refusing



- 2 She demanded



- 5 He forgot

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che risultino meno dirette. Usa i verbi in corsivo.

- 0 It's stopped snowing. *appear*
It appears to have stopped snowing.
1 I've lost my mobile. *seem*
.....
2 Chiara's English is improving. *appear*
.....
3 The new student's very friendly. *seem*
.....
4 The internet isn't working. *not appear*
.....
5 It generally rains a lot at this time of year. *tend*
.....
6 Francesca's a bit lazy at times. *tend*
.....

I like to arrive early. I like going out. We tried calling you. We tried to find a bank.

Alcuni verbi possono essere seguiti sia dalla forma -ing che dall'infinito.

- i Per *start*, *begin*, *continue*, *intend* non c'è alcuna differenza di significato.

I started playing the drums when I was ten. = I started to play the drums when I was ten.

Ho iniziato a suonare la batteria quando avevo dieci anni.

Nota che quando *start*, *begin* o *continue* sono alla forma progressiva, sono normalmente seguiti dall'infinito.

I'm beginning to feel better now. Non I'm beginning feeling better now.

- ii Per i seguenti verbi c'è una differenza di significato.

Like/hate

- *Like/hate* + -ing = mi piace o non mi piace in generale
I like going to the gym. Mi piace andare in palestra.
I hate doing exams. Odio fare esami.
- *Like/hate* + infinito = penso che qualcosa sia una buona o una cattiva idea
I like to arrive at the airport at least two hours before the plane leaves.
Mi piace arrivare all'aeroporto almeno due ore prima che l'aereo parta.
I hate to keep people waiting. Odio far aspettare le persone.

Remember/forget

- *Remember/forget* + -ing = avere o non avere ricordi in generale
Do you remember going to school for the first time?
I'll never forget seeing her for the first time.
- *Remember/forget* + infinito = fare o non fare qualcosa
Did you remember to buy the milk? Ti sei ricordato di comprare il latte?
Oh no! I've forgotten to turn the cooker off.
Oh no! Mi sono dimenticato di spegnere il fornello.

Try

- *Try* + -ing = fare qualcosa per vedere quali saranno i risultati
I tried reloading the software, but the program still doesn't work.
Ho provato a caricare di nuovo il software, ma il programma ancora non funziona.
- *Try* + infinito = fare uno sforzo per conseguire qualcosa
I tried to get a ticket, but they were sold out.
Ho cercato di comprare un biglietto, ma erano tutti venduti.

Regret

- *Regret* + -ing = essere dispiaciuti per qualcosa che si è fatto
I really regret buying that mobile – it's rubbish.
Mi rincresce di aver comprato quel cellulare – è una schifezza.
- *Regret* + infinito = essere dispiaciuti per qualcosa che si sta per fare
I regret to inform you that your application was not successful.
Sono spiacente di informarLa che la Sua richiesta non è stata accolta.

Nota che ci sono altri verbi il cui significato cambia a seconda se siano seguiti da -ing o dall'infinito. Comunque, quelli trattati in questa unità sono i più comuni e i più utili.

► Vedi unità 75 e 76 per altri usi dei verbi seguiti dalla forma -ing oppure l'infinito.

► Vedi unità 78 per altri usi di *like* e *hate*.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta in base all'intenzione espressa: chi parla esprime un piacere in generale oppure un'opinione?

- 0 I like *being / to be* at the airport at least two hours before the plane leaves.
- 1 I like *paying / to pay* my bills as soon as they arrive.
- 2 I like *eating / to eat* five portions of fruit or vegetables every day.
- 3 Do you like *cooking / to cook*?
- 4 I really like *playing / to play* computer games. It's great fun.
- 5 I like *washing / to wash* my hair twice a week.

2 Julia ha organizzato una festa. Nell'elenco qui a fianco ha indicato che cosa si è ricordata (✓) e ha dimenticato (✗) di fare. Scrivi delle frasi usando *She remembered ... o She forgot ...*.

- 0 *She forgot to put up the decorations.*
- 1 _____
- 2 _____
- 3 _____
- 4 _____
- 5 _____

- 0 put up the decorations **✗**
1 organize the music **✓**
2 buy the food **✗**
3 buy the drinks **✓**
4 tidy the house **✗**
5 warn the neighbours **✗**

3 Il giorno seguente Julia racconta che cosa è successo durante la festa. Completa le sue frasi.

- 0 remember / eat a lot of birthday cake
I remember eating a lot of birthday cake.
- 1 remember / dance for most of the evening

- 2 will never forget / dance with Boris!

- 3 don't remember / say goodbye to everyone

- 4 really regret / eat so much cake!

4 Scrivi le risposte usando *try* e le espressioni del riquadro. Usa la forma *-ing* o l'infinito.

be with you at 6.30 call her instead change the batteries
drink a glass of water get to an ATM this afternoon re-install it

- 0 The remote control isn't working properly.
Try changing the batteries.
- 1 This new photo software isn't working properly.
_____.
- 2 Viola isn't replying to my text messages.
Why don't you?.
- 3 Can you give me the £30 you owe me?
Yes, sorry. I'll
- 4 I've got hiccups!
_____.
- 5 Don't be late.
OK, I'll

78 Verbo + complemento oggetto + -ing o infinito

The doctor kept me waiting for hours. They asked me to go with them.

A Uso e forma

Alcuni dei verbi che sono seguiti dalla forma *-ing* o dall'infinito hanno anche un complemento oggetto. Alcuni di questi verbi devono avere sempre un complemento oggetto ed alcuni altri possono averlo oppure no a seconda di come sono usati. Qui di seguito sono elencati i verbi di questo tipo più comunemente usati.

B Verbo + complemento oggetto + *-ing*

- i *Hear, notice e see* devono sempre avere un complemento oggetto.
- ii *Can't stand, (can't) imagine, dislike, hate, keep, (don't) like, (don't) mind, remember, risk e stop* possono essere usati con o senza un complemento oggetto.
I can hear someone singing. I saw Carlos going into the supermarket.
I don't remember you taking this photo of me.

C Verbo + complemento oggetto + infinito

- i *Advise, allow, bribe, cause, challenge, enable, encourage, force, inspire, invite, leave, order, persuade, remind, teach (how), tell, train, trust, urge e warn* devono avere un complemento oggetto.
- ii *Ask, beg, choose, dare, expect, help, need, want, would like/love/hate/prefer* possono essere usati con o senza un complemento oggetto.
I advise you to listen carefully. What do you want us to do?
The teacher told us not to be late. The teacher warned us not to be late again.

Nota che molti di questi verbi si usano per riferire ciò che qualcuno ha detto.

► Vedi unità 99 per altri verbi che introducono il discorso indiretto.

D Let, make e help

- i Dopo *let* e *make* si usa il complemento oggetto + forma base del verbo.
My parents made me go to bed, but they let me read for a while. The film made me cry.
- Nota che spesso *let* e *make* sono usati in senso causativo, con il significato di 'far fare qualcosa a qualcuno'. *Let* equivale a lasciare/permettere, mentre *make* corrisponde a obbligare/costringere.
She made me do extra homework for punishment.
Mi fece (obbligò a) fare dei compiti in più per punizione.
She let me do an easy homework task.
Mi fece (lasciò) fare un compito facile.
- ii Si può usare anche *help* allo stesso modo.
Tom's going to help me do my homework. Can you help me tidy up?

► Vedi unità 56 e 89 per altri usi di *let* e *make*.

1 Leggi questi commenti sul rapporto genitori-figli. Completali usando i verbi in corsivo all'infinito, alla forma base o alla forma -ing.

- 0 My parents always made me do my homework. do
- 1 My parents only let me at the weekend go out
- 2 As a child, I hated people me what to do. tell
- 3 My parents always allowed me to bed as late as I wanted. go
- 4 I always helped my parents the housework. do
- 5 My parents taught me positive about life. be
- 6 My parents never made me my room. It was great! tidy
- 7 I can't imagine my parents young. be
- 8 My parents always tried to stop me the internet so much. use
- 9 My parents always encouraged me myself. be
- 10 My parents always expected me to university. go

2 Riferisci quanto è stato detto usando i verbi in corsivo e il pronome adatto.

The page contains five numbered illustrations showing interactions between parents and children:

- Illustration 0: A boy asks a girl "Can you help me, please?"
- Illustration 2: A girl asks a boy "Please go shopping with me." He replies "OK."
- Illustration 4: A boy says to another boy "You should do more exercise."
- Illustration 1: A woman says to a man "Don't forget to phone Silvia."
- Illustration 3: A man says to a woman "Please, please tell me."
- Illustration 5: A woman says to an older woman "Take a seat, please."

Below each illustration is a numbered line for completing the sentence with the correct verb from the box.

0	He asked her to help him.	ask	3	beg
1	remind	4	advise
2	persuade	5	ask

3 Completa le frasi usando *It makes/made me ...* e le espressioni del riquadro.

cry feel sick jump want to leave work harder

- 0 The weather in this place is awful. *It makes me want to leave.*
- 1 The film was so sad.
- 2 I failed an exam.
- 3 The food was disgusting.
- 4 I suddenly heard a loud bang.

4 Che cosa ti infastidisce? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando la parola *people* e i verbi del riquadro.

can't stand don't like don't mind

- 0 use their mobile on the bus *I can't stand people using their mobile on the bus.*
- 1 chewing gum all the time
- 2 kiss in public
- 3 play loud music in public
- 4 eat in the street

FCE 1 **Verbo + -ing o infinito** Karen ed Erica sono in vacanza in Thailandia. Leggi la loro email e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.



Hi Katie,

We're in Thailand and we're having a great time! Sorry we haven't written to you before now. We intended ⁰ C you when we first arrived, but we've been really busy. Anyway, we're having a great time here and we've decided ¹ a little longer than we originally intended. Tomorrow, we're getting a train to the north of the country and we're going to spend a few days ² in the mountains. It'll involve ³ about 20 miles a day – Erica wasn't too keen at first and wanted ⁴ a bit more time around Bangkok, but I've managed ⁵ , too! She wants ⁶ you that I made ⁷ with me, but that's not true!

After that, we're planning ⁸ to one of the islands in the south. Some people we met have invited ⁹ with them for a few days. I'm sure that by the time we get there we'll really feel like ¹⁰ nothing for a few days – except lie on the beach, of course!

Anyway, we promise ¹¹ you again soon and we can't wait ¹² you back at university in a few weeks.

Lots of love,

Karen and Erica x



- | | | | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 0 A email | B emailing | C to email | D us to email |
| 1 A stay | B staying | C to stay | D to have stayed |
| 2 A trek | B trekking | C to trek | D to be trekking |
| 3 A to walk | B us to walk | C walk | D walking |
| 4 A us spend | B us spending | C to spend | D spending |
| 5 A persuade her
to come | B persuade her
coming | C to persuade her
to come | D to persuade her
coming |
| 6 A me tell | B tell | C me telling | D me to tell |
| 7 A her to come | B her come | C her coming | D come |
| 8 A going | B us to go | C to go | D go |
| 9 A us to stay | B us stay | C us staying | D to stay |
| 10 A do | B to do | C doing | D us doing |
| 11 A us email | B email | C to email | D emailing |
| 12 A to see | B seeing | C see | D to seeing |

FCE 2 **Verbo + -ing o infinito** Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 It would be better if you came on Friday. *prefer*
I would prefer you to come on Friday.
- 1 It's important that you are there by 5.30. *need*
You by 5.30.
- 2 My parents don't allow me to stay up late during the week. *let*
My parents late during the week.
- 3 The police forced us to empty our pockets. *made*
The police our pockets.
- 4 I played computer games for two hours last night. *spent*
I computer games last night.
- 5 Sergio wasn't really ill. *pretending*
Sergio ill.
- 6 Tessa was coming out of the supermarket when I saw her. *saw*
I the supermarket.

3 Verbo + -ing o infinito Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 A Did you manage to fix your computer?
B No. I tried reloading / to reload the program, but it still doesn't work.
- 1 A I like your new mobile!
B Thanks. I tried getting / to get a pink one, but they'd sold out.
- 2 A Does Carlo know about the party?
B Oh no! I forgot emailing / to email him. I must remember doing / to do it this afternoon.
- 3 A I'll never forget watching / to watch The Lord of the Rings films for the first time.
B Me too. I can remember being / to be amazed by the visual effects.

T 4 Verbo + -ing o infinito Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Non ricordo di aver fatto questa foto.
I don't remember taking this photo.
- 1 Ti sei ricordato di imbucare la lettera?
.....
- 2 Se non è casa, prova a chiamarlo sul suo cellulare.
.....
- 3 Provai ad aprire la finestra, ma era sprangata.
.....
- 4 Sembra che la pioggia stia per smettere.
.....
- 5 Ha smesso di piovere.
.....

5 Verbo + -ing o infinito Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 I enjoy studying English. 5 I can't wait
- 1 I don't like 6 I spend a lot of time
- 2 I can't stand 7 I need
- 3 I want 8 I'd like
- 4 I love 9 I hope

La forma *-ing* si usa di norma con una preposizione.

La costruzione può essere:

i verbo + preposizione + *-ing*

We're thinking of going to the beach.

Fabio insisted on paying for the coffees.

ii aggettivo + preposizione + *-ing*

I'm fed up with waiting. Let's go.

Are you serious about moving to England?

iii nome + preposizione + *-ing*

I've got lots of memories of living in America.

There was a delay in sending the package.

iv *by* + *-ing*, per dire come avviene qualcosa

They got into the house by breaking a window.

The thieves escaped by running away.

v *for* + *-ing*, per dire per quale scopo si usa un oggetto

That cloth is for cleaning the windows.

Quel panno è per pulire le finestre.

What's this for? ~ It's for charging batteries.

A che cosa serve? ~ È per caricare le batterie.

vi *without* + *-ing*

I swam fifty lengths without stopping.

I left the party without anybody realizing.

Nota che con *without* si usa *anybody*, *anything* ecc., non *nobody*, *nothing*.

They got married without anybody knowing.

Non *They got married without nobody knowing.*

Si sposarono senza che nessuno lo sapesse.

She left home without saying anything to anybody.

Se ne andò di casa senza dire nulla a nessuno.



A differenza dell'italiano, in inglese non si usa la doppia negazione. Siccome *without* ha significato negativo, è seguito da un verbo alla forma affermativa e da pronomi indefiniti come *anybody* e *anything*.

1 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la preposizione in corsivo.

0 He was late. He didn't apologize. *for* He didn't apologize for being late.

1 I'm late. I'm sorry. *for* I

2 Tom paid for the meal. He insisted. *on* Tom

3 Pete plays the drums. He's very good. *at* Pete

4 Sam stole a car. He was arrested. *for* Sam a car.

5 Harriet helped him. He thanked her. *for* He

6 Do you want to come with us? Are you interested? *in* Are you

7 He's very generous. He's got a reputation. *for* He

8 I broke Jim's camera. He's angry with me. *for* Jim

9 Wendy is waiting for Tom. She's fed up. *with* Wendy

2 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola *without*.

- 0 I translated everything. I didn't use a dictionary.
I translated everything without using a dictionary.

1 I ran five kilometres. I didn't stop.

2 Olga left. She didn't say goodbye.

3 They won the game. They didn't really try.

4 Tim left the room. Nobody realized.

3 Completa i dialoghi relativi ai titoli di giornale. Usa *by* e le espressioni del riquadro.

drink rainwater jump out of a window pretend to be security guards
punch the shark on the nose

0 MAN SURVIVES AT SEA FOR 50 DAYS

Jim How did he survive?

Mark By drinking rainwater.

1 WOMAN ESCAPES FROM BURNING BUILDING

Mike How did she escape?

Judy

2 Man survives shark attack

Mike How did he do it?

Judy

3 Gang steals van Gogh masterpiece

Mike How did they do it?

Judy

4 Un bambino sta chiedendo che cosa sono questi oggetti. Scrivi le risposte usando *It's for ...* e le espressioni del riquadro.

crush garlic drain pasta grate cheese open bottles

0



1



2



3



0 A What's this? B It's for crushing garlic.

1 A What's this? B

2 A What's this? B

3 A What's this? B

Alcune espressioni sono seguite dalla forma **-ing**. Fra le più comuni e le più utili vi sono le seguenti:

- i *There's no point (in) ...* (Non ha senso...), *What's the point of ...?*
(Che senso ha...?), *What's the use of ...?* (Che motivo c'è...?)
There's no point waiting any longer. Let's go.
What's the use of learning a foreign language if you're never going to speak it?
- ii *It's (not) worth ..., Is it worth ...?*
It's not worth getting the bus. We can walk there.
Are the Harry Potter books worth reading?
Rome is definitely worth visiting.
- iii *It's no use ...* (È inutile...), *It's no good ...* (Non serve (a nulla)...)
It's no use talking to him. He won't listen.
It's no good saying sorry. What you did is inexcusable.
- iv *It's a waste of time/money ...* (È una perdita di tempo/di soldi...)
It's a waste of time talking to him. He never listens.
It's a waste of money buying DVDs.
- v *Spend time/money ...* (Impiegare del tempo/spendere denaro...)
I spent a week writing my report.
They're going to spend ten million euros renovating the palace.
- vi *Have difficulty ...* (Avere/trovare difficoltà...)
Did you have any difficulty finding the house?
I'm having great difficulty fixing my computer.



Nota che la costruzione *It's (not) worth..., Is it worth ...?* corrisponde in italiano all'espressione '(Non) vale la pena ...', Vale la pena (di) ... ?' che è sempre impersonale.

If you've already visited St Tropez, it's not worth seeing Cannes. Se hai già visitato St Tropez, non vale la pena vedere Cannes.

Is this DVD worth buying? Vale la pena di comperare questo DVD?
Are the ski slopes in Chamonix worth trying? Vale la pena di provare le piste da sci di Chamonix?

1 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Inizia con le parole date.

- 0 I wrote the report. It took me a week.
I spent a week writing the report.
- 1 I never buy newspapers. It's a waste of money.
It's a waste
- 2 We tried to find Patrick's house. It took us an hour.
We spent
- 3 We translated the song lyrics. It was difficult.
We had difficulty
- 4 Penny's had cosmetic surgery. It's cost €20,000 so far.
So far, Penny's spent
- 5 I fixed the computer. It was very difficult.
I had great difficulty
- 6 I don't watch TV. It's a waste of time.
It's a waste

2 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

- 0 Don't go to the gym if you don't enjoy it. It's a waste of time.
It's a waste of time going to the gym if you don't enjoy it.
- 1 Don't go out if it's raining. There's no point.
..... if it's raining.
- 2 Don't pay to download music. It's a waste of money.
..... download music.
- 3 Don't go to clubs if you don't like dancing. There's no point.
..... if you don't like dancing.
- 4 Don't get upset about what he said. It's not worth it.
..... about what he said.
- 5 Don't say sorry now. It's no use.
..... now.

3 Scrivi le domande adatte usando *What's the point of ... if you ...?*

- 0 A He's just bought a piano, but he can't play it.
B What's the point of buying a piano if you can't play it?
1 A He has a swimming pool, but he never uses it.
B ?
2 A She's bought a sports car, but she can't drive.
B ?
3 A She's got a mobile, but she never switches it on.
B ?

4 L'amica di Tom, Fran, sta per andare a Londra e Tom le dà alcuni consigli. Completa la loro conversazione usando i suggerimenti tra parentesi.

- Fran So, where do you recommend in London?
Tom Well, for generally enjoying the atmosphere, I think Trafalgar Square ⁰ 's worth visiting (worth / visit) and it ¹ (also / worth / have) a walk around Covent Garden and Soho, especially in the evening. And to get a wonderful view of the city it ² (definitely / worth / go) on the London Eye.
- Fran OK, and what about the museums and places like that?
Tom Yes, they're wonderful of course, but maybe save them for a rainy day. There ³ (no point / be) inside on a lovely day, is there? You don't get that many sunny days in England! And the forecast for next week is pretty good, isn't it?
- Fran Yes, I think it is.
Tom And I'd say it ⁴ (a waste of time and money / go) to Buckingham Palace. There's not much to see and it's very expensive.
- Fran OK. And what about going to a football match, say Chelsea or Arsenal. Is that possible?
Tom Well, you can try, but I think you might ⁵ (have difficulty / get) a ticket. But it ⁶ (definitely / worth / go) if you can.
- Fran Great, I'll look into it. And thanks for the tips.



Be/get used to + -ing e be/get used to + nome

I'm used to living here. I'm getting used to the food.

- i** *Be used to* si usa per parlare di qualcosa che un tempo non era abituale per qualcuno ora lo è diventato. Si traduce con ‘essere abituato a’, ‘avere l’abitudine di’.
- ii** Si usa *get used to* per parlare del processo di abituarsi a qualcosa. Si traduce con ‘abituarsi a’.
- iii** Con *be used to*, si usa la forma *-ing* di un verbo oppure un nome o un pronome.
 A *How's your new teacher?*
 B *She's great. But I'm not used to having so much homework. We get a lot more than last year!*
 A *I'm sure you'll get used to it!*
 B *How's life in England? Are you used to the weather yet?*
 A *No, but I think I'm getting used to it!*
- iv** Le risposte più appropriate a domande del tipo *Are you used to ...?* sono:
Yes, I am. *No, I'm not.* *No, but I'm getting used to it.*

Nota che non si deve confondere *be used to* con il verbo *used to*.

► **Vedi unità 23.**

- 1** Di recente Laura è andata in Gran Bretagna per studiare all'università. Scrivi le azioni con cui ha (✓) e non ha (✗) familiarità.

- 0 be in the UK ✓ *She's used to being in the UK.*
 1 speak English every day ✗
 2 use pounds instead of euros ✓
 3 drive on the left ✓
 4 eat potatoes all the time ✗

- 2** Laura sta parlando con la sua amica Jane a proposito del suo soggiorno in Gran Bretagna. Completa la conversazione usando il tempo verbale corretto di *get used to* e le parole del riquadro.

have all my lectures the British way of life the famous British weather the food here it

- Jane So, how's life in London?
 Laura Great. I'm really enjoying myself. And I think I'm getting used to the British way of life little by little.
 Jane Great. And how's the course?
 Laura Fine, thanks. Really interesting. It took me a while to 1 in English, but it's not a problem now. My English is really improving, actually.
 Jane That's fantastic. And 2 you ?
 Laura Not really – one minute it's warm and sunny and the next minute it's pouring with rain. Every time I go out I need to take sunglasses and an umbrella!
 Jane Oh, don't worry. I'm sure you 3 eventually! And what have you been eating?
 Laura Well, I think I'm slowly 4 . It's not too bad actually. I'm eating lots of pizza and pasta, and there are Italian restaurants everywhere!

- 3** Scrivi le domande usando *be used to* e le espressioni del riquadro. Poi aggiungi le risposte brevi appropriate.

drive on the left get up early ride a bike speak English

0



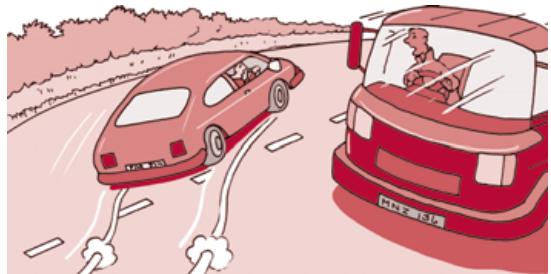
2



1



3



0 Is he used to speaking English?

~ No, he isn't.

1

~

2

~

3

~

- 4** Quanta familiarità hai con queste situazioni? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando *I'm used to*, *I'm not used to* o *I'm getting used to*.

0 be a student I'm used to being a student.

1 work hard ~

2 speak English ~

3 do lots of homework ~

4 my current timetable ~

5 my school's rules and regulations ~

- 5** Immagina di essere appena arrivato in Gran Bretagna e scrivi quattro frasi su azioni o situazioni con cui non hai ancora familiarità.

0 I'm not used to looking right when I cross the road.

1 ~

2 ~

3 ~

4 ~

A Aggettivi + infinito

i Alcuni aggettivi reggono l'infinito. Le costruzioni possono essere:

- Aggettivo + infinito

We're nearly ready to leave. I'm surprised **to see** you here.

It's difficult to explain. It's good **to be** back home.

- Aggettivo + *for/of* + complemento + infinito

It's important for you to be at the meeting.

It was kind of him to help.

They are keen for us to go with them.

ii Gli aggettivi seguiti dall'infinito sono usati di norma con soggetto impersonale *it* (*It's great to see you*) o con un pronome personale soggetto (*I'm surprised to see you*). Alcuni aggettivi si possono usare con entrambe le strutture.

It's easy to use the camera. o *The camera is easy to use.*

Is it safe to drink the water? o *Is the water safe to drink?*

It was crazy of them to do that. o *They were crazy to do that.*

Gli aggettivi che si usano più comunemente con entrambe le strutture sono tra gli altri: *difficult, easy, free, hard, impossible, interesting, safe, crazy.*

B Nomi + infinito

i L'infinito si usa con alcuni nomi ed espressioni nominali.

Le costruzioni possono essere:

- Nome + infinito

It's time to go.

This is your last chance to change your mind.

What's the best way to get to your house?

- Nome + *be* + infinito

My advice is to say nothing.

The important thing is to exercise every day and to eat healthily.

ii L'infinito si può usare con *the first, the second, the only, the last* ecc.

I was the last to arrive. Who was **the first person to walk on the moon?**

► Vedi unità 144 per usi dell'infinito con *il to* con *too* e *enough*.

1 Completa le frasi usando i verbi e le espressioni del riquadro.

get back home be on time hear anyone leave phone use visit

- 0 I like your new camera. Is it easy **to use**?
- 1 The taxi is here. Are you ready ?
- 2 The music was so loud in the club last night. It was impossible
- 3 Did you get the opportunity Pompeii when you were in Italy?
- 4 I love going away, but it's always great
- 5 There's no need Luisa. I've just spoken to her.
- 6 Don't be late. It's really important

2 Riferisci le informazioni delle insegne e annunci usando *It's* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

dangerous / swim easy / install free / join free / park not safe / drink



0 It's free to park for one hour.

1

2

3

4

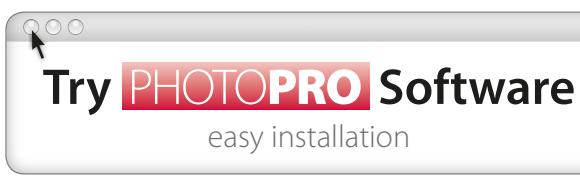
0 It's free to park for one hour.

1

2

3

4



3 Completa i dialoghi usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

the best way / get to your house time / go an amazing place / live
a big mistake / do that the chance / talk to her

- 0 A Do you think I should tell her?
B No. It would be *a big mistake to do that!*

- 1 A This is a photo of my grandparents' house.
B Wow. What

- 2 A Did you see Carol last night?
B Yes, but I didn't get

- 3 A Which is?
B By bus. There's a bus stop right outside.

- 4 A Come on. It's
B OK, I'll get my coat.

4 Completa le domande usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

first team / win first person / reach second person / walk
last person / walk first athlete / win first person / climb

- 0 A Who was the *first person* to reach the South Pole?

B Wasn't it Roald Amundsen?

- 1 A Mount Everest?
B Sir Edmund Hillary in 1952.

- 2 A the World Cup?
B Wasn't it Uruguay in 1930?

- 3 A five consecutive Olympic gold medals?
B It was British rower Steve Redgrave from 1984 to 2000.

- 4 A on the moon?
B It was Buzz Aldrin, wasn't it? Just after Neil Armstrong.

- 5 A on the moon?
B It was a guy called Gene Cernan in 1972.

A Uso e forma

Con alcuni verbi e locuzioni si possono usare le parole interrogative + infinito.

i Verbo + parola interrogativa + infinito

I don't know what to say. I can't decide what to wear.

Can you show me how to get to your house?

I verbi più comuni che possono reggere una parola interrogativa + infinito sono:
*ask (someone) choose decide discover discuss explain find out forget
know learn remember say see show (someone) talk about teach (someone)
tell (someone) think (about) understand wonder work out worry about*

ii Locuzione + parola interrogativa + infinito

I'm not sure where to go. We haven't got a clue what to do.

Have you made up your mind who to invite to the party?

Le locuzioni che possono reggere una parola interrogativa + infinito includono:

I've no idea ..., I haven't got a clue ..., I'm not sure ..., make up your mind

Nota che si può usare un nome retto da *what, which, whose, how many e how much*.

I can't decide which pizza to have. I don't know what music to put on.

Nota che non si usa la costruzione *why + infinito*.

I don't know why I have to do it. Non I don't know why to do it.

B Whether

Si può anche usare *whether + infinito* con certi verbi e locuzioni.

I can't decide whether to go to the party or not.

I'm not sure whether to invite Nicola to the party.

Nota che non si può usare *if* al posto di *whether*.

I don't know whether to go out tonight. Non I don't know if to go out tonight.

Non so se uscire stasera.

- 1** Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa le parole interrogative e l'infinito del verbo.

0 How do I get to the train station? I don't know.

I don't know how to get to the train station.

1 Where do I get off the bus? I don't remember.

2 How do you use the DVD recorder? Can you show me?

3 How do you connect to the internet? I don't know.

4 What shall I buy Carrie for her birthday? I've no idea.

5 How do I say 'Thank you' in German? I've forgotten.

- 2 Suzy ha deciso di invitare alcune persone a cena. Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro per completare le sue frasi.

what / cook whether / invite how / make what music / play what time / tell what / wear



- 3 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Scrivi delle frasi usando *whether*.

0 Coffee or tea? You can't decide which to have.

I can't decide whether to have coffee or tea.

1 Go out or stay in tonight? You don't know what to do.

2 Do my homework or watch TV? You can't decide what to do.

3 To the gym or swimming? You can't make up your mind where to go.

4 Speak to him or not? You just didn't know what to do.

- 4 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa le parole interrogative e l'infinito del verbo.

0 I can't decide what to do at the weekend.

1 I don't know .

2 I'm not sure .

3 I can't make up my mind .

4 I need to find out .

5 I know .

6 I've forgotten .

I'm going to the shop to get some milk. Where are you going? ~ To get some milk.

L'infinito si usa:

- i Per esprimere uno scopo. Risponde alla domanda o serve per spiegare *why?* (perché?).

I phoned Peter to invite him to the party.

Can I use your phone to text Sammy?

Why are you going to the shop? ~ To get some milk.

- ii Per spiegare lo scopo o la funzione di qualcosa.

You use a mouse to operate a computer.

Pull that lever to open the door.

What's this button for? ~ To turn the light on.

Nota che in inglese non si usa *for* allo stesso modo in cui si usa 'per' in italiano.

I'm going to the supermarket to buy some bread.

Non *I'm going to the supermarket for buy some bread.*



In italiano, l'infinito di scopo si può esprimere con *a* o *per* + infinito.

Occorre stare attenti alla costruzione di *for* che, in inglese, regge la forma *-ing*.

1 Scrivi delle frasi in cui spieghi che cosa stai per fare e perché. Usa le espressioni del riquadro.

buy some milk get my eyes tested get some money play tennis return some books visit Janice

0 the shop *I'm going to the shop to buy some milk.*.....

1 the bank

2 the library

3 the hospital

4 the optician's

5 the park

2 Scrivi le risposte usando le espressioni del riquadro. Inizia con *To*.

buy a newspaper celebrate the end of the exams get my bag

invite us to her party save money visit my cousins

0 Nick Why aren't you going out this evening?
Ian *To save money.*.....

1 Chris Why are you going to Brighton?
Tony They live there.

2 Freda Where are you going?
Anna To the shop

3 Sara Why did you go back to the classroom?
Karen I left it there.

4 Sandy Why did Maria phone?
Becky

Sandy It's not her birthday, is it? What's the party for?
Becky

3 Scrivi delle risposte usando le tue idee. Inizia con *To*.

- 0 Why did you go to the garage? *To get some petrol.*
1 Why did you go to the shop?
2 Why did you go to the sports centre?
3 Why did you go to the bank?
4 Why did you go to the city centre?

4 Scrivi le frasi usando i suggerimenti dati e *Can I use ...?* o *Can I borrow ...?*

- 0 a stamp / post Lara's birthday card
Can I borrow a stamp to post Lara's birthday card?
1 your computer / send an email

2 your phone / ring my parents

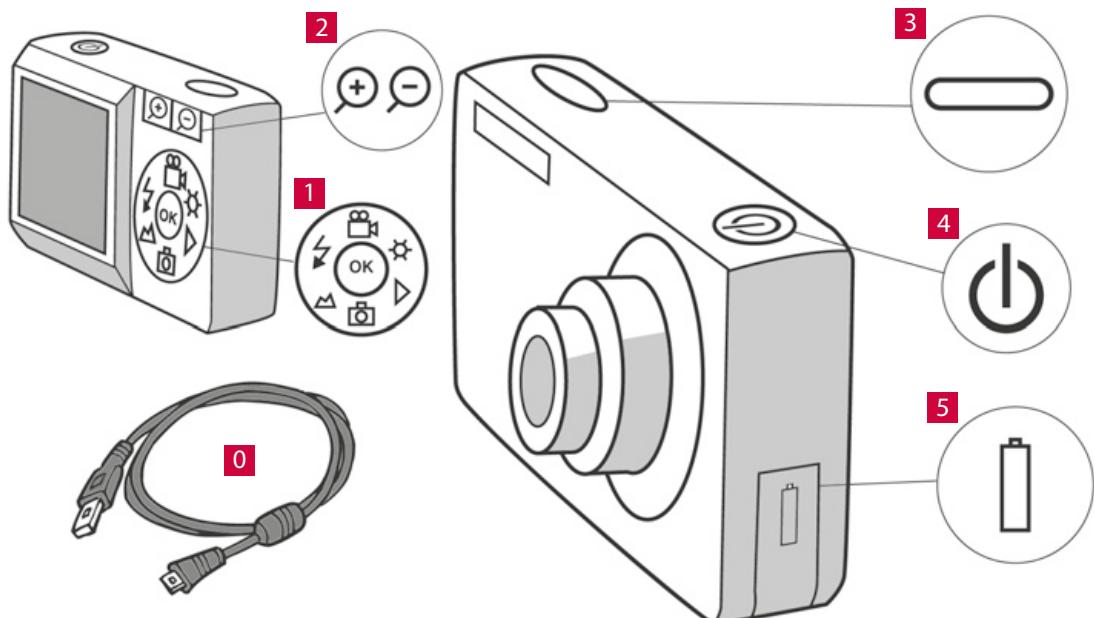
3 some money / buy a coffee

4 your scooter / go to the shops

5 the internet / check the football results

5 Spiega a che cosa servono questi oggetti e comandi usando le espressioni del riquadro e *It's to*.

~~connect the camera to the computer~~ switch the camera on and off zoom in or out
~~release the battery~~ take a photo change the settings



- 0 A What's this cable for? *It's to connect the camera to the computer.*
1 A What's this button for?
2 A What's this for?
3 A What's this button for?
4 A What's this button for?
5 A What's this for?

1 Preposizioni + -ing Completa i dialoghi usando le preposizioni e i verbi del riquadro.

about / study at / play by / practise for / be for / dry on / give on / pass without / stop

- 0 Sue Did you get the bus here?
 Dino No. Elisa insisted on giving me a lift.
- 1 Alison Congratulations your exam!
 Enrico Thanks.
- 2 Kate Are you serious law at university?
 Lucio Yes, I've always wanted to be a lawyer.
- 3 Bianca I'm sorry late.
 Teacher Don't worry. We haven't started the lesson yet.
- 4 James Paris to Rome in twelve hours – that's pretty good.
 Mia Yes, we drove all night
- 5 Tom Can I use this towel?
 Sanna No, that's the one we use the dog!
- 6 Lena How did you get to be so good
 Tessa every day!

2 Be used to + -ing Simon si è trasferito da poco in Italia dal Regno Unito. Guarda le figure e scrivi delle frasi sulle cose alle quali è e non è abituato. Usa le espressioni del riquadro.

drive on the right eat spaghetti speak Italian use euros



- 0 He isn't used to driving on the right.



- 2



- 1



- 3

3 Espressioni con aggettivo/nome + infinito Completa i consigli per imparare meglio l'inglese.
Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro.

easy / learn essential / go a good idea / watch important / read
opportunity / speak secret / listen useful / have

- 0 It's useful to have a good dictionary.
1 It's as many English books and magazines as possible.
2 It's lots of films in English.
3 Take every English.
4 The is to lots of English bands.
5 It's for you to all your lessons!
6 It's English if you really want to!

4 Espressioni con aggettivo/nome + infinito Il/La tuo/a amico/a sta organizzando la sua festa di compleanno. Completa le frasi per dargli/le dei consigli. Usa le idee del riquadro o altre a tua scelta.

enjoy yourself have food play games have music you can dance to
invite a lot of people have a fancy-dress party warn the neighbours
invite an equal number of boys and girls invite your teachers

- 0 It's important to warn the neighbours.
1 It's a good idea
2 It's essential
3 It isn't necessary
4 It's better not
5 The most important thing is

5 Verbi + -ing o infinito Completa i dialoghi con la forma -ing o l'infinito dei verbi tra parentesi.

- Alice We're thinking of ⁰ going (go) to the beach later. Do you want to join us?
Billy No thanks, I can't. I'm going into town ¹ (meet) Darina.
Abby I've no idea what ² (wear) for the party tonight. Any suggestions?
Carlo It's no use ³ (ask) me – I've got no idea about fashion!
Yuko Are you serious about ⁴ (sell) your guitar?
Darius Yes, I never have the time ⁵ (play) it anymore.
Alfie Can you show me how ⁶ (get) to the train station?
Robbie The easiest way is ⁷ (take) the number 5 bus from the bottom of the road.
Sam Can I use your computer ⁸ (check) my emails?
Andrea Sure, but I'm having difficulty ⁹ (connect) to the internet at the moment.
Francis Thanks for ¹⁰ (help) me with my homework.
Steve No problem. It's good ¹¹ (be able) to help each other from time to time.
Lizzy I'm sorry ¹² (hear) about your driving test.
John Oh, never mind. They say it's quite normal ¹³ (fail) first time.
Jack Where are you going?
Sarah To the supermarket. ¹⁴ (get) something ¹⁵ (eat). I haven't had lunch yet.

6 Varie forme Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 He was late but he didn't apologize. *for*
He didn't apologize for being late.
- 1 It took me an hour to tidy my room. *spent*
I my room.
- 2 How do I get to the bus station – can you show me? *to*
Can you show me to the bus station?
- 3 I did all my work and I didn't ask for help. *without*
I did for help.
- 4 They broke a window to get into the house. *by*
They got into a window.
- 5 Is your house easy to find? *it*
Is your house?
- 6 Angelina plays the guitar very well. *good*
Angelina's the guitar.
- 7 His parents bought him a new bike because he passed all his exams. *for*
His parents bought him a new bike all his exams.
- 8 Who left the party last? *was*
Who the party?

T

7 Varie forme Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Complimenti per aver passato l'esame.
Well done for passing your exam.
- 1 Esco a prendere del latte.
.....
- 2 Sai come arrivare a casa mia?
.....
- 3 Vale la pena vedere il film?
.....
- 4 È facile trovare il negozio?
.....
- 5 È importante arrivare in orario.
.....

8 Grammatica e lessico: *look forward to + -ing* Completa le frasi con i verbi del riquadro. Ricordati di usare la forma *-ing* del verbo dopo *look forward to* (non vedere l'ora di).

hear meet receive see

0



2

Look forward
..... you
tonight. Jx

1

See you soon, and I'm really
looking forward your news.
Love, Jen

3

We look forward your payment
in the next 7 days.
Yours sincerely,
Claire Chapman, Accounts

9 Grammatica e lessico: *look forward to + -ing* Scrivi due cose che non vedi l'ora di fare.

- 0 I'm looking forward to going on holiday.
1 _____
2 _____

10 Grammatica e lessico: infinito di scopo e oggetti di uso scolastico Immagina che un bambino stia chiedendo che cosa sono questi oggetti. Scrivi le risposte usando *It's a*, *You use it to* e le espressioni dei riquadri.

calculator paperclip hole punch rubber ruler sharpener stapler

clip pieces of paper together do calculations draw straight lines
join pieces of paper together make holes in paper rub something out sharpen pencils

0 What's this?



It's a stapler. You use it to join pieces of paper together.

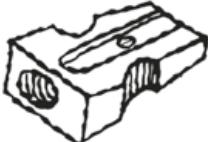
1 What's this?



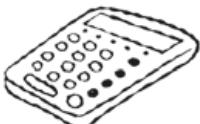
2 What's this?



3 What's this?



4 What's this?



5 What's this?



6 What's this?



We got wet. Let's get going. We didn't get to see the film. I don't get it.

Get ha diversi significati ed usi. Qui di seguito sono elencati alcuni dei più comuni.

A Diventare

Get + aggettivo = diventare

Did you get wet when it rained? Ti sei bagnato quando è piovuto?

It's getting dark. Si sta facendo buio.

Are you getting ready? Vi state preparando?

B Ottenerere/ricevere

Get + nome = ottenerere o ricevere

I got a new bike for my birthday.

Ho ricevuto una bicicletta nuova per il mio compleanno.

I'm going to the shop to get some milk.

Sto andando al negozio a prendere del latte.

C Viaggiare/arrivare

Get + avverbio = viaggiare o arrivare

How do you get to school? Come vai a scuola?

What time did you get home? A che ora sei arrivato a casa?

D Iniziare

Get + -ing = iniziare

Let's get going or we'll be late. Andiamo o saremo in ritardo.

You tidy the room and I'll get cooking. Tu metti a posto la stanza e io inizio a cucinare.

E Capire

Get + nome/espressione interrogativa = capire

I don't get it! Non capisco!

Do you get what I mean? Capisci ciò che dico?

F Riuscire

Get + infinito = riuscire o 'avere l'opportunità di'

Did you get to see the Forum when you were in Rome?

Sei riuscito a vedere il Foro quando eri a Roma?

Nota che queste espressioni con *get* sono in genere usate in contesti più informali, per esempio in conversazione con gli amici.

► Vedi unità 52 per usi di *get* e *have/get something done* con il passivo.

1 Leggi le seguenti notizie giornalistiche. Quale parola sostituiresti con una forma di *get* per riferire le informazioni in una conversazione?

- 0 The weather is going to become a lot worse next week. *get*
- 1 You can generally obtain things cheaper on the internet.
- 2 The Earth is becoming warmer every year.
- 3 You can now travel from London to Paris in under two hours.
- 4 Due to traffic delays, many fans didn't manage to see the start of the game.
- 5 We finally arrived home at midnight.

2 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Usa una forma di *get* e le parole del riquadro.

an A in English dark going changed the milk and bread the coffee wet

0



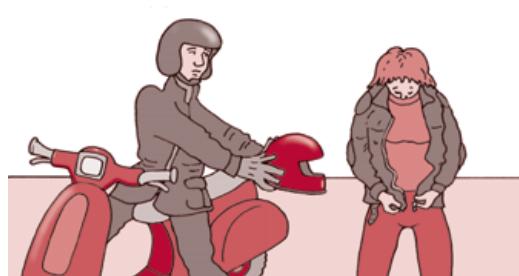
3



1



4



2



5



0 We got wet.

1 I

2 I but I

3 It's

4 Come on. Let's

5 I'm

3 Completa i dialoghi usando *get* e le parole in corsivo.

0 A How was your holiday?

B Fantastic! I got to spend the whole week on the beach! /spend

1 A How was the gig?

B Brilliant. And the band afterwards. /we/meet

2 A Was William at the party?

B Yes, but to him before he left. /not/speak

3 A How long have you known Zena?

B Oh, her about three years ago. /first/know

4 A In Paris,

B Yes, we did. What a view!

Have come verbo principale ha diversi usi e significati.

Qui di seguito sono elencati gli usi più comuni.

- i Si usano espressioni con *have* + nome per alcune azioni ed esperienze. Per esempio:

Pasti	<i>have breakfast/lunch</i>
Cibo e bevande	<i>have a burger/a coffee/pizza</i>
Attività quotidiane	<i>have a shower/a rest/a walk/a siesta</i>
Avvenimenti	<i>have a lesson/an exam/a meeting/a party/a chat/a holiday</i>
Esperienze positive	<i>have fun/a good time/a good day/a laugh</i>
Esperienze negative	<i>have a bad day/a problem/an argument/an accident</i>

- ii Si usa a volte *have a* + nome invece di un verbo. Per esempio: *have a go* (sperimentare o provarci), *have a look* (vedere, dare un'occhiata), *have a taste* (assaggiare), *have a guess* (indovinare). *This new game is brilliant. Do you want to have a go?*
Il nuovo gioco è entusiasmante. Vuoi provare?
I can't start the car. Will you have a go?
Non riesco ad avviare la macchina. Vuoi provare?
There's a problem with my computer. Can you have a look at it?
Il mio computer ha un problema. Puoi vederlo?

- iii Si usa *have a/some* per offrire qualcosa.

Have a seat/a drink/some more cake ecc.
(Siediti/prendi da bere/ancora un po' di dolce ecc.)

► Vedi unità 7 per *have (got)* per esprimere possesso ed unità 52 per *have something done*.



Nota che alcune delle espressioni con *have*, in italiano reggono altri verbi.

I'm having a shower.

Sto facendo la doccia.

We have lessons all morning and then we have lunch at 12.00.

Abbiamo lezioni per tutta la mattina e poi pranziamo alle 12.00.

Did you have a coffee with him yesterday?

Hai preso un caffè con lui ieri?

1 Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Usa *have* e le parole del riquadro.

a bad day lunch a good time a shower



0 He's having a shower.



2



1



3 They

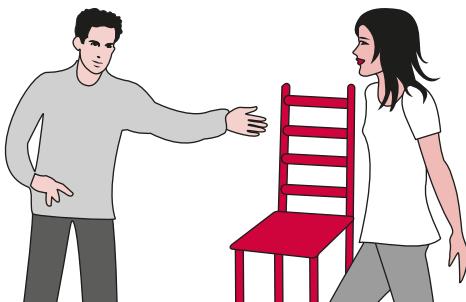
2 Completa i dialoghi con *have a* e le parole del riquadro.

go guess listen look taste

- 0 A How's your pizza, it looks nice.
B It's delicious. Have a taste.
- 1 A Have you heard the new song by The Rakes?
B I've got it here on my MP3 player – do you want to ?
- 2 A I just can't open this bottle. Here, you
B OK, I'll try.
- 3 A Have you seen this article about music? It's really interesting.
B No, I haven't. Can I ?
- 4 A How old are you?
B I'm not telling you. !

3 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Usa *Have* e le parole del riquadro.

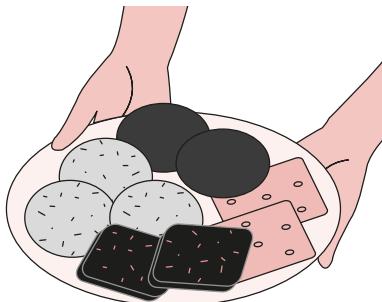
a biscuit a rest a seat some more wine



0 Have a seat.



2



1



3 If you're tired,

4 Scrivi sei frasi che siano vere per te su quanto hai fatto oggi usando *I've had* e *I haven't had* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

an accident an argument a burger a coffee dinner an exam fun a good day
a bad day lunch a laugh a maths lesson a problem a shower a siesta

0 I've had lunch.

3

0 I haven't had an argument.

4

1

5

2

6

I'll make lunch. I need to make a phone call. It's made from wood. It made me cry.

Make ha diversi usi e significati. Qui di seguito sono elencati quelli più comuni:

A Produrre

Make + nome = produrre qualcosa

I'll make the coffee. Farò il caffè.

Who made this mess? Chi ha fatto questo caos?

Alcune tra le espressioni più frequenti sono:

make	breakfast/lunch/dinner	a cake/a coffee	a list
	a mess	a noise	a plan

B Eseguire

Make + nome = eseguire un'azione

I need to make a phone call. Devo fare una telefonata.

I made a mistake. Ho fatto un errore.

Alcune tra le espressioni più frequenti sono:

make	an appointment	the bed	a choice	a complaint
	a decision	a difference	an effort	an excuse
	friends	a fuss	an impression	a mistake
	a promise	a speech	an offer	a phone call

C Prodotto da

Be made from/of + materiale = materia di cui qualcosa è fatto

Glass is made from sand. Il vetro è fatto di sabbia.

The sculpture is made of ice. La scultura è fatta di ghiaccio.

Nota che, come regola generale, si usa *from* se il materiale grezzo viene trasformato durante il processo e *of* se non lo è.

D Causare, provocare

Make + pronome + aggettivo/forma base del verbo = causare/provocare qualcosa

Too much chocolate makes you fat. Troppa cioccolata fa ingrassare.

The book made me cry. Il libro mi ha fatto piangere.

E Obbligare

Make + pronome + forma base del verbo = obbligare qualcuno a fare qualcosa

My parents make me go to bed at ten o'clock.

I miei genitori mi obbligano ad andare a letto alle dieci.



Nota che alcune delle espressioni con **make** prendono altri verbi in italiano.

You need to make a decision. Devi prendere una decisione.

Who's making that noise? Chi sta facendo questo rumore?

► **Vedi unità 90 per le espressioni in cui si usa do.**

1 Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Usa *make* e le parole del riquadro.

a list a mess a big mistake a phone call



0 He's making a mess.



2



1



3

2 Completa i dialoghi usando *make* e le parole del riquadro.

an appointment a difference a fuss friends lunch

0 A The food was cold, the service was slow, and I didn't like the music.
B Oh, stop making a fuss – the restaurant wasn't that bad.

1 A Hello, this is the health centre. Can I help you?
B I'd like to make an appointment to see Dr Smith, please.

2 A I'm hungry.
B OK, I'll make a difference.

3 A I hear you and Jimmy had a big argument.
B Yes, but we've made a fuss again.

4 A I've got a new pair of glasses.
B Has it made a difference?
A Yes, I can actually see now!

3 Scrivi delle frasi in cui spieghi di quale materiale sono fatti i seguenti oggetti. Usa *from* oppure *of*.

denim eggs plastic sand water wood

0 Glass is made from sand.
3 An omelette is made from eggs.
1 Jeans are made from denim.
4 Clouds are made from water.
2 Paper is made from wood.
5 DVDs are made from plastic.

4 Completa le frasi usando *made me* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

it / cry my teacher / do it again it / ill it / laugh his parents / pay for it it / think

0 I read a news article about world poverty. It made me think.
1 The film was very sad. In fact, it made me cry.
2 I think the chicken was undercooked – it made me ill.
3 It made me laugh when Simon fell in the river!
4 I broke a window at my friend's house so his parents paid for it!
5 My essay wasn't very good so it made me cry.

What are you doing? I'm doing an English course. It does 220 kph.

A Uso e forma

Do come verbo principale ha il significato generico di ‘eseguire un’attività’. Corrisponde per lo più in italiano al verbo ‘fare’.

- i Si usa *do* quando l’attività non è specificata, per esempio nelle domande e nelle frasi negative.

What did you do at the weekend? Che cosa avete fatto durante il weekend?
We didn't do anything last night. Non abbiamo fatto niente ieri sera.

What do you do? è una domanda comune che significa ‘Che lavoro fai?’
What do you do? ~ I'm a teacher. What does he do? ~ He's a doctor.

- ii Si usa *do + nome*.

I'm doing a grammar exercise. I didn't do my homework last night.

do	your best some exercise an exercise someone a favour some homework nothing some damage research a test/an exam a course some work some sightseeing
----	--

- iii La costruzione *do + the/some + -ing* si usa per faccende domestiche.

I'll do the cooking if you do the washing-up. Cucino se tu lavi i piatti.
I need to do some washing. Devo fare del bucato.

do the/some	cooking cleaning gardening shopping washing washing-up
-------------	---

- iv Si usa *do* per la pratica di alcuni sport.

My sister does yoga. Have you ever done a bungee jump?

do	gymnastics judo karate athletics yoga a bungee jump
----	---

- v Si usa *do + velocità* per dire a quale velocità viaggia qualcosa.

A Formula One car can do 350 kph.

► Vedi unità 89 per le espressioni in cui si usa *do / make*.

B To do with

Si usa *to do with* per dire ‘avere a che fare/essere collegato con’ o ‘responsabile di’:

The broken window has nothing to do with me. La finestra rotta non ha nulla a che fare con me. = Non ho nulla a che fare con la finestra rotta.

The problem is something to do with your anti-virus software.

Il problema ha a che fare/è collegato con il tuo software antivirus.

C Will do

Will do = ‘essere abbastanza/bastare’

Just a salad will do – I'm not very hungry. How much tip shall we leave? Will €5 do?

► Vedi unità 65 per *do* come verbo ausiliare.

1 Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Usa *do* e le parole del riquadro.

a bungee jump her homework nothing research the washing yoga



0 He's doing a bungee jump.



1



2



3



4



5

2 Completa i dialoghi usando *do* e le parole del riquadro.

300 kph a lot of damage me a favour my best will with me

- 0 Anna Good luck with your exam!
Brad Thanks. I'll do my best.
- 1 Alice Could you do me a favour?
Bart Sure, what is it?
Alice Could you feed the cat tomorrow? I'm away for the day.
- 2 Alan It was an amazing storm last night!
Bruce Yes, and it caused a lot of damage. I think it destroyed some houses.
- 3 Andy Have you seen John's new sports car?
Bruno I have. Apparently, it can travel at 300 kph.
- 4 Alex Do you know anything about the broken window?
Bill No, I don't. It has nothing useful left!
- 5 Ali Do you fancy some lunch?
Betty OK, but I'm not that hungry. A sandwich will do.

3 Completa le domande usando il verbo *do* alla forma verbale corretta.

- 0 What are you doing tonight? ~ I'm going out with some friends.
1 last night? ~ I went to the cinema.
2 at the weekend? ~ I'm going to the beach.
3 now? ~ I'm looking for my keys.
4 right now? ~ I'm a journalist.

I'm taking the car to the garage. She took an exam. It took twenty minutes.

Take ha diversi usi e significati. Qui di seguito sono elencati alcuni dei più comuni.

A Spostare, trasportare ecc.

Si usa *take* + nome + espressione avverbiale per indicare che si sposta qualcosa in un altro luogo.

I took my mobile to school. Ho portato il cellulare a scuola.

Can you take this DVD to Sam? Puoi portare questo DVD a Sam?

Nota che si usa *bring* quando qualcosa viene spostato al luogo dove si trova chi parla.

We need to bring our swimming kit to school tomorrow.

Dobbiamo portare il nostro equipaggiamento da nuoto a scuola domani.

B Esprimere durata

Si usa *take* + espressione di tempo per indicare la durata di viaggi o di azioni.

It takes 20 minutes to get to school on foot. Ci vogliono 20 minuti per arrivare a scuola a piedi.

The bus takes five minutes. Il bus ci mette cinque minuti.

It took me three days to write the report. Mi ci sono voluti tre giorni per scrivere la relazione.

How long does ... take? e How long does it take to ...? sono domande comuni.

How long does the journey take? Quanto dura il viaggio?

How long does it take to get to Genoa? Quanto ci vuole per arrivare a Genova?

Nota che per film, lezioni ecc. si usa *last*.

The lesson lasts 45 minutes. La lezione dura 45 minuti.

C Indicare quantità

Si usa *It takes/took* + nome + *to* per dire il numero o la quantità necessaria per fare qualcosa.

It took three people to lift the box. Ci vollero tre persone per sollevare la scatola.

It takes a lot of skill to make the perfect pizza.

Ci vuole una grande abilità per fare la pizza perfetta.

D Azioni

Le espressioni con *take* + nome si usano per esprimere alcune azioni.

Le espressioni più comuni sono:

Trasporto *take the bus/the train/the metro/a taxi*

Cibo e medicine *take milk/sugar (in your coffee)/drugs/an aspirin*

Esami *take an exam/a test*

Altre espressioni includono *take a break* (fare una pausa),
take control (prendere il controllo), *take place* (avere luogo), *take part* (prendere parte), *take a picture/photo* (fare una fotografia), *take advice* (consultare), *take (your/his ecc.) time* (prendersela comoda), *take a seat* (mettersi a sedere)



Nota che alcune espressioni con *take* sono rese in italiano con diversi verbi.

Did you take any photos?

Hai fatto qualche fotografia?

There's no need to hurry. Take your time. Non c'è bisogno di affrettarsi. Prenditela con comodo.

Do you take sugar?

Metti lo zucchero?

1 Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Usa *take* e le espressioni del riquadro.

a tablet a break her driving test an exam a photo her dog for a walk



0 He's taking a tablet.



3



1



4



2



5

2 Completa queste notizie giornalistiche usando *take* e le espressioni dei riquadri.

over 100 firefighters at least a year control

There was a fire at Oxford's Science Museum yesterday. Firefighters quickly ⁰took control of the situation and damage to the building was minimized, but it ¹took at least a year to finally extinguish the blaze. 'We estimate it will ²take to repair the damage before we can reopen,' said museum director, David James.

part a petition place

A demonstration by teachers ³took place yesterday in the centre of Rome. Over ten thousand teachers ⁴were part of and at the end of the demonstration, teachers' leaders ⁵were given to the Department of Education, asking for more pay.

drugs a drugs test part

Olympic gold medallist Martha Johnson has been banned for five years after she admitted that she ⁶had taken drugs for five years. Johnson ⁷had taken in two Olympic Games and won medals in the 400 metres and 200 metres. Officials first became suspicious of Johnson when she refused to ⁸take a drugs test at an event last year.

Unità

92

Go

I'm going to school. Go and get some bread. The interview went well.

Go ha numerosi usi e significati. Qui di seguito sono elencati alcuni tra i più comuni sono.

A Go to school, go on holiday ecc.

Go + espressione avverbiale = muoversi/viaggiare in qualche luogo.

I didn't go to school yesterday. Non sono andato a scuola ieri.

Where are you going on holiday? Dove andate in vacanza?

B Go and ...

Si usa go and + verbo per parlare del fatto che ci si dirige verso qualche luogo per un motivo.

I'll go and check the weather forecast. Vado a vedere le previsioni meteo.

Let's go and get some lunch. Andiamo a pranzo.

Nota che si usa di solito come (venire) quando il parlante o l'ascoltatore sono nel luogo dove si è diretti.

I'm not coming here again! Non vengo più qui.

Can you come and help me, please? Mi puoi venire ad aiutare, per piacere?

C Go swimming, shopping ecc.

Si usa go + -ing per attività del tempo libero e per lo shopping.

Let's go swimming. Andiamo a nuotare.

I went shopping this morning. Sono andato a fare shopping stamattina.

D Go well, go slowly ecc.

Si usa go + avverbio per parlare di come avviene qualcosa.

The interview went well. Il colloquio andò bene.

The lesson went slowly. La lezione andava avanti lentamente.

How did ... go? è una domanda frequente.

How did your exam go? ~ It went OK, I think.

Com'è andato l'esame? ~ È andato bene, credo.

1 Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Usa go e le parole ed espressioni del riquadro.

to the dentist on holiday out for a pizza



0 He's going to the dentist.



2



1

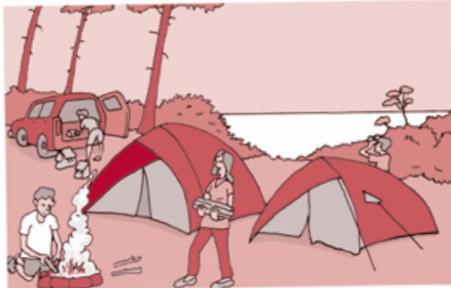


3

- 2** Immagina che queste siano alcune foto della tua vacanza estiva. Scrivi delle frasi di commento usando *We went* e le parole del riquadro.

camp shop surf swim

0



2



1



3



0 We went camping.

1

2

3

- 3** Completa i dialoghi usando *go and* e le espressioni del riquadro.

change your clothes get an umbrella get some see the doctor lay the table wash my hands

- 0 A I've had a headache for days.
B I think you should go and see the doctor.
- 1 A There's no milk.
B Don't worry. I'll get some.
- 2 A I fell in the river!
B I think you need to wash my hands.
- 3 A Oh, no it's started raining.
B No problem. I'll get an umbrella.
- 4 A Dinner will be ready in ten minutes. Can you lay the table?
B Sure. I'll just change your clothes first.

- 4** Scrivi domande e risposte per queste situazioni. Usa *How did ... go?* e *It went ...*.

- 0 Your friend had an eye test. It was OK.
A How did your eye test go? B It went OK.
- 1 Your friend had an exam. It was OK, he thinks.
A How did your exam go? B It went OK.
- 2 Your friend had an interview. It was really bad.
A How did your interview go? B It went really bad.
- 3 Your friend had a date. It was really good, he thinks.
A How did your date go? B It went really good.

Prefer, would prefer e would rather

I prefer wine to beer. I'd prefer to go by car. I'd rather go by car.

Si usano *prefer* e *would rather* per parlare di preferenze.

A Prefer

Per esprimere ciò che si preferisce in generale si può usare:

i *prefer + nome*

I don't drink much tea. I prefer coffee. Non bevo molto tè. Preferisco il caffè.

ii *prefer + -ing o prefer + infinito*

I don't like watching DVDs. I prefer going to the cinema.

Non mi piace guardare DVD. Preferisco andare al cinema.

I don't like watching DVDs. I prefer to go to the cinema.

Non mi piace guardare DVD. Preferisco andare al cinema.

iii Per esprimere un'alternativa si usa *to*.

*I prefer coffee **to** tea. Preferisco il caffè al tè.*

*I prefer going to the cinema **to** watching DVDs. Preferisco andare al cinema che guardare DVD.*

B Would prefer ('d prefer)**i** Si usa *would prefer + nome* e *would prefer + infinito* per riferirsi ad una situazione specifica.

Tea or coffee? ~ I'd prefer coffee, if that's OK.

Tè o caffè? ~ Preferirei il caffè, se va bene.

How shall we get there? ~ I'd prefer to go by train.

Come possiamo andarci? ~ Preferirei andarci in treno.

ii Per esprimere un'alternativa si usa *rather than*.

*I'd prefer to go by train **rather than** by bus. Preferirei andare in treno piuttosto che in autobus.*

C Would rather ('d rather)**i** Si usa *would rather + forma base* con un significato analogo a *would prefer*. Non si usa *would rather + nome*.

How shall we get there? ~ I'd rather go by train.

Come possiamo andarci? ~ Preferirei andarci in treno.

ii Per esprimere un'alternativa si usa *than*.

*I'd rather go by train **than** by bus. Preferirei andare in treno piuttosto che in autobus.*

Nota che nella lingua parlata e in contesti scritti di tipo informale si usa di norma la forma contratta di *would* (*I'd prefer ...*, *We'd rather ...* ecc.) con un pronomine personale soggetto (*I*, *we* ecc.).

D I'd prefer not, I'd rather not

Si usa *not* quando la frase è negativa.

I'd prefer not to go by bus. Preferirei non andare in autobus.

I'd rather not go by bus. Preferirei non andare in autobus.

E If that's OK, ... if possible ecc.

Si usano spesso espressioni quali *if that's OK*, *if possible* e *if you don't mind* a fine frase.

*I'd prefer coffee **if that's OK**. Preferirei il caffè, se va bene.*

*I'd rather get the bus **if possible**. Preferirei andare in autobus se è possibile.*

*I'd rather stay here **if you don't mind**. Preferirei stare qui se non le dispiace.*

1 Che cosa preferisci? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando *I prefer ... to ...*.

- 0 orange juice or cola? I prefer cola to orange juice.
- 1 tea or coffee?
- 2 pop music or classical music?
- 3 rugby or football?
- 4 going to the gym or swimming?

2 Completa i dialoghi usando *prefer*, *would prefer* o *would rather* e le parole tra parentesi.

- A It's a lovely day. Shall we go for a walk?
B I'd rather read (rather / read) a book in the garden.
- A Do you fancy something to eat?
B I'm not that hungry, actually. I (rather / eat) a bit later, if that's OK.
- A Do you play computer games?
B Never. I (prefer / listen) to music or (read).
- A What do you fancy for dinner – risotto or pasta?
B I (rather / not have) pasta if that's OK. I had pasta for lunch.
A Oh, that's good – I (prefer / have) risotto anyway.
- A Do you ever go skiing?
B I don't like skiing. I (prefer / snowboard).
- A We can get to Pisa by bus or train. I (prefer / go) by bus – it's cheaper. What do you think?
B To be honest, I (rather / go) by train if you don't mind – it's much quicker, isn't it?

3 Scrivi delle risposte vere per te usando *I'd rather ... than ...* o *I'd prefer ... rather than ...*.

- 0 Would you rather study English or maths?
I'd rather study English than maths.
- 1 Would you rather meet the Pope or your favourite celebrity?
.....
- 2 Would you rather live in the UK or the USA?
.....
- 3 Would you prefer to be a famous sportsperson or a famous actor?
.....
- 4 Would you prefer to be rich and ugly or poor and attractive?
.....

4 Scrivi delle domande usando *Do you prefer ... or ...* e dai risposte vere per te.

cats / dogs coffee / tea football / rugby RnB / rock music romantic films / comedies
Roma / Lazio summer / winter penne / spaghetti history / geography

- 0 Do you prefer rugby or football? ~ I prefer football.
- 1
- 2
- 3

94 Suggest e recommend

I recommend the pasta. I suggest we leave at about 6.30. What do you recommend?

Si può usare *suggest* (suggerire) e *recommend* (raccomandare, consigliare) in diversi modi:

A Suggest/recommend + nome

Si può usare la struttura *suggest/recommend + nome*.

Sam suggested Café Baba for lunch. Sam ha suggerito il Café Baba per il pranzo.

I recommend the spinach calzone. Consiglio il calzone con spinaci.

B Suggest/recommend + verbo

i In genere si usa *suggest/recommend + espressione verbale* (con o senza *that*).

I suggest we wait here. Suggerisco di aspettare qui.

They recommend that you book in advance. Consigliano di prenotare in anticipo.

ii Si può anche usare *suggest/recommend + -ing*.

I suggest waiting here. Suggerisco di aspettare qui.

They recommend booking in advance. Consigliano di prenotare in anticipo.

Nota che non si usa la costruzione *suggest/recommend + infinito*.

Non *I suggest to wait here.* Non *They recommended to book in advance.*

iii Si può usare anche *recommend + complemento + infinito*, anche se questa può spesso sembrare un po' formale.

He recommended us to go to Piazza Navona.

Ci ha consigliato di andare a Piazza Navona.

Nota che non si usa *suggest* in questo modo: *He suggested us to go Piazza Navona.*

1 Guarda le figure e scrivi le domande usando i suggerimenti del riquadro. Poi scrivi le risposte.

which album / recommend which school / recommend

which bus / suggest what date / suggest

0 English Schools:

1. Capital School
2. Star School
- 3. River School** →
4. City School
5. West Street School

1 BUS TIMETABLE
> Bristol

Depart	2:30
Arrive	3:15
Depart	4:00
Arrive	4:45

2 NIRVANA

Nirvana Discography:

1. Bleach (1989)
- 2. Nevermind (1991)** →
3. In Utero (1993)
4. MTV Unplugged in NY (1994)

3 April

	Thursday	Friday	Saturday
8		9	10
15	16	17	

0 A Which school do you recommend?

B I recommend the River School of English.

1 A we catch?

B

2 A ?

B

3 A for the party?

B

- 2** Leggi l'email di Donna sulle cose da fare a Oxford e riferisci a un amico che cosa Donna ha suggerito. Usa le parole in corsivo + we.



Hi Chloe and Tom,

A few ideas for when you visit Oxford:

- 0 Visit Magdalen and Christ Church Colleges
- 1 Go punting on the River Thames
- 2 Eat in Brown's Restaurant
- 3 Go for a drink in the Trout Pub
- 4 Visit Stratford (where Shakespeare was born)
- 5 See a band at the Zodiac Club
- 6 Stay for at least three days

Have fun, Donna x



- 0 She suggests we visit Magdalen and Christ Church Colleges. suggest
- 1 suggest
- 2 recommend
- 3 suggest
- 4 suggest
- 5 recommend
- 6 recommend

- 3** Scrivi alcuni consigli e suggerimenti a un turista in visita nella tua città. Usa i verbi in corsivo.

- 0 I suggest you visit Piazza San Giovanni. suggest
- 1 suggest
- 2 suggest
- 3 recommend
- 4 recommend

- 4** Riferisci le informazioni contenute in questi avvisi e cartelli. Usa la forma -ing dei verbi.

0 It is recommended you allow at least 2 hours to see the exhibition.

They recommend allowing at least 2 hours to see the exhibition.

1 Booking tickets in advance is recommended.

They

2 IT IS SUGGESTED THAT YOU KEEP YOUR VALUABLES WITH YOU AT ALL TIMES.

They

3 DRINKING THE TAP WATER
IS NOT RECOMMENDED.

They

A Uso e forma

Diversi verbi di uso comune possono avere due complementi.

Quando un verbo ha due complementi, sono in genere possibili due strutture.

Soggetto	Verbo	Compl. indiretto (persona)	Compl. oggetto (cosa)
We	bought	Katie	some flowers.
Peter	gave	her	a book.
Andrea	showed	me	it.

Soggetto	Verbo	Compl. oggetto (cosa)	to/for	Compl. indiretto (persona)
We	bought	some flowers	for	Katie.
Peter	gave	it	to	Anna.
Andrea	showed	it	to	me.

Sebbene non vi siano regole precise su quale delle due strutture usare, nota che:

- i Entrambe le strutture sono in genere possibili quando sia il complemento oggetto che quello indiretto sono costituiti da pronomi.
Jenny bought me it. Jenny bought it for me.
I've lent Simona my camera. I've lent my camera to Simona.
- ii Quando però uno solo dei complementi è un pronomo, il pronomo in genere va per primo.
I'll give it to George. Non I'll give George it.
I'll give you my email address. Non I'll give my email address to you.

I principali verbi con *for* sono: *book, buy, choose, cook, find, get, make, order, save*.

I principali verbi con *to* sono: *bring, fax, give, lend, owe, pass, send, show, take, teach, text, write*.

B Verbi plurisillabici

Per alcuni verbi plurisillabici che hanno due complementi si usa in genere solo la struttura con *to/for*.

He explained the situation to me. Non He explained me the situation.
Mi spiegò la situazione.

Tali verbi sono: *demonstrate, describe, explain, introduce, mention, organize, repeat, report, say*.

1 Riordina le parole in modo da formare delle frasi di senso compiuto.

- 0 a T-shirt / my boyfriend / I gave I gave my boyfriend a T-shirt.
1 €50 / me / Sara lent
2 me / the sugar / can you pass / ?
3 I gave / to / my homework / the teacher
4 for / I need to buy / my girlfriend / a present
5 a text message / you / I'll send

2 Chi ha dato e chi ha ricevuto questi oggetti? Rispondi in due modi come nell'esempio usando le parole del riquadro.

a book a pen a ring a watch



- 0 Lauren gave Kim a watch. Lauren gave a watch to Kim.
1
2
3

3 Alcune delle espressioni in neretto all'interno dei dialoghi sono più naturali senza *to* o *for*: riscrivile. Fai un segno di visto (✓) accanto alle frasi che vanno bene così come sono.

Dino I've got a new mobile. ⁰ Let me give my new number to you
Let me give you my new number.

Bella OK, but ⁰ why don't you text it to me ✓ ?

Amy I saw you in town this morning.

Chloe Did you? ¹ I was buying a birthday present for Marta

Amy I didn't know it was her birthday. What did you get her?

Chloe ² I got a scarf for her ³ And I'm going to make a cake for her

Jenny Is there any pizza left?

Darina Sorry, ⁴ I gave the last slice to Bruno But if you're hungry ⁵ I'll make some pasta for you, if you like.

Joel It's my parents' wedding anniversary tomorrow.

Lisa ⁶ Have you got anything nice for them ?

Joel Yes, ⁷ we've booked a romantic table for two at *La Parisienne* for them ⁸ And we've got a bouquet of flowers for them

Danni If you don't understand your homework, you should ask your teacher.

Ben ⁹ He's already explained it to us, but I still don't understand.

4 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa il doppio complemento.

- 0 My parents bought me a camera.
1 I bought
2 I sent
3 My teacher gave
4 My parents bought

- 1 Make e do** Le espressioni del riquadro richiedono il verbo *make* o *do*? Scrivile nella colonna corretta.

an appointment your best breakfast / dinner / lunch a choice a coffee / a pizza / a cake
 a course some damage the shopping a difference an exercise some exercise
 someone a favour your homework a list a mess a mistake a noise
 a phone call some research a speech a test / an exam some work

make

an appointment

do

your best

- 2 Make e do** Completa le frasi con la forma corretta di *make* o *do*.

- 0 Do you do any sports?
- 1 Do you know how to risotto?
- 2 Have you ever a speech in public?
- 3 I need to my homework.
- 4 Who this mess in the classroom?
- 5 You need to a decision about who to invite to your party.
- 6 I'm a cookery course at the moment.
- 7 The goalkeeper a terrible mistake.
- 8 My sister me a cake for my birthday.
- 9 The storm a lot of damage to several houses.
- 10 Who is that noise?

- 3 Make e do** Completa l'email di Federica al suo amico Toni con la forma corretta di *make* o *do*.



Hi Toni,

I'm in Oxford in the UK for four weeks and I ¹'m doing an English course. The lessons are fun and we have lots of opportunity to speak in English. I think this ²is a big difference because you can practise what you learn. We also ³do lots of grammar exercises, which I like! We ⁴have a test at the end of every week and my teacher says that I ⁵make good progress.

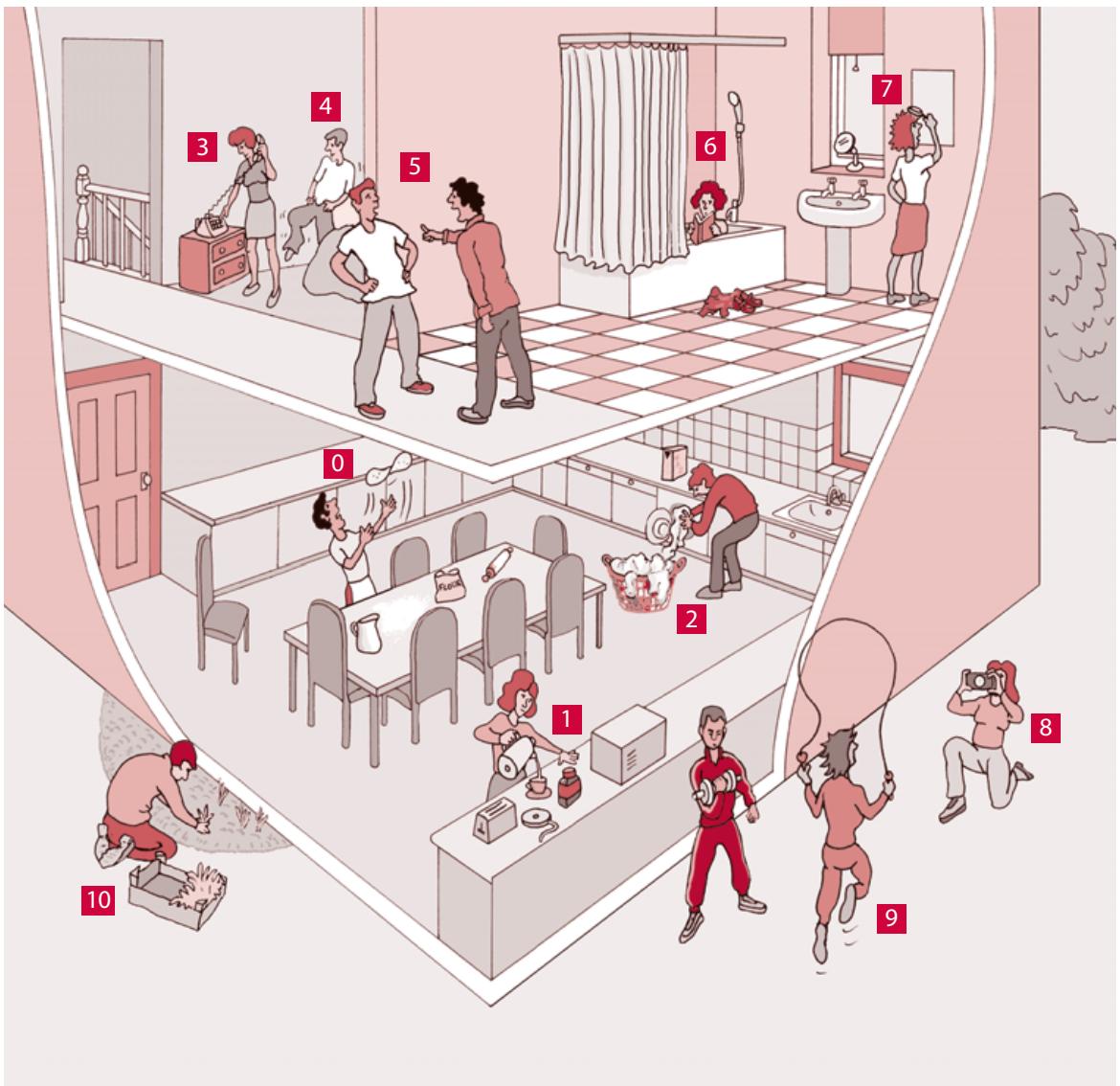
I've ⁶met lots of new friends and we ⁷do quite a lot in the evenings. Next Saturday, there's a trip to London. We're going to ⁸do some sightseeing and there will be time to ⁹buy some shopping.

I must finish now because I promised to ¹⁰make pasta aglio e olio for my host family. And before that I have to ¹¹do my homework.

Love, Federica x

4 **Do, get, go, have, make e take** Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Usa *do, get, go, have, make* o *take* e le espressioni del riquadro.

an argument a bath a coffee dressed some exercise some gardening
her hair a phone call a photo a pizza some washing



0 He's making a pizza.

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9

10

5 Do, get, go, have, make e take Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

A I'm going to ⁰take / have / do a cup of tea. Do you want one?

B Yes, please.

A Do you ¹take / do / get milk and sugar?

B Milk, but no sugar thanks.

A I'm ²making / taking / getting my driving test this afternoon.

B Good luck!

A Thanks. I'll ³have / make / do my best.

A What did you ⁴have / get / take for your birthday?

B I ⁵had / got / took a camera from my parents. And my brother and sister

⁶got / went / took me out for lunch. I ⁷took / had / got the biggest pizza ever!

A Could you tell me how to ⁸go / get / take to the bus station?

B Turn left at the traffic lights and then ⁹go / get / take the first right.

A How long will it ¹⁰go / get / take to ¹¹go / get / take there?

B About five minutes.

A I think there's a problem with my computer. It's ¹²doing / making / having a strange noise.

Could you ¹³do / make / get me a favour and ¹⁴have / make / do a look at it for me?

B Sure, no problem. I'll just ¹⁵get / take / have a screwdriver.

A How do you ¹⁶take / go / get to school?

B I usually walk. It ¹⁷has / gets / takes about twenty minutes. But sometimes I ¹⁸have / go / take the bus.

6 Prefer Completa le battute di B usando prefer e le parole del riquadro.

red rock or blues rugby San Francisco snowboarding Thai food

0 A Do you like jazz music?

B It's OK, but I prefer rock or blues.

1 A Do you like Chinese food?

B It's OK, but

2 A Los Angeles is such an amazing city, isn't it?

B Yes, but

3 A Does your brother like football?

B Yes, but, actually.

4 A You can ski, can't you?

B Yes, I can. But

5 A Do your parents drink white wine?

B They do, but

7 Would prefer e would rather Completa le risposte usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

rather / have pasta prefer / eat a bit later prefer / go by train

rather / stay at home prefer / tea prefer / orange juice

0 Do you want some water? I'd prefer orange juice, if you've got some.

1 Shall we go by bus?, if possible.

2 How about pizza tonight?, if that's OK.

3 Shall we eat now?, if you don't mind.

4 Fancy a coffee?, actually.

5 Shall we go out?, if you don't mind.

- 8 Suggest e recommend** Leggi la richiesta di aiuto che Dalia ha scritto in un forum su internet e le risposte che ha ricevuto. Completa le frasi in cui riferisce a un amico le risposte ricevute.

Posted by **Dalia, Italy:**

Hi there, can anyone give me some simple tips for improving my English? Thanks.

- 0 Read lots of books in English. POSTED BY **TOM**, UK
- 1 Watch lots of films in English. POSTED BY **BRETT**, NEW YORK
- 2 Buy a good grammar book. POSTED BY **MARTA**, ITALY
- 3 Do an English course. POSTED BY **THIERRY**, FRANCE
- 4 Speak English as much as possible. POSTED BY **SAM**, UK
- 5 Spend some time in an English-speaking country. POSTED BY **METTE**, DENMARK
- 6 Get an English boyfriend! POSTED BY **DAVE**, ENGLAND

- 0 Tom suggests reading lots of books in English .
- 1 Brett suggests
- 2 Marta recommends that
- 3 Thierry suggests
- 4 Sam recommends that
- 5 Mette suggests
- 6 Dave suggests that !

- 9 Verbi con doppio complemento** Scegli l'alternativa corretta. In alcuni casi ci sono due risposte valide.

- 0 Alice What did you get **your boyfriend** for his birthday?
Cathy I got a shirt to him / him a shirt / a shirt him.
- 1 Alberto Can you pass **to me the sugar** / **the sugar me** / **me the sugar**?
Henri Sure. Here you are.
- 2 Yuko Did you do **your homework**?
Tamas Yes, I gave **it the teacher** / **to the teacher it** / **it to the teacher** this morning.
- 3 Jake You've got a new mobile!
Ben Yes, I gave **my old one to my brother** / **my old one my brother** / **my brother my old one**.
- 4 Diana I like your necklace!
Paola Gisella made **for me it** / **it for me** / **me it**.

- T 10 Varie strutture verbali** Traduci le frasi e le domande. Usa le parole in corsivo.

- 0 Ho ricevuto una macchina fotografica per il mio compleanno. **got**
I got a camera for my birthday.
- 1 Abbiamo inglese tre volte alla settimana. **have**
.....
- 2 Di che cosa è fatto il tuo anello? **made**
.....
- 3 Che cosa fai stasera? **doing**
.....
- 4 Ci vogliono dieci minuti in autobus per arrivare in centro città. **takes**
.....
- 5 Porti il tuo cellulare a scuola? **take**
.....
- 6 Non c'è latte. Esco a prenderne un po'. **get**
.....

He said he was hungry. She told me they were having a party.

A Say e tell

Say e *tell* si usano per riferire ciò che qualcuno dice (o ciò che scrive).

- i Quando non si vuole nominare la persona a cui si riferisce qualcosa, si usa *say*. Quando invece non si vuole nominare, si usa *tell*.

Mr Smith said we could leave.	Mr Smith told us we could leave.
I said you were ill.	I told the teacher you were ill.
She didn't say what had happened.	She didn't tell me what had happened.
Non He said me he was tired .	Non He told he was tired .

- ii Si può a volte usare *say + to me/us* ecc. Questo avviene di solito quando non si specifica che cosa è stato detto.

He said something to us, but we weren't listening. Did you say anything to Valeria?

- iii *That* si può usare nel discorso diretto. Non c'è una regola su quando usare *that* ed è spesso una scelta personale.

She said she was going home. o *She said that she was going home.*

B Cambiamento dei tempi verbali

Quando si riferisce il discorso diretto, a volte si cambia il tempo (presente → passato, *will/can/must* → *would/could/had to*, past simple → past perfect ecc.).

- i Si usa di norma il passato di *say* o *tell* (*He said ...*, *She told me ...*) e si cambia il tempo.

I'm feeling a bit tired.	She said she was feeling a bit tired.
I want to be a teacher.	He told me he wanted to be a teacher.
I've never been to the UK.	He told us he'd never been to the UK. (had never been)
I'll email you later.	She said she'd email me later. (would email)

- ii Tuttavia, quando si vuole sottolineare il fatto che qualcosa è ancora vero, rilevante o importante si può usare il presente di *say* o *tell* (*He says ...*, *She tells me ...*) e non si cambia il tempo.

I'm having a party.	He says he's having a party.
He lives in Paris.	Lorna tells me you live in Paris.
I'll be late.	She says she'll be late.

Nota che si può anche usare il passato senza cambiare il tempo.

She said she isn't working on Saturday.

C L'imperativo

Si usa l'infinito per riferire un imperativo, che viene introdotto da *tell*, non *say*.

Stop!	He told us to stop .
Don't be late.	He told us not to be late Non to not be late

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 A What did Juan say / tell to Alice?
B He said / told her he was going to be late.
- 1 A Did Roberto say / tell you what happened at the party?
B Yes, he said / told it was a disaster!
- 2 A Samantha says / tells that you're all going for a pizza tonight.
B Oh! Nobody said / told me!
- 3 A Did you say / tell anything to Liz?
B Not yet. I'll say / tell her this evening.
- 4 A The weather forecast told / said it was going to rain later.
B Oh! I'll say / tell Jenny. She's planning to play tennis.

2 Riferisci quanto ha dichiarato il calciatore Wade Moody durante un dopo-partita. Usa *He said* e cambia i tempi verbali.



- 0 It was a hard game.
- 1 England played well.
- 2 I think 2-1 is a fair result.
- 3 I'm looking forward to playing Italy.
- 4 Italy are a very good side.
- 5 I'm sure it'll be a great game.
- 6 I'm confident England will win.

0 He said it had been a hard game.

1

2

3

4

5

6

3 Guarda le figure e riferisci le informazioni usando *He/She/It says*. Ricorda di cambiare i pronomi (*I* → *she* ecc.) se necessario.

0 Will meet you in the café. Jane x

2 I've just been on a date with Jack! Claudia

1 Congratulations!
You've won the Super Euro Lotto!

3 Gone shopping. I'll be back around 5.30.
Tamas

0 There's a text message from Jane. She says she'll meet us at the café.

1 I've got an email.

2 I've got a text from Claudia.

3 Tamas has left a note.

4 Riferisci quanto ti è stato chiesto di fare.

0 Sit down! He told me to sit down.

3 Be quiet! He

1 Wait a minute! She

4 Go away! He

2 Don't be late! He

5 Don't press that button! She

A Uso e forma

È possibile riferire le domande usando verbi come *ask* (chiedere, domandare), *want to know* (voller sapere), e *wonder* (domandarsi/chiedersi).

He asked me what time it was.

I asked her how much it cost.

Darina wants to know if there's a café near here.

He wondered if we wanted to go for a pizza.

► **La stessa costruzione si usa anche per le altre domande indirette.**

Vedi unità 70.

Quando si vuole nominare la persona a cui si fa la domanda, si usa *ask*. Nota comunque che *ask* si può usare senza nominare la persona a cui si fa la domanda se questa è nota oppure se non è importante sapere di chi si tratta.

B Ordine delle parole

L'ordine delle parole è diverso da quello delle domande dirette. Il soggetto va prima del verbo e non si usa il verbo ausiliare *do*. Per le domande *yes/no*, si usa *if* oppure *whether*.

Where are you going?	He asked me where I was going.
How old is he?	She wondered how old he was.
When are we meeting?	Sam wants to know when we are meeting.
Did you see Harry?	She wanted to know if I'd seen Harry.



Nota che l'ordine delle parole anche nelle domande indirette, a differenza di quanto avviene in italiano, è fisso e non può essere variato.
She wondered where you were living . Si domandò dove tu vivessi. = Si domandò dove vivessi tu.

C Cambiamento dei tempi verbali

Per cambiare i tempi verbali nel caso delle domande al discorso indiretto valgono le stesse regole per il discorso indiretto introdotto da *say* o *tell* (vedi unità 97, sezione B). Nota che il tempo verbale rimane al presente quando la domanda indiretta è introdotta da *He/She wants to know if ...*

D Richieste ed imperativi

Si usa l'infinito per riferire richieste e forme imperative.

Can you help me?	Steve's asked me to help him.
Please don't be late.	He asked us not to be late.
Can I sit by the window?	I asked to sit by the window.
Will you email me?	He wants me to email him.

1 Immagina di essere stato a un appuntamento al buio e di aver risposto ad alcune domande. Riferiscile a un amico usando i verbi dichiarativi in corsivo. In queste frasi viene piuttosto spontaneo cambiare il tempo verbale.

0 'What are your hobbies?'

He asked me what my hobbies were. ask

'I like sport, reading and music.'

I told him I liked sport, reading and music. tell

1 'What kind of music do you listen to?'

..... want to know

'I listen to all kinds of music.'

say

2 'Do you have a favourite band?'

ask

'My all-time favourite band is the Red Hot Chili Peppers.'

tell

3 'Do you play computer games?'

..... want to know

'I can't stand them.'

say

4 'What car does your dad drive?'

..... wonder

'He's got a sports car.'

tell

5 'Do you want to go for a pizza?'

ask

'I'm not hungry.'

tell

6 'Do you want to go on another date?'

ask

'I'll think about it.'

say

2 Riferisci le domande usando ... *wants to know* In queste frasi viene piuttosto spontaneo non cambiare il tempo verbale.

0 Alessandro 'What time does the party start?'

Alessandro wants to know what time the party starts.

1 Bella 'What time are we meeting?'

.....

2 Dino 'Is Elisa going to the party?'

.....

3 Charles 'Do we need to dress up?'

.....

3 Riferisci queste richieste usando *me* e i verbi in corsivo.

0 Stay there! He asked me to stay there. asked

1 Can you help me please? She asked

2 Will you text me later? He wants

3 Don't be late! Billy asked

4 Email the photo to Jane. Oscar wants

A Uso

Say, tell e ask riportano generalmente ciò che viene detto in modo neutro. Comunque, quando si riferisce ciò che qualcuno dice, spesso si usano dei verbi che conferiscono una sfumatura di significato ben precisa.

Per esempio:

He warned us not to do it. Ci ammonì di non farlo.

She threatened to tell the teacher. Minacciò di dirlo all'insegnante.

Sara persuaded us to go with her. Sara ci persuase ad andare con lei.

B Forma

I verbi che introducono il discorso indiretto possono avere diverse costruzioni.

Alcuni dei più comuni ed utili sono:

i Senza complemento

- verbo + infinito: *agree, ask, claim, demand, offer, promise, refuse, threaten, warn*
We offered to help them. Paul promised not to be late.
 - verbo + -ing: *admit, apologize for, deny, insist on, mention, suggest*
He denied breaking the window. Frank suggested going for a coffee.
 - verbo + frase introdotta da *that* (esplicito o隐含的)
- admit, agree, claim, complain, confirm, deny, explain, insist, mention, predict, promise, reveal, say, suggest, warn*
He mentioned that he would be late. She insisted everything was OK.

ii Con complemento

- verbo + complemento + infinito
advise, beg, convince, encourage, invite, order, persuade, recommend, remind, tell, urge
I convinced her to buy it. They reminded me to book the taxi.
- verbo + complemento + preposizione + -ing
accuse ... of, congratulate ... on, talk ... into, thank ... for, warn ... against
He thanked them for helping him. I talked him into coming with us.
- verbo + complemento + frase introdotta da *that* (esplicito o隐含的)
assure, convince, inform, reassure, remind, tell
He assured me it would be OK. They convinced me that it was a good idea.

Nota che alcuni verbi possono avere più di una costruzione.

C Cambiamento dei tempi verbali

Per cambiare i tempi verbali, nel caso dei verbi che introducono il discorso indiretto studiati in questa unità, valgono le stesse regole per il discorso indiretto introdotto da *say* o *tell* (vedi unità 97, sezione B).

1 Immagina che ti siano stati rivolti questi commenti. Riferiscili usando le parole date e *me* se necessario.

0 'Everything will be OK. Don't worry.' Jenny reassured *me* that *everything would be OK*.

1 'I'll call you later. I promise.' Danny promised

2 'Do you want to go with us?' Sue invited

3 'I didn't break the window.' Toby denied

- 4 'I'll help you with your homework.' Daniela has offered
 5 'You deleted the file, didn't you?' William accused
 6 'I broke the window. I'm Sorry!' Dan apologized for
 7 'Remember to email Jim.' Tony reminded
 8 'Go on. Speak to him!' Sally encouraged

2 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

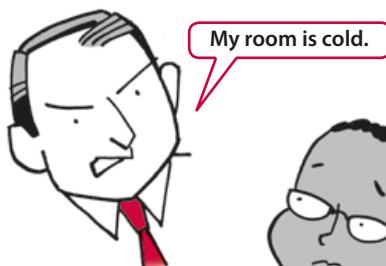
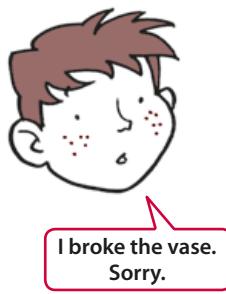
- 0 I'm going for a walk. Roger's suggested it. Roger's suggested going for walk.
 1 I'm going out tonight. Jim's persuaded me.
 2 Johan won't talk about football. He's agreed.
 3 I'm going to take the exam. Marta's convinced me.
 4 Pascal wouldn't tell me. He refused.
 5 It's not going to rain. Gianni assures me.
 6 We're going out tonight. Did Elena mention it?

3 Riferisci quanto è stato detto nelle figure usando i verbi del riquadro al past simple.

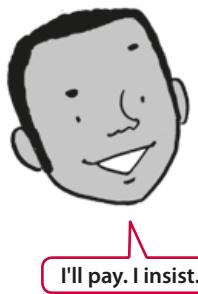
admit advise complain demand insist on suggest



- 0 He demanded to speak to the manager. 3

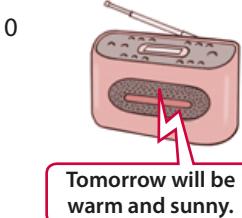


- 1 4



- 2 5

- 1 Say e tell** Riferisci le seguenti informazioni. Ricordati di cambiare i pronomi (*I* → *she* ecc.) se necessario.



0

1

2

3

Tomorrow will be
warm and sunny.

I'm going to
be late.

It's Tara's birthday
next week.



0 The weather forecast says *it will be warm and sunny tomorrow.*

1 Letta says *.....*.

2 Hi Tara. Serena tells me *.....*.

3 Paula says *.....*.

- 2 Said/told e domande indirette** Immagina di aver sostenuto un colloquio per un lavoro in un negozio di dischi. Riferisci le domande che ti sono state fatte e le tue risposte. Ricordati di cambiare i tempi verbali.

0 Interviewer Why do you want to work in a music shop?

You I'm really interested in music and I like meeting people.

She asked me *why I wanted to work* *.....* in a music shop.

I told her *that I was really interested in music and that I liked* *.....* meeting people.

1 Interviewer Have you worked in a shop before?

You I've worked in a supermarket.

She wanted to know *.....* before.

I told her *.....* in a supermarket.

2 Interviewer How many hours can you work each weekend?

You I'm available to work on Saturday afternoons.

She asked me *.....* each weekend.

I told her *.....* on Saturday afternoons.

3 Interviewer Have you got any references from previous jobs?

You I can give you a reference from my job in the supermarket.

She asked *.....* from previous jobs.

I said *.....* from my job in the supermarket.

4 Interviewer Do you know a lot about music?

You I know quite a lot, especially about pop music.

She wanted to know *.....* about music.

I told her *.....*, especially about pop music.

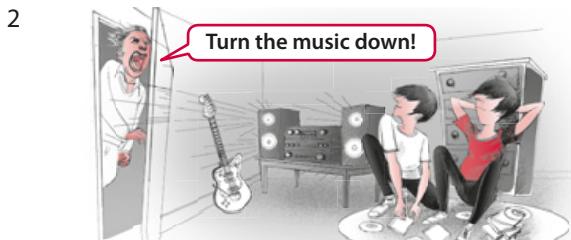
5 Interviewer Do you know which song is Number One in the chart?

You I don't know.

She wondered *.....* Number One in the chart.

I said *.....*!

3 Richieste ed imperativi Guarda le figure e completa le frasi in cui riferisci che cosa è stato detto.



- 0 The teacher wants us to be quiet.
1 The receptionist has asked us
2 Your dad wants us
3 My mum told me

4 Altri verbi che introducono il discorso indiretto Riferisci queste citazioni famose.

- 0 'People will soon get tired of staring at a wooden box every night.'
Referring to television in 1946, film producer Darryl Zanuck predicted
that people would soon get tired of staring at a wooden box every night.
- 1 'Man will never set foot on the moon.'
In 1967, scientist Lee de Forest predicted
- 2 'We don't like their music.'
After rejecting The Beatles in 1962, Decca Records explained
- 3 'I never think about the future.'
Albert Einstein once revealed
- 4 'There is no reason why anyone would want a computer in their home.'
In 1977, businessman Ken Olsen suggested
- 5 'Everything that can be invented has been invented.'
In 1899, the US Office of Patents claimed

FCE

5 Altri verbi che introducono il discorso indiretto Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 Gianna said she didn't take the book. *denied*
Gianna denied taking the book.
- 1 Carlo said he was sorry that he was late. *apologized*
Carlo late.
- 2 Katie said that she would do the washing-up. *offered*
Katie the washing-up.
- 3 Imelda thought we should go for a walk. *suggested*
Imelda a walk.
- 4 Belinda said she would definitely phone later. *promised*
Belinda later.
- 5 Emilio said Lucio broke the window. *accused*
Emilio the window.
- 6 Rosalia said I should talk to the teacher. *advised*
Rosalia to the teacher.

A Uso

Il periodo ipotetico generale (*zero conditional*) e di primo tipo (*first conditional*) indica situazioni reali o possibili. Si usa in diversi modi, ma gli usi più comuni sono per parlare di:

- i** Fatti e situazioni che sono sempre vere (*zero conditional*).
If you heat water to 100° C, it boils. If you're running out of ink, the red light flashes.
- ii** Situazioni presenti,
If you're tired, you should go to bed. If you've finished your work, you can leave.
- iii** Possibili situazioni future (*first conditional*).
If it rains, we'll stay at home. If you work hard, you'll pass the exam.

B Forma

In ogni periodo ipotetico, c'è una frase subordinata introdotta da *if* (*if-clause*) ed una frase principale.

- i** Nella frase con *if*, si usa *if* + tempo presente o *going to*.
If Peter calls, will you take a message? If it's a nice day, we'll have a picnic. If we're going to see Chris tomorrow, we can ask for his email address.

Nota che nella frase con *if* non si usano *will* né altri modali.
If I see him, I'll talk to him. Non If I'll see him, I'll talk to him.

- ii** Nella frase principale, la struttura dipende da ciò che si vuole esprimere.
 - Si usa il presente per parlare di fatti o situazioni che sono sempre veri.
If you heat water to 100°C, it boils. If you get over 50%, you pass the exam.
 - Per parlare di fatti presenti, si usa un tempo presente.
If you need some sugar, it's in the cupboard. If they win this game, they've won the league.
 - Per dare istruzioni o per dare suggerimenti, si può usare l'imperativo.
If you're cold, close the window. If you miss the bus, get a taxi. If you don't like it, don't eat it.
 - Per parlare di situazioni possibili nel futuro si usa *will*, altri verbi modali (*can*, *might* ecc.) oppure *be going to*.
If I see Danny, I'll give him your message. If we miss the bus, we can get a taxi. If we don't hurry up, we're going to be late.
 - Per formulare le domande, la frase principale viene trasformata in interrogativa, mentre la subordinata con *if* non cambia.
If you're hungry, why don't we go for a pizza?

C Ordine della subordinata

La subordinata con *if* può essere usata all'inizio o alla fine del periodo. Quando si trova all'inizio del periodo, è seguita dalla virgola. Quando invece si trova alla fine del periodo, non è mai seguita dalla virgola.

If you're hungry, let's go for a pizza. Let's go for a pizza if you're hungry.

D Unless

Unless ha un significato simile a *if... not* (se... non/a meno che).

Unless you listen, you won't understand. A meno che tu non ascolti, non capirai.

1 Completa le battute di B usando i verbi tra parentesi alla forma corretta: present simple o will.

- 0 A I'll come to the cinema with you tonight if it's OK.
B Sure, I'll call for (call for) you around 6.30 if you like (like).
- 1 A If you don't hurry up, we'll miss the bus.
B Don't worry. We (get) a taxi if we (miss) the bus.
- 2 A I'll be amazed if Simon doesn't pass his driving test.
B Well, if he (not pass), he (not be) very pleased.
- 3 A I'm going to Belinda's house this evening if I have time.
B Oh, if you (see) her sister, (you / give) her this book?
- 4 A Shall we go to the beach if it's nice at the weekend?
B Good idea. I (invite) Mary along if that (be) OK.
- 5 A What happens if you're late for class?
B Our teacher's quite cool. She usually (not mind) if we (arrive) late.
- 6 A What does it mean if the red light comes on?
B If the red light (be) on, it (mean) the power is low.

2 Completa le frasi con *I can* o *can you* e le espressioni del riquadro.

get me some milk give him a message give me a hand have your old one let me know

- 0 If you see Harry, can you give him a message?
- 1 If you go to the supermarket,
- 2 If you get a new mobile,
- 3 If you're going to be late,
- 4 If you're not busy,

3 Completa le frasi con la forma corretta dell'imperativo.

- 0 If you miss the bus, get a taxi.
- 1 If you're too hot, the window.
- 2 If you're feeling tired, to bed.
- 3 If I'm not in when you phone, a message.
- 4 If you don't like the pasta, don't it.

4 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

- 0 Let's go out tonight if we don't get too much homework.
Let's go out tonight unless we get too much homework.
- 1 You can't get in to the party if you don't have an invitation.
..... unless
- 2 If I don't ring you, I'll see you in the café at 4.30.
Unless
- 3 If we don't get delayed, we'll arrive at about 5.30.
..... unless

A Uso

Il periodo ipotetico di secondo tipo (*second conditional*) si usa per parlare di situazioni ipotetiche nel presente, ad esempio quando ci si immagina una situazione diversa da quella reale. Questo tipo di periodo ipotetico si usa anche per parlare di situazioni future improbabili.

If I could afford it, I'd get a new computer.

Se fossi in te, mi comprerei un computer nuovo.

If I were you, I'd get a haircut.

Se fossi in te, mi taglierei i capelli.

B Forma**i Frase con if (if-clause)**

In inglese non esiste il modo condizionale. Per indicare che un'azione presente o futura è irreale o ipotetica si usa un tempo passato. Quindi, si usa *if + tempo passato* nella frase con *if*.

If I won the lottery, I'd buy a house. If I could, I'd go on holiday tomorrow.

If it wasn't raining, I'd go for a walk.

Nota che nella frase con *if* non si usa *would*.

If I had more time, I'd read a lot more.

Non *If I would have more time, I'd read a lot more.*

ii Frase principale

Nella frase principale, si usa *would* o *wouldn't*. *Would* è normalmente contratto in *'d*, specialmente nel parlato e nella scrittura informale

If I won the lottery, I'd buy a house. If I could, I'd go on holiday tomorrow.

If it wasn't raining, I'd go for a walk.

Si possono anche usare altri verbi modali, specie *could* e *might*.

If it wasn't raining, we could go out.

C If I was/were ...**i Con If I/he/she/it si può usare was o were.**

Alcuni sostengono che *If I/he/she/it were ...* è più corretto, ma normalmente ciò è legato alla scelta del parlante.

If I was a millionaire, I'd buy a yacht. o *If I were a millionaire, I'd buy a yacht.*

ii If I were you, I'd ...

Si usa *If I were you, I'd ...* (Se fossi in te...) per dare consigli.

If I were you, I'd get a part-time job. Are you tired? I'd go to bed if I were you.

D Ordine della subordinata

La subordinata con *if* può essere usata all'inizio o alla fine del periodo.

Quando si trova all'inizio del periodo, è seguita dalla virgola. Quando invece si trova alla fine del periodo, non è mai seguita dalla virgola.

If I could afford it, I'd get a new mobile. I'd get a new mobile if I could afford it.

1 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la struttura *If..., would ...* .

- 0 I want to buy a new mobile, but I can't afford it.
If I could afford it, I'd buy a new mobile.
- 1 We want to go for a walk, but it's raining.
.....
- 2 I want to get some money out, but I can't find an ATM.
.....
- 3 I want to email you, but my computer isn't working.
.....
- 4 She wants to go out tonight, but she has to babysit.
.....

2 Che cosa faresti in queste situazioni? Dai dei consigli iniziando con *If I were you, I'd ...* .

You are in: THE CHAT ROOM

- 0 A friend of my parents dropped a lottery ticket at my house. It has won €100.
What would you do – tell him or keep the money?
If I were you, I'd keep the money.
- 1 I found a wallet with €200 in it. What would you do – keep it or take it to the police?
.....
- 2 I am the best at science in my class. Some classmates want to give me money to copy my homework. What would you do – accept the money or tell the teacher?
.....
- 3 My boyfriend and I split up last week. He wants me to give back a ring he bought for me.
What would you do – keep the ring or give it back?
.....

3 Scrivi delle frasi vere per te. Inizia con *If I could ...* .

- 0 go to any sports event
If I could go to any sports event, I'd go to the Olympics.
- 1 visit any country
.....
- 2 have any job
.....
- 3 have any car
.....
- 4 spend a day with a famous person
.....

4 Scrivi tre cose che faresti se vincessi un milione di euro alla lotteria.

- 0 *I'd buy a sports car.*
.....
- 1 _____
.....
- 2 _____
.....
- 3 _____
.....

A Uso

Il periodo ipotetico di terzo tipo (*third conditional*) si usa per parlare di situazioni ipotetiche nel passato che però non si sono realizzate.

If I'd seen Barry, I would have spoken to him.

If you hadn't worked so hard, you wouldn't have passed the exam.

B Forma: frase con if (If-clause)

Si indica che una situazione è irreale o ipotetica usando il past perfect.

Quindi, nella subordinata con *if*, si usa *if + past perfect*.

If I'd got up earlier, I wouldn't have missed the bus.

If we hadn't taken a map, we would have got lost.

Nota che non si usa *would* nella frase con *if*.

If I had known, I would have told you. Non *If I would have known, I would have told you.*

C Forma: frase principale

i Nella frase principale, si usa *would(n't) have + past participle*.

If I'd got up earlier, I wouldn't have missed the bus.

If we hadn't taken a map, we would have got lost.

ii Nota che nel parlato *would* è spesso contratto in '*d*' e *have* è spesso contratto in '*'ve*'.

If we hadn't taken a map, we'd've got lost.

iii Nella principale, si possono anche usare altri verbi modali come *could have* e *might have*.

If I'd seen Peter, I could have asked him about the party.

D Condizionali misti (Mixed conditionals)

i Si usano talvolta per parlare di una situazione passata, le cui conseguenze persistono ancora nel presente; in questo caso si usa *would + forma base* nella frase principale.

If Inter had won their game last night, they'd be in first place in the league.

If I'd gone to bed earlier last night, I wouldn't be feeling so tired now.

ii Si usano talvolta per parlare di una situazione passata che è una conseguenza di un fatto che è ancora valido nel presente; in questo caso si usa *If + past simple*.

If I didn't like them, I wouldn't have bought their new album.

E Ordine della subordinata

La subordinata con *if* può essere usata all'inizio o alla fine del periodo. Quando si trova all'inizio del periodo, è seguita dalla virgola. Quando invece si trova alla fine del periodo, non è mai seguita dalla virgola.

If I'd seen her, I'd have said 'hello'. *I'd have said 'hello' if I'd seen her.*

1 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi iniziando con *If*. Le situazioni e le conseguenze corrispondenti si collocano entrambe nel passato.

0 I didn't see Thomas, so I didn't talk to him. *If I'd seen Thomas, I would've talked to him.*

1 We didn't take a map and we got lost.

2 She worked hard and she passed the exam.

3 I didn't have her mobile number, so I couldn't text her.

4 Sally didn't know about the party so she didn't go.

5 I missed the bus, so I was late for school.

2 Scrivi delle frasi in cui spieghi come avrebbero potuto essere differenti questi eventi del passato.
Usa il periodo ipotetico di terzo tipo.

0 Isaac Newton went for a walk in an orchard. → He saw an apple fall from a tree. →

He formulated the theory of gravity.

If Isaac Newton hadn't gone for a walk in an orchard, he wouldn't have seen an apple fall from a tree. If he hadn't seen the apple fall from a tree, he wouldn't have formulated the theory of gravity.

1 Sting got fed up with being a teacher. → He left his job to form the pop group The Police. →

He became rich and famous.

If Sting hadn't got fed up with being a teacher,

2 Bill Gates didn't enjoy studying law. → He dropped out of university to start a computer company. → He became a billionaire by the time he was 30.

3 The crew of the Titanic didn't see the iceberg in time. → They hit it. → The ship sank. →
1523 lives were lost.

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi iniziando con *If*.... Le frasi esprimono una conseguenza presente di eventi passati, oppure una conseguenza passata di una condizione stabile.

0 You lost the key, so we can't get into the house.

If you hadn't lost the key, we would be able to get into the house.

1 You stayed up all night and you're feeling tired now.

2 Alan wasn't listening, so he doesn't know what to do.

3 I'm hungry because I didn't have breakfast.

4 I like their music so I bought their album.

5 She got the job because she speaks perfect English.

4 Abbina le due metà di queste citazioni famose.

1 If God had intended men to fly,

2 If I had asked my customers what they wanted,

3 If General Motors had kept up with technology like the computer industry has,

a they would have said 'a faster horse'. (Henry Ford, founder of Ford Motors)

b he would have given us wings. (anonymous)

c we would all be driving \$25 cars that get 1000 miles per gallon. (Bill Gates, founder of Microsoft)

I wish I was richer. I wish it would stop raining. If only he hadn't seen me!

A Wish

Dopo *wish* (volere, magari) si usa un tempo passato.

- i Per esprimere un desiderio attuale, si usa una forma del tempo passato dopo *I wish*.
I wish I had more money. Magari avessi più soldi.
I wish it wasn't raining. Magari non piovesse.
- ii Per esprimere il desiderio che qualcosa si verifichi o cambi, si usa *would*.
 Inoltre, si usa spesso *would* per esprimere fastidio ed irritazione.
I wish it would stop raining. Magari smettesse di piovere.
I wish you'd ask before you borrow my things.
Vorrei che tu me lo chiedessi prima di prendere le mie cose.
- iii Per esprimere invece un desiderio al passato, si usa il past perfect.
I wish I hadn't eaten so much - I feel sick.
Sto malissimo. Se almeno non avessi mangiato così tanto.
I wish I'd done more revision for the exam. Se avessi ripassato di più per l'esame!

B If only

If only ha un significato analogo a *wish*, ma di norma ha valore più enfatico.

Dopo la frase introdotta da *if only*, si può avere anche un'altra frase.

If only I didn't have to go to the dentist. Se non dovessi andare dal dentista!

If only I'd been listening, I'd know what to do. Se avessi ascoltato, saprei che cosa fare.

1 Ci sono alcuni aspetti della propria vita che ad Alistair non piacciono.

Riscrivi le sue frasi iniziando con le parole date.

- 0 I live with my parents.
I wish I didn't live with my parents......
- 1 I share a bedroom with my brother.
I wish.....
- 2 I don't have my own TV.
I wish.....
- 3 I have to go to school.
If only.....
- 4 It rains all the time.
I wish.....
- 5 We're going to Disneyland in the summer.
I really wish.....

2 Alistair è stato a una festa e rimpiange alcune cose che ha fatto o non ha fatto.

Riscrivi le sue frasi usando le parole date.

- 0 I ate too much. I wish I hadn't eaten so much.
- 1 I sang karaoke. I wish.....
- 2 I didn't speak to Francesca. If only.....
- 3 I danced with Beth. If only.....
- 4 I didn't enjoy the party. I wish.....

3 Che cosa dici per esprimere la tua irritazione? Usa *I wish ... would(n't)*

- 0 Your sister never asks before she uses your phone.
I wish my sister would ask before she uses my phone!

1 Your sister listens to her MP3 player all the time.

2 Your phone won't stop ringing.

3 Your parents treat you like a child.

4 Your parents embarrass you in public.

5 Your brother never tells you when someone leaves you a message.

4 Guarda le figure e completa i pensieri di queste persone. Usa *I wish* e i verbi del riquadro.

arrive remember have not / rain

- 0 *I wish I had* a car.
1 right now.
2 my umbrella.
3 the bus



be not / steal visit

- 4 that car.
5 my cell bigger.
6 my friends and family
..... me sometimes.



ask like stay talk

- 7 the music.
8 someone me to dance.
9 someone to me.
10 at home.



5 Scrivi tre desideri relativi alla tua vita usando *I wish*.

- 0 *I wish I could play the piano.*
1
2
3

1 Condizionali Completa i dialoghi usando i suggerimenti dei riquadri.

be – go not buy – have do – win not leave – be not rain – can go

- 0 Tom I'm really tired.
Jules If I were you, I'd go to bed.
- 1 Nic Hurry up! If we now, we late.
Carla OK, I'm coming.
- 2 Flora What you if you the lottery?
Erica I'd buy a big house with a swimming pool and a sports car.
- 3 Dino I haven't got any money.
Enzo Well, if you all those magazines, you some left.
- 4 Enrico If it, we for a walk.
Lena Actually, it looks like it might stop soon. There's some blue sky over there.

be – come finish – can go go – be not stay up – not feel not worry – be

- 5 Carlo Can we leave the class now?
Teacher Yes. If you all your work, you
- 6 Alex I'm exhausted today.
Mother Well, if you all night playing computer games, you so tired now, would you?
- 7 Alan I'm so nervous about my driving test.
Belinda Oh, I if I you. You'll be fine.
- 8 Teacher If you on the school trip next week, there a meeting this afternoon to discuss the arrangements.
Student What time is the meeting?
Teacher 2.15. If you busy at 2.15, to see me in my office tomorrow.

2 Condizionali Completa le notizie giornalistiche con la forma corretta dei verbi tra parentesi.**News in brief****€50 million jackpot unclaimed**

If you ⁰bought (buy) a lottery ticket six months ago, you have (have) until midnight on Friday to check if you are the lucky winner of a €50 million jackpot. There is a six-month deadline for claiming prizes and if the jackpot ¹ (remain) unclaimed, the money (go) to charity. The winning ticket was bought in Rome.

120 not out

The oldest man in Britain is celebrating his 120th birthday today. Charles Mitchell believes his long life is down to not worrying and having no regrets. 'If I ² (can live) my life over again, I (do) everything exactly the same,' he said.

Lucky dog inherits \$12m fortune

An American business woman has left all her \$12 million estate to her pet dog, Trouble. The human members of Lily Holmes' family inherited nothing at all. 'If that ³ (be) my mother's dying wish, then we (have to) accept it,' said her son, Robert. Trouble, and the money, will be looked after by Ms Holmes' best friend.

Pilots slept on flight

A Hawaiian airline has dismissed two pilots who fell asleep during a flight. Air traffic controllers realized something was wrong when the aircraft passed its destination and did not turn back. It took 17 minutes to wake the pilots. 'If we ⁴ (not be able) to wake them, the plane (run out) of fuel and eventually crashed,' said an airport spokesman.

Walker uses mobile as torch

A walker who was lost on a Scottish mountain as darkness fell crawled five miles to safety on his hands and knees using the light from his mobile phone as a torch. Peter Cameron, 24, was wearing only a T-shirt as the temperature dropped to minus ten degrees. The area is very remote and there was no mobile phone signal. 'If I ⁵ (stay) on the mountain, I (freeze) to death,' Mr Cameron said.

3 **If I were you** Dai qualche consiglio usando *If I were you* e le espressioni del riquadro.

ask him to go for a pizza get a part-time job hide it get a new one
go to bed take it to the garage buy her some flowers

- 0 I'm exhausted. *If I were you, I'd go to bed.*
- 1 I never have any money.
- 2 My mobile's about five years old.
- 3 My scooter's making a terrible noise.
- 4 I really like Guido, the new student.
- 5 My brother's always using my MP3 player.
- 6 I forgot my girlfriend's birthday.

4 **Imperativi e condizionali** Dai qualche consiglio usando l'imperativo e le espressioni del riquadro.

ask the teacher close the window not eat it get something to eat
take an umbrella take some painkillers not buy it

- 0 I'm cold. *If you're cold, close the window.*
- 1 I'm hungry.
- 2 I don't understand.
- 3 It's too expensive.
- 4 It's going to rain.
- 5 I've got a headache.
- 6 I don't like the salad.

5 **Unless** Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

0 You can't go to the party if you aren't invited. *unless*

You can't go to the party *unless you're* invited.

1 We'll go for a walk unless it's raining this afternoon. *if*

We'll go for a walk this afternoon.

2 I'll arrive at about 2.30 if the train isn't delayed. *unless*

I'll arrive at about 2.30 delayed.

3 I'm going to go out tonight unless we get a lot of homework. *if*

I'm going to go out tonight a lot of homework.

4 Unless you hear from me, let's meet at 6.30. *if*

....., let's meet at 6.30.

5 If it isn't an emergency, don't call 999. *unless*

....., don't call 999.

6 **Wish** Completa i pensieri dello studente usando il verbo tra parentesi al tempo corretto.

0 I wish the lesson *was* (be) more interesting.

1 I wish I (not be) here.

2 I wish I (play) football with the other boys.

3 I wish I (do) my homework last night.

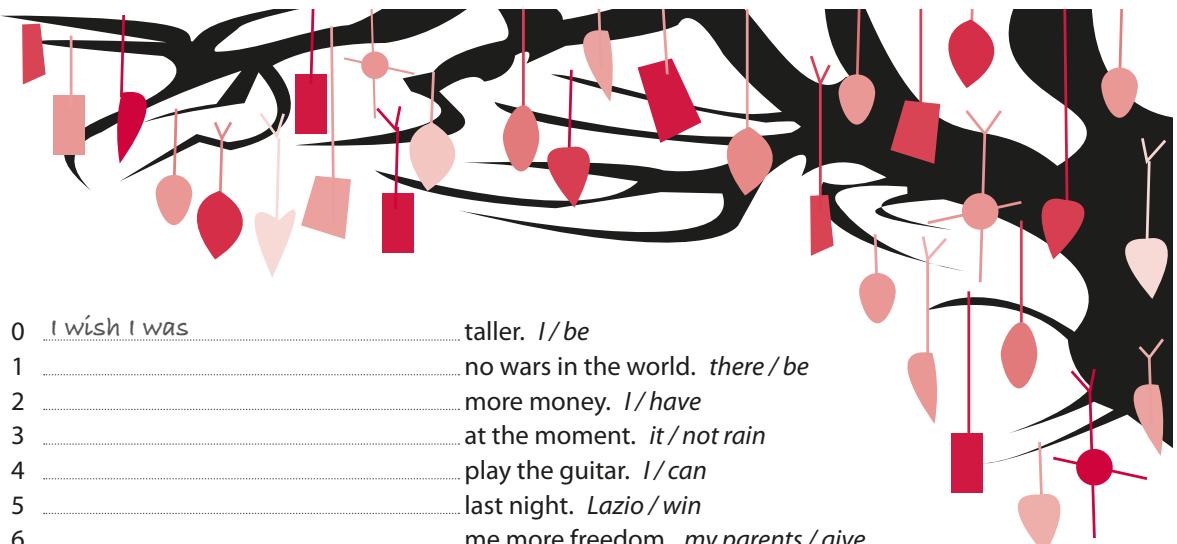
4 If only we (not have to) go to school.

5 I wish the bell (ring).

6 I wish I (can go) home.



- 7 Wish** In Giappone è un'usanza comune scrivere un desiderio e appenderlo a un 'albero dei desideri'. Completa i seguenti desideri usando *I wish* e i suggerimenti in corsivo.



- 0 I wish I was taller. *I / be*
1 no wars in the world. *there / be*
2 more money. *I / have*
3 at the moment. *it / not rain*
4 play the guitar. *I / can*
5 last night. *Lazio / win*
6 me more freedom. *my parents / give*

- 8 Wish** Scrivi un tuo desiderio da appendere all'albero dei desideri.

A large, light-colored rectangular box with three horizontal dashed lines inside, intended for writing a personal wish. To the right of the box is a stylized red drawing of a tree branch with a knot in the trunk.

T 9 Condizionali, if I were you e wish Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Se fossi in forma, giocherei a tennis più spesso.
If I were fitter, I'd play tennis more often.
- 1 Se l'autobus non fosse stato in ritardo, sarei arrivato in orario.
- 2 Che cosa faresti se trovassi un portafoglio per la strada?
- 3 Se fa caldo durante il fine settimana, andremo in spiaggia.
- 4 Avrei passato l'esame se avessi lavorato più sodo.
- 5 Vorrei che smettesse di piovere.
- 6 Se fossi in te, mi farei tagliare i capelli.

He's got two cars. There's a lot of traffic. I caught a fish. I don't eat fish.

Come in italiano, anche in inglese i nomi possono essere numerabili o non numerabili.

- i I nomi numerabili si possono contare. Hanno due forme: singolare e plurale. Si possono usare con *a/an* o con un numero.

*I've got three brothers and a sister. Have you got a scooter?
My parents have got hundreds of CDs.*

- ii I nomi non numerabili non si possono contare. Hanno una sola forma. Non si possono usare con *a/an* o con un numero.

We need bread and milk. I love music. I've got a lot of homework.

Nota che si possono usare *the, no, some, any, a lot of/lots of* e gli aggettivi possessivi (*my, your* ecc.) con nomi sia numerabili sia non numerabili.

*Look at the cars. Look at the traffic.
Is this your car? Is this your luggage?*

- Vedi unità 108, 114, 115 e 121 per altri usi di *the, no, some, any, a lot of e aggettivi possessivi*.

Alcuni nomi possono essere sia numerabili sia non numerabili, a seconda del contesto in cui li si usa. Generalmente i nomi sono numerabili quando si riferiscono ad un oggetto individuale ma sono non numerabili quando si riferiscono a un materiale, a una sostanza o a un'idea astratta.

Numerabile

a coffee (un caffè)
an exercise (un esercizio)
an experience (un'esperienza)
a fish (un pesce)
a glass (un bicchiere)
a hair (un capello)
an iron (un ferro)
a light (una luce)
a paper (un giornale)
a space (uno spazio)
a sport (uno sport)
a stone (una pietra)
a/the time (una/la volta)
a wood (un bosco)

Non numerabile

coffee (caffè)
exercise (esercizio)
experience (esperienza)
fish (pesce)
glass (vetro)
hair (capelli)
iron (ferro)
light (luce)
paper (carta)
space (spazio)
sport (sport)
stone ('stone' = misura di peso 6,35 kg)
time (tempo)
wood (legna)

Did you buy a paper today?

Hai comprato un giornale oggi?

I need some paper to write a phone number on.

Ho bisogno di un po' di carta per scrivere un numero telefonico.



Alcuni tra i nomi non numerabili in inglese, ma numerabili in italiano, sono:
accommodation, advice, baggage, furniture, homework, information, luck, luggage, money, news, progress, spaghetti, traffic, travel, weather, work.

1 Scrivi accanto a questi nomi se sono numerabili (C) oppure non numerabili (U).

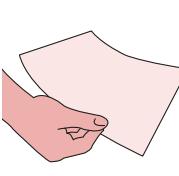
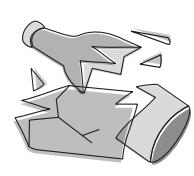
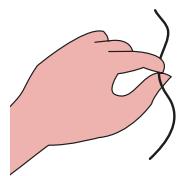
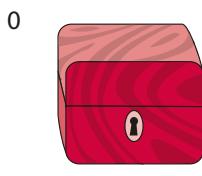
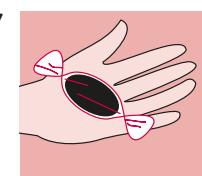
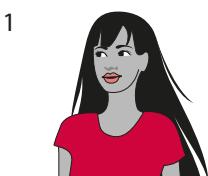
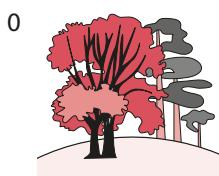
- | | | |
|-----------------------|---------------------|--------------------|
| 0 car <u>C</u> | 6 information | 13 furniture |
| 0 money <u>U</u> | 7 bag | 14 homework |
| 1 food | 8 luggage | 15 equipment |
| 2 music | 9 work | 16 journey |
| 3 accommodation | 10 job | 17 traffic |
| 4 euro | 11 weather | 18 bus |
| 5 advice | 12 chair | 19 luck |

2 Completa le frasi con la forma adatta del nome in corsivo.

- 0 We had great accommodation *accommodation*
- 0 We had great rooms *room*
- 1 I've got lots of *luggage*
- 2 I've got lots of *bag*
- 3 The gym had lots of fitness *machine*
- 4 The gym has lots of *equipment*
- 5 Sam gave me some good *advice*
- 6 Anna made some good *suggestion*
- 7 Filippo had some good *idea*
- 8 Amata gave me some useful *information*
- 9 The students do lots of *test*
- 10 The university does a lot of *research*
- 11 I've had lots of *job*
- 12 I've got lots of *work*
- 13 We ate lots of *spaghetti*
- 14 We had some great *meal*
- 15 Sara has got long blonde *hair*
- 16 And she's got blue *eye*
- 17 I've done all the *homework*
- 18 I've done all the grammar *exercise*

3 Che cosa vedi nelle figure? Usa le parole del riquadro, una volta con *a/an* e una volta senza *a/an*.

chocolate wood glass black hair paper



- | | | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|-----------------------|
| 0 There's <u>a wood</u> over there. | 3 Can I have ? | 7 Do you want ? |
| 0 There's <u>a wood</u> over there. | 4 There's on the floor. | 8 I love |
| 1 She's got | 5 Did you buy ? | |
| 2 It's | 6 Do you need ? | |

city → cities person → people The news is exciting. I've bought a pair of jeans.

A Regole ortografiche

Le regole ortografiche generali per la formazione del plurale sono:

la maggior parte dei nomi

aggiungono -s car → cars school → schools

nomi che terminano in -s, -ss, -sh, -ch, -o, -x

aggiungono -es bus → buses church → churches

nomi che terminano in -f, -fe

f/fe → -ves leaf → leaves life → lives

nomi che terminano in consonante + y

y → -ies city → cities lorry → lorries

nomi che terminano in vocale + y

aggiungono -s monkey → monkeys

chimney → chimneys

B Plurali irregolari

Ci sono numerosi plurali irregolari in inglese. Alcuni dei più comuni sono:

child → children foot → feet man → men person → people series → series

species → species tooth → teeth woman → women

Anche alcuni nomi di animali hanno il plurale irregolare: deer → deer fish → fish (o fishes)

goose → geese mouse → mice ox → oxen sheep → sheep

► Vedi appendice 1, pagina 410, per un elenco più dettagliato di plurali irregolari.

C Nomi che terminano in -s

Alcuni nomi hanno sempre una -s finale. Alcuni sono singolari, altri plurali.

i Alcuni nomi che hanno -s finale ma sono singolari:

athletics economics gymnastics maths/mathematics news physics politics statistics
Maths is boring. The news is interesting, isn't it?

ii Alcuni nomi che hanno -s finale ma sono plurali:

binoculars clothes goods jeans shorts scissors (sun)glasses tights trousers
Where are my clothes? Your trousers are dirty.

Nota che i nomi elencati sopra sono tutti non numerabili, per cui non possono essere preceduti da *a/an* oppure un numero.

I've got some scissors. Non I've got a scissors.

I've got three pairs of sunglasses. Non I've got three sunglasses.

D Partitivi

I partitivi sono usati per contare i nomi non numerabili.

I've got a new pair of sunglasses. I bought two bottles of wine. Let me give you a piece of advice.

Alcuni tra i partitivi più comuni sono:

a **loaf of** bread

a **bar of** soap/chocolate

a **slice of** cake/bread

a **bunch of** grapes/bananas/flowers/keys

a **tin/can of** paint/beans/tomatoes/beer/soup

a **tube of** toothpaste/glue/tomato puree

a **bottle of** wine/olive oil/milk

a **pair of** socks/trousers/shoes/scissors/sunglasses

a **carton of** milk/orange juice

an **item of** furniture/news/clothing

a **bag of** sugar/apples/rice/crisps

a **piece of** information/advice/wood/paper

a **jar of** coffee/jam/honey/olives

a **pint of** beer/milk

a **packet of** biscuits/crisps/sweets/cigarettes

a **cup of** coffee/tea

a **loaf of** bread

a **bar of** soap/chocolate

1 Scrivi la forma plurale di questi nomi.

0 chimney chimneys

1 tomato

2 orange

3 monkey

4 knife

5 wish

6 bus

7 country

8 box

9 shop

10 party

11 church

12 kiss

2 Scrivi la forma plurale di questi nomi.

0 goose geese

1 woman

2 man

3 person

4 child

5 tooth

6 foot

7 mouse

8 sheep

9 fish

10 species

3 I nomi contenuti in queste frasi sono singolari o plurali? Completa le frasi usando *is* o *are*.

0 These jeans are too small!

5 Athletics my favourite sport.

1 Where my trousers?

6 Economics my favourite subject.

2 The news very exciting.

7 Your sunglasses on the table.

3 His clothes cool.

8 Politics boring.

4 Where the scissors?

9 Mice disgusting.

4 Leggi lo scontrino e scrivi che cosa è stato acquistato usando le parole del riquadro.

bar bottle bunch carton loaf packet pair tin tube

0 two bottles of water

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

SAVE-O-MART

0 WATER X 2	£1.22
1 BREAD	£0.89
2 CHOCOLATE	£1.05
3 ORANGE JUICE	£0.95
4 BISCUITS X 2	£1.18
5 GRAPES	£2.49
6 SOCKS X 2	£7.98
7 SOUP X 3	£3.87
8 TOOTHPASTE	£2.19

5 Scrivi che cosa c'è nella tua cucina.

0 a bottle of lemonade

4 a tin of

1 a packet of

5 a carton of

2 a bag of

6 a bottle of

3 a jar of

7 a bunch of

108

Possessivi: 's e the ... of ...

This is my brother's car. He's Bari's captain. He's the captain of Bari.

A Uso e forma

Si usa 's oppure *the ... of...* per esprimere possesso o per indicare oggetti posseduti.

- i Si usa in genere 's per persone, animali ed espressioni di tempo.

This is my sister's school. I can't find the dog's lead.

Good luck in tomorrow's exam! I've got a week's holiday.

- ii Si usa *the ... of...* per gli oggetti.

What's the title of the book? Sit in the back of the car. Our house is at the end of the road.

- iii Si può in genere usare 's oppure *the ... of...* per organizzazioni e per luoghi.

He's the BBC's Director General. o He's the Director General of the BBC.

What's Italy's population? o What's the population of Italy?

Nota che ci sono eccezioni alle regole di cui sopra, e ciò spesso dipende dalla scelta del parlante.

Per esempio, si può a volte usare 's per gli oggetti e *the ... of...* per le persone, specie con una lunga espressione nominale.

What's the film's title? What's the name of the people we met on holiday last year?

B Negozi ed altri servizi

Si usa 's per diversi tipi di negozi ed altri servizi e per le case delle persone.

I'm going to the hairdresser's. Sto andando dal parrucchiere.

I went to the doctor's this morning. Sono andato dal medico stamattina.

I'll see you at Roberta's at 5.30. Ti vedrò da Roberta alle 5.30.

C Nomini terminano in -s

Per un nome singolare che termina in s si usa 's, ma per un nome plurale che termina in s, si usa '(l'apostrofo senza s).

Have you seen Chris's camera? This is my parents' car.

Se qualcosa appartiene a più di una persona, si mette 's solo dopo la seconda persona.

Is this Jack and Jill's house? Are you going to Brad and Johnny's party?

Nota che non si usa *the* prima del nome quando si usa 's.

*This is David's car. Non *This is the David's car.**

*Where is Sam's coat? Non *Where is the Sam's coat?**

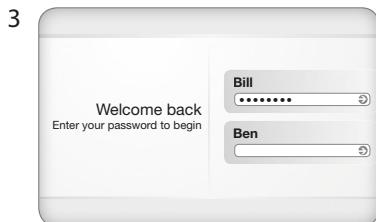
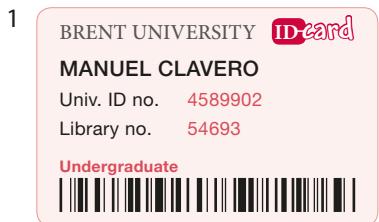
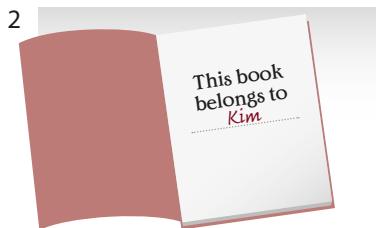
► Vedi unità 121 per gli aggettivi possessivi

1 Scrivi le risposte usando *It's*, i nomi in corsivo e 's.

- 0 Whose is the passport? ~ *It's Alice's.* Alice
- 1 Whose house is this? ~ *Toby and Kate*
- 2 Whose is this bike? ~ *Jess*
- 3 Whose car is this? ~ *my parents*
- 4 Whose is this classroom? ~ *Mr Jones*
- 5 Whose room is this? ~ *my brother*
- 6 Whose room is this? ~ *my brothers*

2 A chi appartengono questi oggetti? Scrivi delle frasi usando *It's* e le parole del riquadro.

bag book computer ID card key passport



0 It's Anna Jones's passport.

3

1

4

2

5

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando le parole date e *'s* o *the ... of ...*.

0 I'm looking forward to the party on Saturday.

I'm looking forward to Saturday's party.

1 Good luck in your exam on Friday!

Good luck in

2 I live on this road. At the end.

I live at

3 Did you read the film review in the newspaper yesterday?

Did you read the film review in?

4 My classroom is in this building. On the second floor.

My classroom is on

5 I need a holiday for a month.

I need

6 This is the apartment where Patricia lives.

This is

7 That film we saw last week – what's the title?

What's?

8 That guy we met at the party – have you got his email address?

Have you got?

4 Riferisci questi titoli di giornale in due modi: usando *'s* e *the ... of ...*.

0 **BBC boss resigns**

The BBC's boss has resigned.
The boss of the BBC has resigned.

2 **CHELSEA CAPTAIN BREAKS LEG**

The Chelsea captain broke his leg.
The captain of Chelsea broke his leg.

1 **MICROSOFT BOSS RETIRES**

The Microsoft boss has retired.
The boss of Microsoft has retired.

3 **World population now ten billion**

The world's population is now ten billion.
The population of the world is now ten billion.

1 Nomi numerabili e non numerabili Leggi i dialoghi e aggiungi s ai nomi quando è necessario.

Bella You're 30⁰ minutes s late!

Claudio Sorry. We were held up in ⁰ traffic —. They're doing some ⁰ work — on the main road.

Alec Are you going out tonight?

Diana No. I've got a lot of ¹ homework Lots of maths ² exercise

Steve Did you ask Paola about Rome?

Debbie Yes, I did. She gave me lots of useful ³ information and ⁴ advice
And she made several ⁵ suggestion about hotels to stay in.

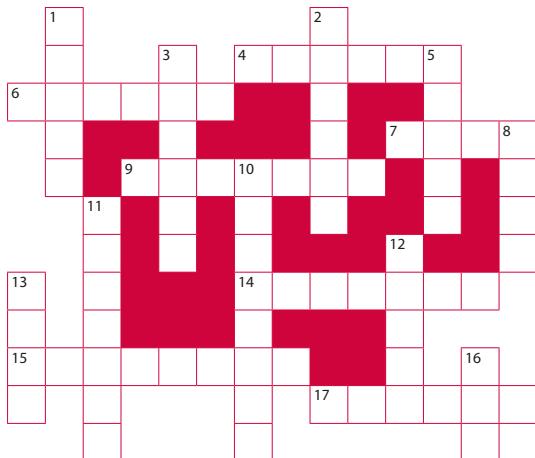
Tom How was your holiday?

Fred A disaster! First, they lost all our ⁶ luggage at the airport and then when we finally got to our hotel, the room didn't have any ⁷ furniture! Not even a bed!

Tom Did they change your ⁸ accommodation?

Fred Well, yes they moved us to a different room. And they finally brought us all our ⁹ bag after two days. And we had terrible ¹⁰ weather – it rained most of the ¹¹ time And on top of that, someone stole my wallet with all my ¹² money in it. Three hundred ¹³ euro

Tom Oh dear. You did have a lot of bad ¹⁴ luck, didn't you?

2 Nomi plurali Completa il cruciverba con il plurale delle parole.**ACROSS**

- 4 knife
- 6 leaf
- 7 foot
- 9 species
- 14 match
- 15 child
- 17 kiss

DOWN

- 1 tooth
- 2 city
- 3 person
- 5 sheep
- 8 toy
- 10 chimney
- 11 party
- 12 shoe
- 13 mouse
- 16 man

3 Partitivi Completa le espressioni usando le parole del riquadro.

bottle box bunch can or tin carton jar packet

- | |
|--|
| 0 a <u>box of</u> chocolates / matches |
| 1 wine / olive oil / beer |
| 2 honey / jam / coffee |
| 3 crisps / biscuits / cigarettes |
| 4 grapes / flowers |
| 5 orange juice / milk |
| 6 baked beans / soup / tomatoes |

4 Possessivo con 's Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa non più di tre parole.

- 0 What's Scotland's population?
What's the population of Scotland?
- 1 Who is Inter's coach?
Who is Inter?
- 2 Does this bag belong to Daniela?
Is bag?
- 3 Sit in the car, in the back.
Sit in the car.
- 4 I think this coat belongs to Janie.
I think this coat.
- 5 Good luck in the exam on Monday.
Good luck exam.

5 Grammatica e lessico: nomi numerabili e non numerabili (ingredienti base dei cibi) I cibi contrassegnati da * sono nomi numerabili (*one onion, two peppers* ecc.). Ma quando ci si riferisce ad essi come ingredienti diventano non numerabili. Completa i dialoghi usando le parole del riquadro.

chilli* garlic herbs mushroom* olive oil onion* pepper* stock tomato*

- 0 Jim Has the curry got  chilli in it?
Helen Yes, it's quite hot.
- 1 Carole What kind of quiche is it?
Chris It's got ,  and  in it.
- 2 Sam How do you make risotto?
Cristina To start off, fry the , the  and the  in the  for about five minutes.
Then add the rice and gradually add the .

6 Grammatica e lessico: possessivo con 's (negozi e altri servizi) In quali negozi vai per comprare questi articoli? Rispondi usando le parole del riquadro.

the baker's the butcher's the chemist's the doctor's
the florist's the hairdresser's the newsagent's

Where do you go ...

- 0 to buy meat? The butcher's.
1 to buy a newspaper or magazine? _____
2 to buy bread? _____
3 to see someone about a medical problem? _____
4 to get your hair cut? _____
5 to buy flowers? _____
6 to buy medicine? _____

110

Articoli (a/an e the)

They've got a boy and a girl. The boy is 8 and the girl is 12.

A Uso

A/an è l'articolo indeterminativo e *the* è l'articolo determinativo.

Ci sono diverse regole sull'uso di *a/an* e *the*, ma le regole di base sono:

- i *A/an* si usa quando o chi parla o chi ascolta (o entrambi) non sono a conoscenza in modo specifico della cosa di cui si sta parlando.

Have you got a laptop? Is there a computer in the room?

They've got two children, a boy and a girl. We're going to see a film.

I left my bag in a taxi. (Chi ascolta conosce esattamente di quale taxi si tratta.) *Can you open a window?* (Chi ascolta può scegliere quale finestra aprire.)

- ii *The* si usa quando sia chi parla sia chi ascolta sanno specificamente di che cosa si sta parlando.

Can I use the laptop after you? Can you shut the computer down when you've finished? They've got two children, a boy and a girl.

The boy is 15 and the girl is 13. We're going to see the new James Bond film. I left my bag in the taxi. (Chi ascolta sa già del tragitto in taxi.) *Can you open the window?* (C'è solo una finestra nella stanza.)

B Forma

In inglese non esiste la distinzione tra generi, quindi si usa o *a/an* oppure *the* per tutti i nomi.

a boy (un ragazzo) *a girl* (una ragazza)

the boy (il ragazzo) *the girl* (la ragazza)

the boys (i ragazzi) *the girls* (le ragazze)

L'articolo *the* si usa anche per i nomi plurali. Può quindi equivalere non solo a: *il, lo, l'* (maschile), *la, l'* (femminile) ma anche a *i, gli, le*. *the book/the books* (il libro/i libri)

C A o an?

L'uso di *a* o *an* dipende dalla pronuncia del suono iniziale della parola che segue.

- i Prima di un suono consonantico si usa *a*.

*a car a euro a house a new computer
a red dress a ship a tree a university*

- ii Prima di un suono vocalico si usa *an*.

*an apple an egg an hour an interesting book
an MP3 player an onion an umbrella*

Nota che le parole inizianti con la lettera *u* sono a volte pronunciate con suono consonantico /j/ (per esempio *university*) e a volte invece con suono vocalico /ʌ/ (p.es. *umbrella*).

► Vedi unità 111–112 per altri usi degli articoli.



In italiano si usa la stessa parola, *uno*, per riferirsi sia all'articolo indeterminativo che per indicare il numero cardinale. In inglese si usa, al contrario, *one* solo quando vogliamo sottolineare la quantità specifica corrispondente a tale numero.

He's got one sister and two brothers.

It costs only one euro.

I had a pizza for lunch.

Non *I had one pizza for lunch.*

1 Scrivi *a* o *an*.

- 0 Would you like *an* apple?
- 1 Is there TV in the room?
- 2 Have you got euro?
- 3 She's Italian teacher.
- 4 Have you got MP3 player?

- 5 She's wearing yellow dress.
- 6 I haven't got jacket.
- 7 It's old house.
- 8 It takes hour to get to the airport.
- 9 It was horrible experience.

2 Scrivi *a* o *an*.

- 0 university
- 1 uniform

- 2 umbrella
- 3 unicorn

3 Completa queste richieste di ulteriori informazioni usando *a/an* o *the*.

- 0 Is *the* hotel near *the* city centre?
- 1 Does price include breakfast?
- 2 Is there swimming pool?
- 3 Does hotel have wi-fi?
- 4 Is there TV in room?
- 5 Has hotel got website?

- 6 Is it special occasion?
- 7 Where is party?
- 8 Who else is going to party?
- 9 Can I bring friend?
- 10 Will there be band playing?



Hotel St George

**Single: €75
Double: €130**

I'm having a party on Saturday –
hope you can come! Jx

4 Completa queste brevi notizie di cronaca usando *a/an* o *the*.

Smelly socks

Doctors at ⁰*a* hospital in London treated ¹ man yesterday after he inhaled fumes from ² pair of socks. ³ man fell asleep while ⁴ socks were drying on ⁵ electric fire.

Family business

⁶ woman from Cleveland, Ohio, is taking ⁷ furniture store to court. Barbara James, 36, is claiming \$50,000 damages after she was injured when she was knocked over by ⁸ child who was running 'out of control' around the store. ⁹ woman claims that FurnitureWorld's staff did nothing to stop ¹⁰ child's behaviour. ¹¹ spokesperson for FurnitureWorld says ¹² company rejects ¹³ claim because ¹⁴ seven-year-old child, Toby James, is actually ¹⁵ woman's son.

Message in a bottle

Seven sailors were rescued yesterday from ¹⁶ desert island off the coast of South America. Ten days ago, ¹⁷ men put ¹⁸ message in ¹⁹ bottle and threw it into ²⁰ ocean. ²¹ bottle was found by ²² fisherman, who contacted ²³ coastguard. ²⁴ castaways had spent three weeks on ²⁵ island.

111

Articoli (usi particolari)

She's a teacher. I play the bass guitar. 70% of the earth is water.

Ci sono diversi casi particolari in cui si usa *a/an*, *the*, oppure non si usa l'articolo (*zero article*). Questi sono alcuni dei più importanti.

Si usa *a/an*:

- i per le professioni,
She's a doctor. He's an architect.
- ii con questi disturbi,
I've got a cold/a headache/a temperature/a cough/a bad back/a black eye.
- iii per classificare gli oggetti,
A whale is a mammal. What is a plectrum? A mamba is a kind of snake.
- iv con l'espressione *What a + nome numerabile*.
What a surprise! What a great goal!

Si usa *the*:

- i quando esiste una sola entità di qualcosa,
The sun's hot today. What's the capital of Italy? The internet is amazing.
- ii con *play* + strumenti musicali,
I play the guitar. Do you play the piano?
- iii con i numeri ordinali e le date,
Who was the first man in space? It's the 15th of May.
- iv con i superlativi,
Ukraine is the biggest country in Europe.
- v con le nazionalità,
The Chinese invented fireworks.
- vi con specifiche aree e determinati nomi geografici,
the equator, the Tropic of Cancer, the Far East, the Arctic
- vii con nomi di paesi che sono al plurale,
the Netherlands, the United States
- viii con catene montuose, fiumi, canali, mari, oceani e deserti,
the Pacific ocean, the Nile, the Apennines, the Sahara desert
- ix con nomi di alberghi, teatri e musei.
We stayed in the Seaview Hotel. I went to the British Museum.

Non si usa l'articolo:

- i con i titoli professionali e di cortesia,
Mrs Smith is here. Have you seen Dr Jones?
- ii con l'ora, i giorni, i mesi, gli anni e i nomi di festività,
It's three o'clock. I play golf on Sundays. I was born in 1998. I saw him at Christmas.
- iii con i nomi che indicano i pasti della giornata,
Breakfast is at 7.30. What time is lunch?
- iv con le materie scolastiche e discipline universitarie,
He's studying biology at university. Maths is interesting.
- v davanti ai nomi di sport,
Tennis is my favourite sport. I play basketball.
- vi davanti ai nomi di colori,
Pink is my favourite colour. I don't like yellow.
- vii con le percentuali,
90% of teenagers have a mobile. 70% of the earth is water.
- viii con continenti, paesi, stati, città, piccole città o cittadine e paesini,
Have you been to Africa? She's from France. I live in Oxford.
- ix con i nomi di montagne,
I flew over Everest. How high is Mont Blanc?
- x con strade, parchi, piazze, palazzi, castelli, stazioni, aeroporti,
I live in Green Street. We fly to Heathrow. Did you go to Buckingham Palace?
- xi con l'esclamazione *What + nome plurale o non numerabile*.
What amazing photos! What terrible weather!

1 È necessario usare l'articolo *the* davanti a questi nomi di luoghi oppure no? Scrivi *the* o -.

0	-	Europe	4	Heathrow Airport	9	Thames
0	<i>The</i>	Alps	5	Mount Everest	10	Central Park
1		Lake Como	6	Science Museum	11	Adriatic sea
2		United States	7	Times Square	12	Italy
3		Oxford Street	8	Victoria station	13	Plaza Hotel

2 Completa l'email con l'articolo *the*. Scrivi – se non c'è bisogno dell'articolo.



We've been here in ⁰ *the* UK for two weeks and we're having a fantastic time. We're in ⁰ — London at the moment. We're staying in a small hotel on a road just off ¹ Old Compton Street in Soho. We've been seeing the famous London sights – we've been to ² Buckingham Palace, ³ Trafalgar Square, ⁴ British Museum and we went on ⁵ London Eye this morning. Oh, and we went for tea at ⁶ Ritz Hotel yesterday. This afternoon, we're going to go for a walk along ⁷ River Thames and then we'll go to ⁸ Hyde Park later. Before London, we were in ⁹ Scotland for a week. ¹⁰ Scottish Highlands were really amazing and we walked part of the way up ¹¹ Ben Nevis, which is ¹² highest mountain in ¹³ UK. ¹⁴ Edinburgh, ¹⁵ capital, is a great city and ¹⁶ Edinburgh Castle was really interesting with some great views of the city. We're going to ¹⁷ Brighton tomorrow for a few days. Hopefully, we'll spend some time on the beach, but I don't think ¹⁸ English Channel will be as warm as ¹⁹ Pacific back home in ²⁰ California!

3 Scrivi le risposte usando le parole del riquadro.

amphibian very large number herbivore mammal kind of pizza

- 0 Is a whale a fish? *No, a whale is a mammal.*
- 1 Is a frog a reptile? _____
- 2 What's a margherita? _____
- 3 Is a rhinoceros a carnivore? _____
- 4 What's a googol? _____

4 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Usa *What a/an ...!* o *What ... e le espressioni del riquadro.*

amazing result great idea lovely day lovely food
surprise terrible weather unbelievable luck

- 0 The sun is shining. *What a lovely day!*
- 0 It's rained for days. *What terrible weather!*
- 1 You have an unexpected visitor. _____
- 2 You eat a great meal. _____
- 3 Italy beat Brazil 4–0. _____
- 4 Someone makes an excellent suggestion. _____
- 5 Your friend wins the lottery. _____

5 Completa le risposte in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 What do you do? ~ I'm *a student.*
- 1 What job does your father do? ~ He's _____.
- 2 What year were you born? ~ I was born in _____.
- 3 When is your birthday? ~ It's on _____.
- 4 What's your favourite subject at school? ~ It's _____.
- 5 What sports do you play? ~ I play _____.

A Uso e forma

Si omette l'articolo (*zero article*) quando si parla di qualcosa in senso generale. Nota le differenze tra queste frasi.

Per parlare in generale

*Sugar is bad for you.
Children love reading comics.
Students have a great life.
Bars usually play music.*

Per parlare di qualcosa di specifico

*Can you pass me **the** sugar?
The children are hungry.
The students next door are really friendly.
I didn't like **the** music in **the** bar last night.*

B The whale, the computer ecc.

Si può usare *the* per fare affermazioni generali su animali, piante o invenzioni.

*The blue whale is **the** biggest living animal.*

*Who invented **the** computer?*

The piano is my favourite instrument.

Nota che non si può usare *the* per nomi non numerabili.

*Who invented paper? Non **Who invented the paper?***

Chi ha inventato la carta?



In italiano l'uso dell'articolo determinativo è più frequente, mentre in inglese non si usa l'articolo per i nomi usati in senso generale, senza alcuna specificazione.

People watch too much TV.

Le persone guardano troppo la TV.

Inoltre non si usa *the* con gli aggettivi possessivi *my, your, his, her* ecc.

My car is a BMW.

La mia macchina è una BMW.

Our house has a garden.

La nostra casa ha un giardino.

C School, university ecc.

Con *school, university, college, hospital, church, prison* e *bed* a volte si usa *the* e a volte non si usa l'articolo.

i *The* si usa per parlare di un luogo specifico.

The church is beautiful.

*I saw Peter at **the** university.*

*The book is under **the** bed.*

ii L'articolo non si usa quando si parla dell'attività associata ad un luogo.

*I go to **church** every Sunday. (= I go to a religious ceremony.)*

*Jim's at **university**. (= Jim's a student.)*

*I'm going to **bed**. (= I'm going to go to sleep.)*

► **Vedi unità 121 per gli aggettivi possessivi.**

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 A Could you pass me sugar / **the sugar**, please?
B Yes, sure.
- 1 A Do you take sugar / **the sugar** in your coffee?
B No. Just **milk** / **the milk**, thanks.
- 2 A I love pizza / **the pizza**.
B So do I, but **pizza** / **the pizza** I had for lunch today was terrible.
- 3 A You know a lot about music / **the music**, don't you?
B Well, a bit. But not **music** / **the music** you like listening to. I prefer **sixties music** / **the sixties music**.
- 4 A Do you play computer games / **the computer games**?
B Not really. I prefer watching **films** / **the films** when I have **free time** / **the free time**.

- 5 A I think *cars / the cars* should be banned in *city centres / the city centres*.
 B *Roads / The roads* where I live are always busy, and *air / the air* is full of pollution. They should provide *free car parks / the free car parks* outside the city and *free buses / the free buses* to get in.
- 6 A I don't think *teachers / the teachers* get paid enough.
 B I agree. It's a difficult job, and *teachers / the teachers* in our school are fantastic.

2 Completa le frasi con *the* o – (se non c'è bisogno dell'articolo).

- 0 My brother's studying chemistry at University.
 1 We go to church every Sunday. We never miss Mass.
 2 He's in prison for three years for burglary.
 3 The park is behind church.
 4 Has school got a swimming pool?
 5 I'm exhausted. I'm going to bed.
 6 Do you enjoy school?
 7 There are lots of boxes under bed.
 8 I saw Giles at hospital. He was visiting his mother.
 9 I'm going to prison to visit Larry.
 10 How long will you be in hospital after the operation?

3 Completa le frasi usando le parole di animali e piante del riquadro.

eagle elephant giant redwood giant tortoise rose

- 0 *The eagle* is the symbol of the USA.
 1 is the national flower of England.
 2 is the biggest land animal.
 3 is the world's tallest tree.
 4 can live to be over 150.

4 Scrivi le domande per queste risposte. Inizia con *Who invented the ...?*

0



2



4



1



3



5



0 Who invented the bicycle?

~ Kirkpatrick Macmillan in the 1830s.

1

~ Adolphe Sax in 1846.

2

~ Lars Magnus Ericsson in 1910.

3

~ John Logie Baird in 1926.

4

~ Douglas Engelbart in 1970.

5

~ Zacharias Janssen in 1609.

113 Revisione e potenziamento (unità 110–112)

Articoli

1 A/an e the Completa i dialoghi usando *a/an* o *the*.

- 0 A Have you got *a* pen?
 B Yes, there's one in the top drawer of *the* desk.
- 1 A Where's Sandy?
 B She's in garden. I think she's cutting grass.
- 2 A We went to see film last night.
 B Which one?
 A It's called *Arrested*.
 B Is that film with guy from those TV advertisements?
 A Yes, that's right. It's great film.
- 3 A Did you see Italy versus Germany game last night?
 B No, I didn't. What was score?
 A 2–0 to Italy. It was great game, actually.
- 4 A Have you got pet?
 B Yes, two actually. dog and cat.
 A I guess you prefer cat.
 B Well, no actually. dog is definitely more fun.
- 5 A I need to send email, but internet connection isn't working.
 B There's internet café just down road if it's urgent.
 A Oh yes, I remember seeing it. It's next to bank, isn't it?
 B That's right. It's got red and white sign outside.

2 A/an, the e zero article Completa le frasi usando *a*, *the* o – (se non c'è bisogno dell'articolo).

- 0 I was born in 1999.
 1 What time is lunch?
 2 75% of teenagers use internet every day.
 3 I play piano.
 4 My mother is teacher.
 5 I've never been to Asia.
 6 Who won last football World Cup?
 7 I've never been to Middle East.
 8 I've been to Ireland, but I've never been to United Kingdom.
 9 I've got headache.
 10 I want to study chemistry at university.
 11 I play football every Sunday.
 12 I never drink coffee.
 13 Which is biggest country in the world?
 14 What's 'viper'? It's kind of snake.
 15 How high is Mount Everest?
 16 Have you ever been to Saint Mark's Square in Venice?
 17 Do you ever play computer games?
 18 What lovely day!
 19 What fantastic weather!

- 3 A/an, the e zero article** Completa la biografia usando *a/an, the o – (se non c'è bisogno dell'articolo)*.

Vincent Van Gogh

Today, Vincent van Gogh is ⁰ world-renowned artist, who painted some of ¹ most famous paintings of all time. But during his lifetime he sold only one painting, and for most of his life he was unknown and very poor.

Vincent van Gogh was born in ² Netherlands on March 30th, 1853. His father was ³ priest and Vincent grew up in ⁴ religious environment. In ⁵ 1869, aged 16, van Gogh left ⁶ school and went to ⁷ England, where he worked first in ⁸ bookshop and then as ⁹ art dealer for seven years. He then spent four years living in various European countries. Finally, in 1880, van Gogh moved to ¹⁰ Brussels to study ¹¹ art.

In 1886, Vincent decided to move to ¹² France, where he met some of ¹³ greatest artists of ¹⁴ time, such as Monet, Pissarro and Gauguin. Vincent became ¹⁵ obsessive painter and he often spent his money on ¹⁶ art supplies instead of ¹⁷ food. He soon started to suffer from ¹⁸ depression, and he was admitted to ¹⁹ mental hospital in ²⁰ December 1888 after cutting off his own ear. While in ²¹ mental hospital, Vincent painted some of his best-known paintings.

In May 1890, Vincent left ²² mental hospital and spent ²³ last few months of his life in Auvers, France. On July 27, 1890 Vincent van Gogh shot himself in ²⁴ chest with ²⁵ hand gun. He died two days later.

- T 4 A/an e zero article** Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- 0 Vi piace veramente l'inglese. You really like English.
- 1 Mio padre è medico.
- 2 Ho il raffreddore in questo momento.
- 3 Che film fantastico!
- 4 Ascolto musica di continuo.
- 5 Parli italiano?
- 6 Il pranzo è alle 12.30.

- 5 Grammatica e lessico: zero article (proverbi)** Molti modi di dire e proverbi si riferiscono a concetti in termini generali. Completa i proverbi inglesi 1–4 con le parole del riquadro, poi abbinali alle versioni italiane a–e.

actions blood charity love time

- 0 Time is money.
- 1 begins at home.
- 2 speak louder than words.
- 3 is thicker than water.
- 4 is blind.

- a Il sangue non è acqua.
- b Il tempo è denaro. O
- c Contano più i fatti che le parole.
- d La carità comincia a casa propria.
- e L'amore è cieco.

114 Some e any

*I've got **some** money. I haven't got **any** money. Would you like **something** to eat?*

A Uso e forma

Si usano *some* e *any* con nomi plurali non numerabili quando si parla di quantità indefinite.

- i Si usa di norma *some* nelle frasi affermative e *any* nelle negative.

I've got some money.	I haven't got any money.
There are some chairs in the room.	There aren't any chairs in the room.
I bought some shoes.	I didn't buy any shoes.

- ii Si usa *any* per domande generiche, ma di norma si usa *some* per domande che sono richieste e offerte e quando ci si aspetta una risposta positiva con *yes*.

Did you buy any coffee?	Would you like some coffee?
Have we got any bread?	Could we have some more bread, please?
Have you seen any good films recently?	You look worried. Have you lost something ?

- iii *Any* ha anche il significato 'non importa quale' = qualsiasi.
*You can catch **any** of these buses – they all go to the city centre.*

B Something, anything ecc.

Le regole per *some* e *any* valgono anche per *something/anything*, *someone/anyone*, *somebody/anybody* e *somewhere/anywhere*.

*We're lost – let's ask **someone** for directions.*

*I can't see **anyone**. Would you like **something** to drink?
You can sit **anywhere** you like.*

Nota che si possono usare *something*, *anything* ecc. come soggetto di una frase.

Someone phoned you earlier.

Anyone can learn English. Anything is possible.



Nota la diversa traduzione di *anyone* in queste frasi:
Is anyone at home?

C'è qualcuno in casa?

*I didn't see **anyone** at the cinema.* Non ho visto nessuno al cinema.

This is easy: anyone could do it! Questo è facile: chiunque potrebbe farlo.
*Have you talked to **anyone** about this? Hai parlato di questo con qualcuno?*

- Vedi unità 115 per le forme negative *nothing*, *no one*, *nowhere* ecc.

1 Completa i dialoghi usando *some* o *any*.

- 0 A Have you got any ... milk?
B Yes, there's some ... in the fridge.
- 1 A Have you got sugar?
B No, there isn't Sorry.
- 2 A Are there good restaurants near here?
B Yes, there are excellent ones around George Square.
- 3 A Have we got homework tonight?
B Not yet, but I'm sure the teacher is going to give us
- 4 A Would you like food?
B No, thanks. I've just had pizza, actually.

- 5 A I don't speak foreign languages. Do you speak ?
 B Well, I can speak French, but only the basics.
- 6 A I haven't got money. Can I borrow ?
 B I'm afraid I haven't got Sorry.
 A OK, I'll go to the cash machine to get Do want me to get out for you, too?

2 Descrivi la figura usando le parole date e *There are some* o *There aren't any*.



- 0 cupboards *There are some*
 1 shelves 4 plants
 2 posters on the wall 5 toys
 3 clothes on the floor 6 books

3 Ci sono gli oggetti dell'Esercizio 2 nella tua camera? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te.

- 0 *There aren't any* drawers
 1 4
 2 5
 3 6

4 Completa i dialoghi usando le parole del riquadro. Alcune parole vanno usate più di una volta.

anyone anything anytime anywhere someone something

- 0 A *Someone* phoned for you earlier.
 B Did they leave a message?
 1 A What's the matter?
 B Oh, is wrong with my TV.
 2 A Is snowboarding difficult?
 B No, can do it if they try.
 3 A Do you think Juve will beat Roma?
 B I don't know. is possible!
 4 A I thought you'd lost your mobile.
 B I did, but found it.
- 5 A What do you fancy to eat – Chinese or Thai?
 B You choose. I'm happy to eat
 6 A When shall I come round?
 B I'll be at home all day – call round
 7 A Do you prefer a window or an aisle seat?
 B I don't mind. I'm happy to sit
 8 A I think we're lost!
 B OK, let's ask to help us.

5 Completa le frasi usando *any* e le parole del riquadro.

colour film music size bus

- 0 Small, medium, large – you can have *any* size you like.
 1 Take They all go to the central station.
 2 Red, blue, black – you can have you like.
 3 I'm happy to listen to – I really don't mind.
 4 I love with Orlando Bloom in it!

115

No, none, nobody, nothing, nowhere ecc.

There's no coffee. I heard nothing. We had a party, but no one came.

A No

Si può usare *no* in alternativa a *not ... any* oppure a *not ... a*.

There's no milk. (= There isn't any milk.) They've got no TV. (= They haven't got a TV.)

B None

Si usa *none* in alternativa a *not ... any* oppure a *no + nome* per qualcosa che è già stato nominato.

How much money have you got? ~ None. (= I haven't got any money. o I've got no money.)

Can I have some more cake? ~ I'm afraid there's none left (= There isn't any cake left. o There's no cake left.)

Si può anche usare *none of* + frase nominale.

I saw none of my friends at the weekend. (= I didn't see any of my friends.)

C No one, nothing ecc.

Si possono usare *no one*, *nobody*, *nothing*, *nowhere* come alternative a *not ... anyone/anybody/anything/anywhere*.

We saw no one. (= We didn't see anyone.)

What did you buy? ~ Nothing. (= I didn't buy anything.)

Where did you go last night? ~ Nowhere. (= I didn't go anywhere.)

Nota che il doppio negativo *not no/none/no one/nothing* ecc. non è possibile in inglese.

There's no time. o There isn't any time. Non There isn't no time.

I've got none. o I haven't got any. Non I haven't got none.

I said nothing. o I didn't say anything. Non I didn't say nothing.

Non si usa nemmeno *anyone/anybody/anything/anywhere ... not*.

Yesterday, nobody came to class. Non Yesterday, anybody didn't come to class.

Nota che si può usare anche *no + nome, none, no one, nothing* ecc. come soggetto di una frase.

No one of my friends like the same music as me. No one came to the meeting. Nothing changes!

D At all

At all (affatto, per niente, assolutamente, nemmeno un po') si usa per porre l'enfasi su un'affermazione negativa.

I watched no TV at all last week. Non ho visto assolutamente la TV la scorsa settimana.

We didn't see anyone at all. Non abbiamo visto assolutamente nessuno.

I've got no money at all. Non ho assolutamente soldi.

1 Completa le affermazioni riformulando le frasi del riquadro usando *no*.

there aren't any eggs she hasn't got any money there isn't a charge
there isn't any spaghetti there aren't any buses

0 I can't make spaghetti alla bolognese. *There's no spaghetti.*

1 Sue can't go out tonight.

2 Let's get a taxi.

3 I can't make an omelette.

4 Entrance to the museum is free.

2 Completa le affermazioni riformulando le frasi del riquadro usando *none*.

there wasn't any tea left I haven't got any money on me there isn't any coffee
no bands were any good no dresses suited me there aren't any taxis

- 0 We can't have a coffee. *There's none left.*
- 1 I can't lend you any money.
- 2 We can't take a taxi.
- 3 I didn't have another cup of tea.
- 4 I saw a few bands at the weekend, but
- 5 I tried on lots of dresses, but

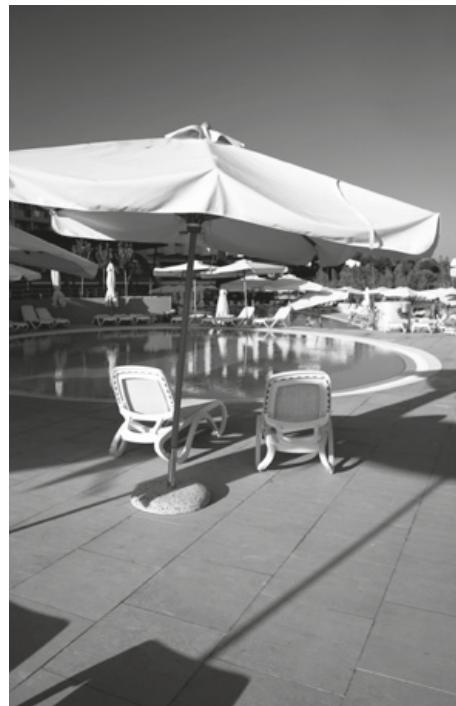
3 Completa le frasi usando *no one*, *nothing* o *nowhere* e le parole in corsivo.

- 0 We organized a meeting, but *no one came* *come*
- 1 We went for a meal, but *enjoy it*
- 2 The shopping trip was a disaster. I *buy*
- 3 We took an exam, but *pass*
- 4 I'm trying to book a hotel, but *have any rooms*
- 5 It's a secret. You must *tell*
- 6 It's the same old story – *change*

4 Ben sta rispondendo alle domande di Alice a proposito delle sue vacanze. Completa il dialogo usando le parole del riquadro e *at all*.

none none no one nothing nothing nowhere

- Alice How was your holiday?
Ben Fantastic. We had a really relaxing time.
Alice Great. So, what did you do?
Ben ⁰ *Nothing at all* We just stayed by the hotel pool all week.
Alice How was the weather? Did you get any rain?
Ben No, ¹ It was really sunny and hot all week.
Alice Did you meet any interesting people?
Ben No, ² We wanted to be alone.
Alice Did you spend a lot of money?
Ben We spent ³ Everything was included in the price.
Alice Did you visit any places nearby?
Ben ⁴ We spent the whole week reading and sunbathing by the pool.
Alice And did you take any photos?
Ben No, ⁵ We didn't take a camera.
Alice Well, it sounds like a great holiday.
Ben It was. You must come with us next year.



116 Many, much, a lot of, a few e a little

I haven't got much time. I've got a lot of work. There was a little rain this morning.

A Uso e forma

i *Many* (molti/e) e *a few* (alcuni/e) si usano con i nomi numerabili.
Have you got many CDs? I haven't been to many countries. I've got a few pairs of shoes.

ii Con nomi non numerabili si usa *much* (molto) e *a little* (un po').
Have you got much money? There's a little wine left. It didn't rain much last year.

iii *A lot of* ha un significato simile a *much* e *many* e si usa sia per i nomi numerabili sia per quelli non numerabili. Come regola molto generale, si usa *a lot of* nelle frasi affermative e *much* o *many* in frasi negative e nelle domande.

I've got a lot of homework tonight. We haven't got much homework tonight.

Have you got much homework tonight?

- Si possono anche usare *lots of* e *loads of* invece di *a lot of*. *Lots of* e *loads of* si usano in contesti più informali come, ad esempio, in conversazione.
There are lots of cafés near here. Romeo's had loads of girlfriends.
- Si può usare anche *plenty of* (parecchio, un bel po').
We've got plenty of time to get to the airport.

B How much ...? e How many ...?

How much (quanto/a) e *How many* (quanti/e) sono usati frequentemente.

How much money have you got on you? How many people were at the party?

C Few e little

Si usano in genere *a few* e *a little* per esprimere un fatto neutro (senza commenti).

A few people went to the party. Poche persone andarono alla festa.

There was a little snow last night. C'era un po' di neve ieri sera.

Si usano *few* (pochi, poche) e *little* (un po') senza *a* per esprimere un'idea negativa e per indicare l'assenza di ciò che ci si era aspettati o si sperava.

Few people went to the party. It was a bit boring.

Poche persone andarono alla festa. Era un po' noiosa.

There's been very little snow all winter. Skiing is impossible.

C'è stata poca neve per tutto l'inverno. Non è possibile sciare.

D Only e just

Si possono usare *only* e *just* per dare enfasi a *a few* e *a little*.

I've got only a few pence. o I've only got a few pence.

There was only a little rain this morning. Do you speak Italian? ~ Just a little.

1 Che cosa usi in questi casi: *many* e *a few* o *much* e *a little*?

0	<i>much</i>	/	<i>a little</i>	<i>traffic</i>	8	/	<i>emails</i>
1	/	<i>money</i>	9	/	<i>work</i>
2	/	<i>people</i>	10	/	<i>food</i>
3	/	<i>rain</i>	11	/	<i>songs</i>
4	/	<i>hours</i>	12	/	<i>cars</i>
5	/	<i>time</i>	13	/	<i>homework</i>
6	/	<i>energy</i>	14	/	<i>information</i>
7	/	<i>luggage</i>	15	/	<i>cafés</i>

2 Completa i dialoghi usando *(not) much, (not) many, a little o a few*.

- 0 A Do your parents speak English?
B Yes, but only *a little*.
- 1 A Would you like some coffee?
B Just , please. With just milk if you have some.
- 2 A Did you spend money last night?
B No, Only about five pounds.
- 3 A Have you got CDs?
B Only Most of my music is on my MP3 player.
- 4 A Did it rain where you were yesterday?
B Yes, We had showers in the afternoon.
- 5 A Did you know many of the people at the party on Saturday?
B No, Just people from school.
- 6 A Have you got a lot of homework to do tonight?
B No, Just grammar exercises.

3 Leggi l'email di Chantal e completala scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.



We arrived in India ⁰*a few* / *a little* days ago. We're going to spend ¹*a few / a little* time here in Delhi and then we're going to go to Goa for ²*a few / a little* weeks to spend some time on the beach. There are so ³*many / much* things to see and do here in Delhi. It's amazing. We're spending ⁴*a lot of / much* time in cafés and restaurants just watching the world go by, but yesterday we visited ⁵*a few / a little* places – the Red Fort, the Jama Masjid Mosque and ⁶*a few / little* markets. There are ⁷*lots of / much* amazing things to buy, but I haven't spent ⁸*much / a little* money yet. The weather is perfect, although there was ⁹*a few / a little* rain this morning.

4 Completa le domande usando *How many* o *How much*.

- 0 *How many* brothers and sisters have you got?
- 1 money have you got on you?
- 2 students are there in your class?
- 3 did your mobile phone cost?
- 4 TV do you watch each week?
- 5 English lessons do you have each week?
- 6 pairs of shoes have you got?

5 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa le parole del riquadro o altre a tua scelta.

bags books CDs clothes computer games cousins DVDs free time friends money

- 0 I've only got a little *money*.
1 I've only got a few
2 I've got loads of
- 3 I've got a lot of
4 I haven't got many
5 I haven't got much

6 Completa le frasi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 Few of his ideas made money. *He was promoted.* / *He was sacked.*
- 1 Few people went to the exhibition. *It was a success.* / *It closed after three days.*
- 2 They had little in common. *They became friends.* / *They didn't become friends.*
- 3 He's got few friends. *He's quite lonely.* / *He's got a good social life.*
- 4 There was little to eat. *I'm not hungry.* / *I'm still hungry.*
- 5 I've read few books recently. *I've been too busy.* / *I've had a lot of free time.*

All, each, every e most

I ate all the pizza. I went to every class. Most of the teachers are really good.

A All, each ed every

All, each ed every hanno un significato simile.

- i *All* (tutto/a, tutti/e). È seguito da un nome plurale o non numerabile.
All può essere seguito da *the* o da un aggettivo possessivo.
All cars cause pollution. We drank all the wine. I passed all my exams.
 - ii *Each* (ciascuno, ogni) ed *every* (ciascuno, ogni, tutti/e) sono seguiti da un nome singolare.
Each ed *every* non possono essere seguiti da *the* o da un aggettivo possessivo.
I checked every detail. Each diamond in the necklace cost a million pounds.
- Each ed every* sono spesso intercambiabili, ma:
- si usa *each* solo per riferirsi a due oggetti o persone,
What's on each side of the coin?
 - si usa di norma *every* per grandi numeri di oggetti o persone.
It's impossible to see every star in the sky.

B Everyone, everybody, everything ed everywhere

Everyone, everybody, everything ed everywhere si possono usare al posto di *all + nome*.

Everybody had a good time last night. (= *All the people had a good time last night.*)

I passed everything. (= *I passed all my exams.*)

- i *Everyone, everybody, everything ed everywhere* sono seguiti da un verbo alla forma singolare.
Everyone was dancing. Everything looks beautiful. Everywhere was busy.
- ii Non si usa di norma *all* per esprimere *everyone, everybody, everything* ed *everywhere*.
Everyone passed the exam. Non *All passed the exam.*
- iii Si può comunque usare *all* per esprimere *everything* nell'espressione *all about*.
Frank told me all about his holiday.

C Most

Most (la maggioranza, la maggior parte di) è seguita da un nome plurale o non numerabile.

I like most classical music. Most students in Italy study English.

D All of, each of, most of e none of

Si possono usare *all of, each of, most of e none of*. Quando si usa *of*, si deve usare *the/these/ those*, un pronome (*his, them, us* ecc.), o un aggettivo possessivo. Non si usa *every of*.
I need to speak to each of you. Most of my family lives in Scotland.

Nota che *all* in alcuni casi si può usare senza *of*.

I've seen all of the Star Wars films. o I've seen all the Star Wars films.

E All

All può anche voler dire *the only thing* (tutto ciò, l'unica cosa che).

Did I crash the computer? All I did was turn it on.

All you need is love. All I've eaten today is a sandwich.

1 Completa le regole scolastiche scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

SCHOOL RULES

- 0 **All** Every students must wear a uniform.
1 Students must attend *all/ every* lesson.
2 Students must work hard in *all/ every* subjects.
3 **All** Every student will receive homework *all/ each* day.
4 **All** *Each* students must attend the school assembly.
5 Students must behave responsibly at *all/ every* times.

2 Leggi i risultati del girone di Champions League. Poi completa le frasi usando *all (of), every, most (of) o none of*.

	PLAYED	WON	DRAW	LOST	POINTS
Roma	6	6	0	0	18
Liverpool	6	4	0	2	12
Barcelona	6	2	0	4	6
Ajax	6	0	0	6	0

- 0 Roma won *every* game.
1 Roma won their games.
2 Liverpool won their games.
3 Barcelona lost games.
4 Ajax lost game.
5 Ajax won their games.

3 Completa i dialoghi usando *all, each, every, everyone, everything o everywhere*.

- 0 A Have you found your ID card?
B No, and I've looked *everywhere*.
1 A Katherine Jones is the favourite for the Olympic gold medal, isn't she?
B Yes, thinks she'll win.
2 A I think cars should be banned in city centres.
B I agree. In fact, cars should be banned in part of the city, not just the centre.
3 A Houses are very expensive in the UK these days.
B It's not just houses. is expensive in the UK these days!
4 A You should print on side of the paper – think of the environment.
B True, but I can't be bothered to put the paper back in the printer time.
5 A Have you finished your homework?
B Almost, but I haven't quite done

4 Riscrivi le frasi iniziandole con *All* in modo che il significato non cambi.

- 0 My boyfriend only bought me a magazine for my birthday!
All my boyfriend bought me for my birthday was a magazine!
1 The only thing I've eaten today is a piece of pizza.
.....
2 Why is Tara upset? I only said 'Hello.'
Why is Tara upset?
3 What's happened? The only thing I did was press the green button.
What's happened?

118 Both, neither e either

Both cafés are good. Neither café is expensive. I'll have either coffee or tea.

Si usano *both* (entrambi), *either* (l'uno o l'altro) e *neither* (nessuno dei due) per riferirsi a due persone, oggetti o idee. Si usano in una varietà di modi:

Wear either jacket - they both look great. Indossa l'una o l'altra giacca - sono entrambe splendide.

Both drivers were very lucky and **neither** of them was injured in the accident.

Entrambi i conducenti sono stati fortunati e nessuno dei due è stato ferito nell'incidente.

I don't like either phone. They're both too big.

Non mi piace nessuno dei due telefoni. Sono entrambi troppo grandi.

- i Quando ci si riferisce ai nomi, *both* è seguito da un nome e da un verbo plurale, mentre *either* e *neither* sono seguiti da un nome e un verbo singolare.

Both computers are quite old. **Neither** computer is new.

Both computers have outdated software. **Neither** computer has up-to-date software.

- ii Si può usare sia *both ... and*, *either ... or* (sia... sia/che, o... o) e *neither ... nor* (né... né).

I'm both hungry and tired. Sono sia affamato sia stanco.

We can either get the bus or take a taxi. Possiamo prendere o l'autobus o un taxi.

Neither Bill nor Ben is coming to the party. Né Bill né Ben vengono alla festa.

- iii *Both, either* e *neither* si possono usare da soli.

Tea or coffee? ~ Either. I don't mind. Tè o caffè? ~ O l'uno o l'altro. Non mi importa.

Milk? Sugar? ~ Neither, thanks. Latte? Zucchero? ~ Nessuno dei due, grazie.

Milk? Sugar? ~ Both, please. Latte? Zucchero? ~ Entrambi, prego.

Do you prefer cola or orange juice? ~ I don't drink either.

Preferisce cola o succo d'arancia? ~ Non bevo nessuno dei due.

- iv Si può usare *both of*, *either of* e *neither of*. Quando si usa *of*, occorre usare *the, these, those*, un pronomo (*you, them, us* ecc.) oppure un aggettivo possessivo (*my, their* ecc.).

I've got both of their albums. I don't like either of them.

Ho entrambi i loro album. Non mi piace né l'uno né l'altro.

I don't like either of the cafés. Non mi piace nessuno dei due bar.

Neither of us speaks Spanish. Nessuno di noi parla spagnolo.

Nota che a volte si può usare *both* anche senza *of*. Ma occorre usare *both of* con un pronomo.
I've read both his books. o I've read both of them.

Both of us are taking the exam. Non Both us are taking the exam.

► Vedi unità 169 per *neither do I, neither can I* ecc.

1 Completa i dialoghi usando *both (of)*, *either (of)* o *neither (of)*.

A Have you got any brothers or sisters?

B Yes, I've got two brothers. But ⁰ neither of them lives at home. They're ⁰ both away at university.

A Still or sparkling water?

B ¹ I don't mind.

A Sorry we didn't phone you, but ² of us had our mobiles with us.

B Don't worry.

A Are you from the US or Canada?

B ³ – I'm British, actually. But ⁴ of my parents are American, so I've got their accent.

A OK, so you've tried on ⁵ dresses. Which do you prefer – the red or the black one?

B I don't like ⁶ of them, actually. ⁷ of the colours suits me.

A We can ⁸ have Indian or Chinese food – what do you fancy?

B ⁹ , to be honest. I'm afraid I don't like ¹⁰ How about a pizza?

A I hear it was 2–2 in the game last night.

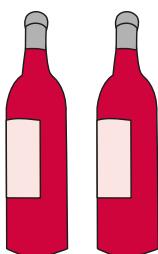
B Yes, it was a good game. ¹¹ teams played really well. There were lots of chances to score and ¹² team could have won.

2 Guarda le figure e scrivi delle frasi usando *both* o *neither* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

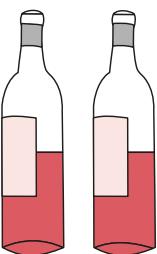
bottle / full bottle / full shop / closed answer / correct translation / correct



1



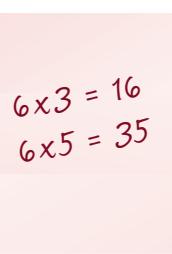
2



3



4



0 Both shops are closed.

3

1

4

2

3 Leggi la tabella in cui sono messi a confronto il Regno Unito, l'Italia e gli Stati Uniti.

Completa le frasi usando *both* ... *and* o *neither* ... *nor*.

	ITALY	UK	USA
Population	59 million	62 million	302 million
Head of state	president	monarch	president
Head of government	prime minister	prime minister	president
Life expectancy	80	79	78
Money	euro	pound	dollar
National sport	football	football	baseball

0 Both Italy and the USA have a president.

1 have a prime minister.

2 has a monarch.

3 have a population of approximately 60 million.

4 have a life expectancy of under 80.

5 uses the euro.

6 Football is the national sport in

4 Scegli un componente della tua famiglia (fratello, sorella, padre, madre, cugino ecc.) e scrivi cinque frasi in cui descrivi ciò che avete in comune. Usa *We both* ... e *Neither of us*

The person I have chosen is:

0 We both like rock music.

3

1

4

2

5

1 Some e any Completa le frasi usando *some*, *any*, *anyone*, *anything*, *someone* o *something*.

- 0 I need some song lyrics translating. Do you know anyone who speaks German?
- 1 Could I have more cake, please?
- 2 You look worried. Have you lost ?
- 3 Skateboarding is easy. can do it!
- 4 Who turned the lights off? I can't see !
- 5 The weather has been great all summer. We haven't had rain for weeks.
- 6 This exercise is difficult. I think I need help.

2 Much, many, a lot of, a few e a little Completa i dialoghi usando *much*, *many*, *a lot (of)*, *a few* o *a little*.

- A I saw Jenny a few days ago.
 B Oh, how is she?
- A I haven't got homework to do tonight. I think I'll go out.
 B Lucky you. I've got maths homework. It's going to take me all evening.
- A Hurry up! We haven't got time!
 B OK, I'll just be more minutes.
- A Did you take photos when you were on holiday?
 B No, not Just of the hotel and the beach.
 A And how was the weather?
 B Well, we had rain, but not Most of the time it was lovely and sunny.
- A Have you got money on you?
 B Only , I'm afraid. How do you need to borrow?
 A Not Say, ten euros.

3 Quantificatori: varie forme Sarah sta facendo delle domande a Clive a proposito di una festa alla quale ha partecipato. Completa il dialogo scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- Sarah How ⁰many/much people were at the party?
 Clive About twenty I'd say.
- Sarah Who did you know there?
 Clive ¹No one / Anyone. I didn't know ²no one / anyone at all.
- Sarah So, did you talk to ³someone / anyone?
 Clive No, ⁴no one / anyone.
- Sarah Oh. So, what did you do all evening?
 Clive ⁵None / Nothing. I just watched ⁶anyone / everyone else.
- Sarah OK, and what was the music like?
 Clive There wasn't ⁷some / any.
- Sarah No music! And was there ⁸any / each food or drink?
 Clive No, ⁹none / any at all. Well, apart from ¹⁰a few / a little crisps – there was one packet between ¹¹all of / all us I think.
- Sarah And there was ¹²none / nothing to drink?
 Clive No, ¹³anything / nothing.
- Sarah It sounds like the worst party ever.
 Clive Yes. ¹⁴Most / Most of people left after about half an hour.
- Sarah And where did you go then?
 Clive ¹⁵Anywhere / Nowhere. I just went home.



4 Quantificatori: varie forme Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.**The London Eye**

The London Eye (often just called The Eye) was opened in 2000 to celebrate the new millennium. It has become the UK's most popular paid tourist attraction with over three-and-a half million visitors ⁰  year.

The Eye rotates at 0.26 metres per second and the capsules are designed so that ¹ passenger has a 360° view of London at ² times. During the 30-minute 'flight' you can see ³ London's famous landmarks and, on a clear day, you can see Heathrow Airport and Windsor Castle, ⁴ approximately 20 miles (32 kilometres) away.

The main structure of The Eye was built in Holland. The 32 capsules, ⁵ capable of carrying 25 passengers, were made in France. ⁶ the glass for the capsules and the cables were manufactured in Italy and ⁷ the electrical components came from the UK. Once ⁸ the components were completed, they were transported up the River Thames by boat.

- | | | | |
|------------|-----------|-----------|----------|
| 0 A all | B most | C each of | D each |
| 1 A all | B all of | C every | D most |
| 2 A each | B every | C either | D all |
| 3 A most | B most of | C several | D many |
| 4 A both | B both of | C either | D every |
| 5 A every | B each of | C each | D all of |
| 6 A Either | B Both | C Every | D Each |
| 7 A all | B several | C most | D every |
| 8 A each | B each of | C every | D all |

5 Quantificatori: varie forme Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 There's no coffee left. *any*
There isn't any coffee left.
- 1 I'm hungry and I'm tired. *both*
I'm tired.
- 2 I'm afraid I don't like either colour. *neither*
I'm afraid colour.
- 3 Sara passed every one of her exams. *all*
Sara exams.
- 4 There are no cafés near here. *any*
There near here.
- 5 I spoke to all the people at my party. *everyone*
I at my party.
- 6 I've only got a little money on me. *much*
I on me.

6 Quantificatori: varie forme Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 0 C'è qualcuno in casa?
<u>Is anyone at home?</u> | 3 A tutti i miei amici piace il calcio. |
| 1 Non conoscevo nessuno alla festa.
..... | 4 Potresti prestarmi dei soldi? |
| 2 Tutti hanno gradito molto la lezione.
..... | 5 Nessuno dei miei genitori parla inglese. |

A Forma

I pronomi soggetto e complemento in inglese sono:

Pronomi soggetto	Pronomi complemento
I	me
you	you
he	him
she	her
it	it
we	us
they	them

Nota che esiste solo una forma di *you* per il singolare e per il plurale, familiare o formale.



Non esistono in inglese forme di cortesia corrispondenti al *Lei*/ *Loro* dell'italiano. La forma di cortesia italiana viene sempre espressa in inglese con *you*, la seconda persona singolare/plurale. Are *you* Swiss? = *Lei* è svizzero? o *Loro* sono svizzeri? o *Tu* sei svizzero?

B Uso

i I pronomi personali soggetto precedono sempre il verbo cui si riferiscono. I pronomi complemento seguono sempre il verbo.

I hate her. *La odio.*

She is going to phone me. *Lei sta per telefonarmi.*

Did you meet them? *Li hai incontrati?*

They don't want it. *Non lo vogliono.*

ii In inglese il soggetto viene sempre espresso e, quando si tratta di un pronomine, viene sempre reso esplicito.

Daniela's my sister. *Have you already met her?*

Daniela è mia sorella. *L'hai già conosciuta?*

Oltre che come soggetto neutro, *it* si usa per esprimere un soggetto impersonale.

It's so hot in here. *Fa così caldo qui dentro.*



A differenza di quanto avviene in italiano, i pronomi complemento in inglese non precedono mai il verbo, ma lo seguono.

Did you tell him the whole truth? *Gli hai detto tutta la verità?*

C Risposte brevi

Nell'inglese informale, si possono a volte dare risposte brevi alle domande con *Who ...?* usando le espressioni *It's/It was + pronomi complemento*. Si può anche usare il pronomi complemento come risposta con una parola singola. *Who's there? ~ It's me.* *Who won? ~ Us.*

Nota che questa è un'alternativa più informale rispetto alle risposte brevi con soggetto + verbo ausiliare (*I am., We did., They are.*).

1 Completa le frasi con il pronomo corretto.

- 0 I see my grandparents a lot. I see them two or three times a week.
- 1 This is Daniela. I work with
- 2 I like your new scooter. When did you get?
- 3 We're lost. Can you help?
- 4 Give me your number and I'll phone
- 5 Where are Harry and William? I need to talk to
- 6 I like your shoes. Where did you get?
- 7 I don't understand. Can you help?
- 8 It's John's birthday. Have you got a present for?

2 Scrivi delle risposte usando i pronomi asserendo il contrario come nell'esempio.

- 0 A Did Isabella phone Mr Smith?
B No, he phoned her.
- 1 A Did Carlo email Anna?
B No,
- 2 A Does Simona fancy Johnny?
B No,
- 3 A Did Alicia and David invite you and Roberto?
B No,
- 4 A Are you and William staying with Wendy and Greta?
B No,
- 5 A Did the children take the dog for a walk?
B No,!
- 6 A I can't remember – did Harry kiss me?
B No,!

3 Riscrivi le risposte con un pronomo oggetto per renderle più informali.

- 0 A Who's going to drive?
B I'm going to drive. Me.
- 1 A Who broke the window?
B He broke the window. It was
- 2 A Who tidied up?
B I tidied up. It was
- 3 A Who's making that noise?
B She's making the noise. It's
- 4 A Who made this mess?
B We made the mess. Sorry. Sorry.

Aggettivi e pronomi possessivi

It's my bag. It's mine. These are our seats. Are these seats ours?

A Uso e forma

Gli aggettivi e pronomi possessivi in inglese sono:

Aggettivi possessivi	Pronomi possessivi
my	mine
your	yours
his	his
her	hers
its	-
our	ours
their	theirs

- i Gli aggettivi e i pronomi possessivi sono invariabili.

This is her magazine. These are her magazines.

Is this key yours? Are these keys yours?

- ii Mentre l'aggettivo possessivo si usa prima del nome, il pronomo possessivo si usa da solo.

It's my bag. The bag's mine. It's mine.

Is this your coat? Is this coat yours? Is this yours?

- iii In inglese l'aggettivo possessivo va sempre prima del nome a cui si riferisce.

This is our car. Non This is car our.

- iv L'articolo *the* non si usa con l'aggettivo possessivo.

My house is near here. Non The my house is near here.

B Its e it's

Its è l'aggettivo possessivo. *It's* è la forma contratta di *it is* e di *it has*.

The dog has broken its leg.

It's a nice day.

It's got a garden.

1 Riscrivi le frasi e le domande usando il pronomi possessivo corretto.

0 This is my bag. This bag is mine.

0 Is this your pen? Is this pen yours?

1 This is his scooter.

2 Are these your shoes?

3 This is our taxi.

4 Is this your bag?

5 It's my paper.

6 It's her dictionary.

7 Is this their car?

8 Are these our seats?

9 This isn't my mobile.

10 These aren't our coats.

2 Riscrivi le frasi e le domande usando l'aggettivo possessivo corretto.

- 0 This car's mine. *This is my car.*.....
1 Are these tickets ours?
- 2 This book is hers.
- 3 Is this magazine yours?
- 4 This house is ours.
- 5 Are these children theirs?
- 6 This bag is his.
- 7 Are these glasses yours?
- 8 This laptop is mine.

3 Completa i dialoghi usando l'aggettivo o il pronome possessivo corretto.

- Ali Do you know the Smiths?
Bella Well, I know Mrs Smith, but I don't know ⁰ *her* husband.
- Alex I saw Enrico in a sports car this morning. Is it ¹ ?
Bill No. It's ² dad's.
- Aimee Is this Patricia's scarf?
Brad No, it isn't ³ Jack was looking for a scarf earlier. I bet it's ⁴
- Angus Are these ⁵ children in the photo?
Bunty No, they're not ⁶ – I haven't got any children! They're ⁷ nephews and nieces.
- Andy Is this mobile ⁸ ?
Becky No, it isn't. ⁹ is an old model – I bought it two years ago.
- Ashley Oxford is most famous for ¹⁰ university.
Ben Yeah. And ¹¹ terrible football team!
- Alice Excuse me. I think you're sitting in the wrong seats. These are ¹² Perhaps those over there are ¹³
- Bruce Oh, sorry. Ah yes, you're right. Those are ¹⁴ seats.

4 Scrivi le domande usando *your* e rispondi usando *my* in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 name? *What's your name?*.....
My name's Jon......
- 1 phone number?
- 2 email address?
- 3 birthday?
- 4 favourite subject at school?
- 5 favourite actor or actress?
- 6 best friend?

Pronomi riflessivi e each other

I did it myself. Did you paint the house yourselves? They gave each other a book.

A Forma

Pronomi soggetto	Pronomi riflessivi
I	myself
you	yourself
he	himself
she	herself
it	itself
we	ourselves
you	yourselves
they	themselves

B Uso

I pronomi riflessivi si usano in diversi modi. Gli usi più comuni sono come complemento di un verbo riflessivo.

I've hurt myself. Mi sono fatto male.

Tom paid for himself. Tom pagò per sé.

In inglese ci sono solo pochi verbi che possono prendere la forma riflessiva in questo modo. Alcuni dei più utili sono:
cut oneself(tagliarsi) *help oneself*(servirsi) *enjoy oneself*(divertirsi)
introduce oneself(presentar(si)) *pride oneself on* (vantarsi di)

I pronomi riflessivi si usano anche:

- i dopo il complemento di un verbo per porre l'enfasi sulla persona che compie l'azione,
I fixed the computer myself. Ho aggiustato il computer da solo.
I'm not telling him. Tell him yourself. Non glielo dirò. Diglielo tu.
- ii dopo un nome o un pronomo per porre l'enfasi sulla persona o sull'oggetto.
I got a letter from the president himself.
Ho ricevuto una lettera dal presidente stesso.

C Each other

Si usa *each other* oppure *each other's* quando una persona fa qualcosa a o per un'altra persona e viceversa.

The students helped each other.

Gli studenti si aiutarono l'un l'altro/a.

They wrote down each other's phone numbers.

Scrissero i numeri telefonici l'uno dell'altro.

Nota la differenza di significato tra *each other* e *themselves/ourselves*.

Zoe and Evie bought each other a book.

Zoe ed Evie comprarono un libro l'un l'altra/a vicenda.

Zoe and Evie bought themselves a book.

Zoe ed Evie comprarono un libro ciascuna.



Alcuni dei verbi riflessivi più comuni in italiano ma non in inglese sono:
behave (comportarsi)
complain (lamentarsi)
dress/get dressed (vestirsi)
fall in love (innamorarsi)
feel (sentirsi)
forget (dimenticarsi)
get up (alzarsi)
hurry (affrettarsi)
notice (accorgersi di)
remember (ricordarsi)
rest (riposarsi)
shave (radersi)
wake up (svegliarsi)
wash (lavarsi)
worry (preoccuparsi)



Nota che molti verbi riflessivi in italiano, in inglese si esprimono con l'espressione *to get + aggettivo/past participle*. Tra i più comuni:
to get bored (annoiarsi)
to get dressed (vestirsi)
to get lost (perdersi)
to get used to (abituarsi)
to get upset (agitarsi)
to get worried (preoccuparsi)

► Vedi unità 82 per l'uso di *to get used to*

- 1** Che cosa stanno facendo le persone raffigurate? Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro e un pronome riflessivo.

the children / not behave she / enjoy he / introduce she / weigh

0



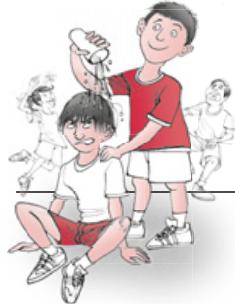
1



2



3



0 She's weighing herself.

2

1

3

- 2** Completa le risposte usando le parole in corsivo e un pronome riflessivo.

0 A Is someone decorating your house for you?
B No, we're doing it ourselves. do it

1 A Did Paul take his scooter to the garage?
B No, he didn't. He repair it

2 A Who taught you to play the guitar?
B No one. I teach

3 A I'm hungry. Can I have a biscuit?
B Of course, help

4 A Did Harry pay for your pizza?
B No, he didn't. I pay for it

5 A Do you want some help?
B No, thanks. I'm sure I can install the software

6 A Who did you complain to about the food?
B I demanded to speak to the manager

- 3** Riscrivi le frasi in modo che siano più naturali usando *each other*.

0 Brad fell out of love with Jen, and Jen fell out of love with Brad.
Brad and Jen fell out of love with each other.

1 Bill doesn't like Tom, and Tom doesn't like Bill.
Bill and Tom

2 I email her every day, and she emails me every day.
We

3 Do you know Johnny, and does Johnny know you?
Do you and Johnny

- 4** Completa le frasi usando *each other, themselves o ourselves*.

0 Lucy and I really enjoyed ourselves at the party.

1 The children really enjoyed at the park.

2 At Christmas, people buy presents.

3 Alicia and I don't see very often these days.

4 We didn't let Peter pay for our tickets – we paid for them

5 Ana and Belinda had a big argument. They're not speaking to

6 Children learn to dress when they are about four years old.

123

This, that, these, those

This tiramisu is delicious. Is that your coat? Are these your keys? Whose are those?

A Uso e forma

Si può usare *this, that, these e those* con o senza un nome.

This pizza is delicious. This is delicious.

Whose are these shoes? Whose are these?

i *This (questo/a) e that (quello/a)* si usano con nomi singolari.

This is my car.



That's Frank's car.



ii Con i nomi plurali si usano *these (questi/e)* e *those (quelli/e ecc.)*.

These are my books.



Those are your books.



Nota che in inglese *this, that, these e those* non cambiano la forma in base al genere dei nomi.
This is my brother.
This is my sister.
Who are those boys?
Who are those girls?

B This is ...

Si può usare *This is ...* quando si presenta qualcuno e quando ci si presenta al telefono.

Alfred *Boris, this is Jane. Have you met before?*

Boris *No, we haven't. Nice to meet you Jane.*

Receiver *Hello.*

Caller *This is Bill Smith. Can I speak to Valerie Harrison, please?*

C This year, this weekend, these days

Si usano le espressioni *this week/month/year* per riferirsi alla settimana/mese/anno in cui si è attualmente.

Have you seen Roberto this week?

It's Simona's birthday later this month.

Si usa *this Friday/July/weekend* per riferirsi al prossimo venerdì/luglio/weekend.

I'm going to a party this Friday.

Are you going away this weekend?

Si usa *these days* (questi giorni) per riferirsi al tempo presente in generale.

Life is very expensive these days.

I don't see Francesco much these days.

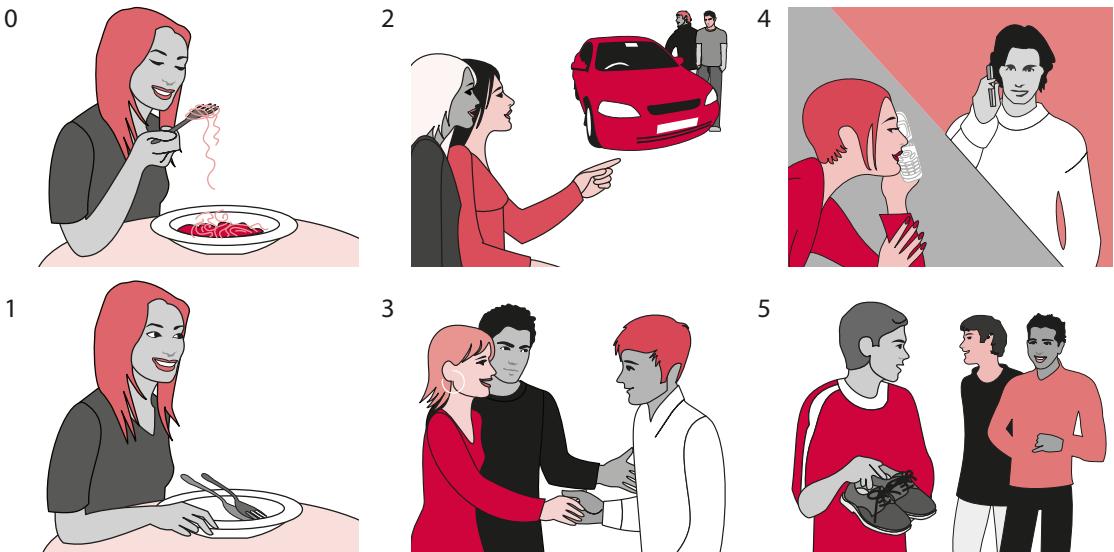
1 Scrivi *this* o *these*.

0	<i>this</i>	coat	3	<i>children</i>	6	<i>traffic</i>
1		coats	4	<i>shoes</i>	7	<i>coffee</i>
2		music	5	<i>information</i>	8	<i>cafes</i>

2 Scrivi *that* o *those*.

0	<i>that</i>	table	3	<i>bread</i>	6	<i>students</i>
1		tables	4	<i>shirts</i>	7	<i>person</i>
2		money	5	<i>homework</i>	8	<i>people</i>

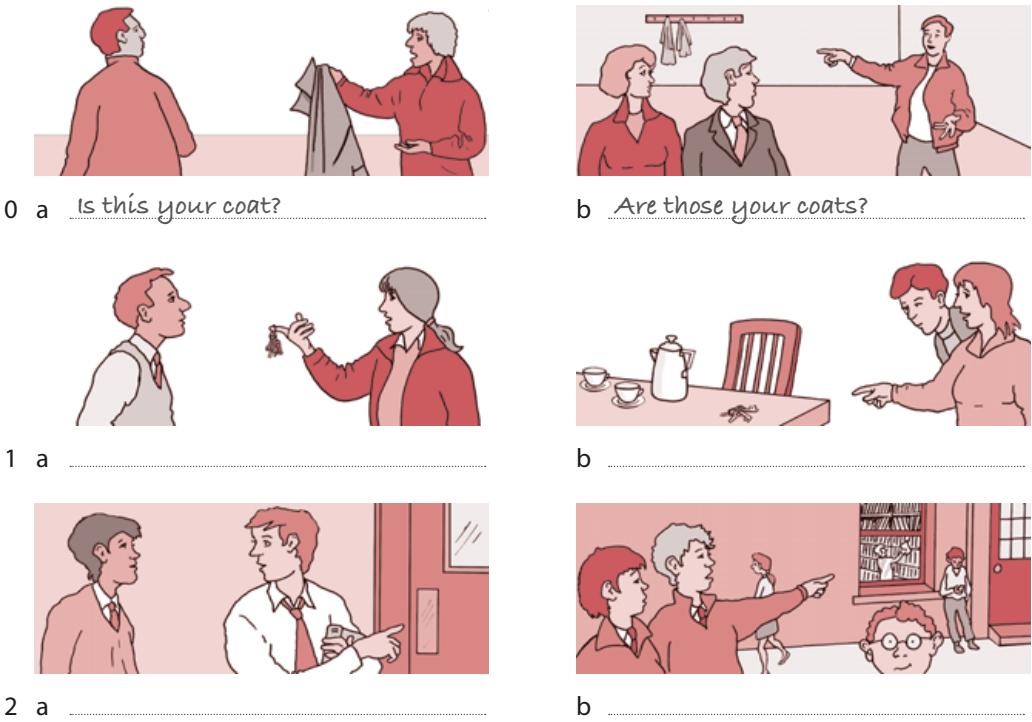
3 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Completa usando *this, that, these o those*.



- 0 *This* spaghetti is delicious.
 1 was delicious.
 2 Look at boys next to car. What are they doing?
 3 Harry, is Eva.
 4 Hi, is Victoria Evans. Is David Bradley?
 5 Whose are?

4 Guarda le figure e scrivi le domande con *Is this/that o Are these/those*. Usa le parole del riquadro due volte. Potrebbe essere necessario usare la forma plurale della parola.

the library your coat your keys



124 One e ones

Which **one** do you prefer? This **one** is mine. I'll have the blue **ones**.

A Uso e forma

Si usano *one* e *ones* al posto di un nome numerabile che è stato nominato in precedenza.

I haven't got a pen. Have you got one? Non ho una penna. Ne hai una?

Is there a bank near here? ~ Yes, there's **one** round the corner.

C'è una banca vicino? ~ Sì, ce n'è una dietro l'angolo.

I didn't buy the black boots. I bought the brown ones.

Non ho comprato gli stivali neri. Ho comprato quelli marroni.



Nota che in inglese non si usa *that* per indicare *the ... one*.

Can I have the red one?

Non ~~can~~ I have ~~that~~ red?

Posso avere quella rossa?

Si usa abitualmente *one* e *ones* se si parla di alternative o di scelte.

i Con *this*, *that*, *each*, *every*, *any*, *either* ecc.

Do you want this one or that one? ~ I don't mind. **Any one** is fine.

ii Dopo *which*

There are several coats. Which one is yours?

iii Dopo gli aggettivi

My scooter is the silver one. Non *My scooter is the silver*.

iv Nell'espressione *the one*

Which hotel are you staying in? ~ **The one** next to the beach.

B It oppure one?

It si riferisce a qualcosa di specifico. *One* e *ones* a qualcosa di non specifico.

If you're not using your pen, can I borrow it?

Se non usi la penna, posso prenderla in prestito?

I haven't got a pen. Have you got one?

Non ho la penna. Ne hai una?

1 Riscrivi le risposte in modo che siano più naturali usando *one* o *ones*.

0 A Did you get a new mobile?

B No. I didn't see a mobile that I liked.

No. I didn't see one that I liked.

1 A Can you lend me a pen?

B Sorry. I haven't got a pen.

2 A Did you buy the black gloves?

B No. I got the blue gloves.

3 A Would you like a coffee?

B No thanks. I've just had a coffee.

4 A Is there a supermarket near here?

B Yes. There's a supermarket over there.

5 A Are these photos recent?

B No. They're old photos.

- 6 A Which bar did you go to?
B The bar on Queen Street.

- 7 A Which is Francesca's house?
B It's either this house or that house.

A Oh yes. I think it's this house. The house with the blue door.

- 8 A Can you pass me my coat?
B Which coat's yours? The stripy coat or the checked coat?

A The checked coat.

2 Che cosa stanno chiedendo queste persone? Usa *Which ...?* e le parole in corsivo.

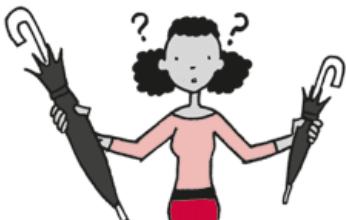
0



2



1



3



0 Which bus? This one or that one?

this / that

1 _____
the big / the small

this / that

2 _____
the black / the white

3 Completa i dialoghi usando un'espressione che includa *one* e le parole del riquadro.

any each either neither the this which

- 0 A Which newspaper shall I buy?

B Any one. You choose.

- 1 A Do you want a different chair?

B No. is fine, thanks.

- 2 A Do I get the number 23 or the number 26 bus to get to the town centre?

B They both go to the town centre.

- 3 A I don't fancy either of these films.

B No. looks very interesting.

- 4 A Are all the apartments the same?

B No. is different when you get inside.

- 5 A I've bought that scooter.

B ?

A we saw in the paper yesterday.

1 Pronomi e determinanti Completa i dialoghi usando la parola corretta.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 0 A Do you like the colour? | B It's OK, but I think I prefer the blue <u>one</u> . |
| 1 A How often do you see your cousins? | B I suppose I see once or twice a month. |
| 2 A How many people went to the restaurant? | B Just two of us. and Samantha. |
| 3 A Who taught to play the guitar? | B No one. I never had lessons. I taught |
| 4 A Is this coat? | B No, it isn't – I think it's Guido's. |
| 5 A Can I borrow a pen? | B Sorry, I haven't got |
| 6 A I saw brother yesterday. | B Which? I have two: Andrea or Antonio? |
| 7 A How's pizza? | B Delicious. And? |

PET

2 Pronomi e determinanti Leggi la storia e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

A young man was shopping in a supermarket when he noticed that a woman was following ⁰A.

The man moved from aisle to aisle to try to avoid ¹....., but the woman always followed him. She was looking at ²..... sadly.

When the man had finished shopping, he found ³..... behind the woman in a long checkout queue. ⁴..... trolley was completely full. After a few minutes, the woman spoke. 'I'm sorry for following you,' she said, 'but you look exactly like ⁵..... son. He died a month ago. ⁶..... is where he used to do ⁷..... shopping and I thought for a moment that you were his ghost.' Tears appeared in the woman's eyes. The young man felt very sorry for ⁸..... and they chatted to ⁹..... for a few minutes.

As the woman got to the checkout, she asked 'As I leave the supermarket, will you say 'Goodbye Mum' to ¹⁰.....? I know it may seem strange, but it will make ¹¹..... feel so much better.' The young man thought for a moment and agreed to ¹²..... request.

The woman gave ¹³..... a tearful smile, waved and picked up ¹⁴..... heavy bags. 'Goodbye Mum!' he said as she walked out of the supermarket.

The man was thinking about what had happened when the cashier told him that his bill was £150. 'There must be a mistake. I only have three items,' the young man said. 'Yes,' replied the cashier, 'but ¹⁵..... mother said that you are paying for ¹⁶....., too!'

- | | | | |
|-------------|--------------|-----------|--------------|
| 0 A him | B me | C her | D you |
| 1 A she | B her | C herself | D hers |
| 2 A he | B him | C himself | D his |
| 3 A he | B his | C him | D himself |
| 4 A One | B It | C Her | D Hers |
| 5 A me | B my | C mine | D I |
| 6 A This | B That | C These | D It |
| 7 A himself | B him | C he | D his |
| 8 A she | B herself | C her | D hers |
| 9 A them | B themselves | C they | D each other |
| 10 A me | B my | C mine | D I |
| 11 A I | B my | C me | D mine |
| 12 A her | B hers | C she | D its |
| 13 A he | B him | C his | D himself |
| 14 A hers | B her | C she | D these |
| 15 A one | B you | C your | D yours |
| 16 A she | B its | C hers | D herself |

FCE 3 **Pronomi e determinanti** Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 Suzy is one of my friends from university. *mine*
 Suzy is a friend of mine from university.
- 1 Are these keys yours or Claudio's? *your*
 Are these or Claudio's?
- 2 These are our seats, aren't they? *ours*
 These , aren't they?
- 3 Sara doesn't like Enrico, and Enrico doesn't like Sara. *each*
 Sara and Enrico other.
- 4 No one helped me to clean the room this morning. *myself*
 I this morning.
- 5 Tomorrow, Assunta and I are going shopping. *me*
 Tomorrow, shopping.
- 6 Which car is theirs? *their*
 Which car?

T 4 **Pronomi e determinanti** Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Qual è il tuo indirizzo di posta elettronica? What's your email address?
- 1 Bruno e Alicia si conoscono?
- 2 Quale sciarpa preferisci: quella rossa o quella blu?
- 3 Mi sono svegliato alle 6.30 questa mattina.
- 4 Mi dispiace, mi sono dimenticato di comprare il latte.
- 5 Quale cappotto è il tuo?
- 6 Hai fatto la pizza tu stesso?

5 Grammatica e lessico: aggettivi possessivi (igiene personale) Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Completa le frasi usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

brush / hair clean / teeth cut / nails wash / face wash / hair



- 0 She's washing her face.



- 3 They



- 1 She



- 4 She



- 2 He

*He's in the garden. The car is **opposite** the park. We live **near** the station.*

A Uso e forma

Si usano le preposizioni di luogo per indicare dove è qualcosa. Le frasi da 1 a 15 indicano le principali preposizioni di luogo in inglese.



- 1 *The school is **between** a bookshop and a café. (tra/fra)*
- 2 *The school is **opposite** a park. (di fronte)*
- 3 *There are some students **outside** the school. (fuori)*
- 4 *There are some students **inside** the school. (dentro)*
- 5 *The school is **near** a bus stop. (vicino)*
- 6 *There are some people **at** the bus stop. (a)*



- 7 *The teacher is **behind** the desk. (dietro)*
- 8 *There's a map **on** the wall. (sopra/su)*
- 9 *There's a computer **on** the desk. (sopra/su)*
- 10 *There's a cupboard **next to/by** the window. (vicino/accanto a)*
- 11 *The light is **above/over** the desk. (sopra)*
- 12 *There's a bag **under/below** the desk. (sotto)*
- 13 *A student is **in front of** the teacher's desk. (davanti)*
- 14 *There are some books **on top** of the cupboard. (sopra)*
- 15 *There are some students **in** the classroom. (in/dentro)*

B At

Si usa **at**:

i Nelle espressioni *at home, at school, at work*.
*I'll be **at** home all evening. Bill's **at** work at the moment.*
*I won't be **at school** tomorrow.*

ii Per eventi (feste, concerti, conferenze ecc.) e per posti dove un evento specifico o un'attività ha luogo (palestra, cinema, ristorante, supermercato, stazione, hotel ecc.).
*We met **at** a party/concert/conference.*
*I saw Oliver **at** the gym/cinema/supermarket/restaurant/library.*



Nota che **opposite** significa 'di fronte a, dirimpetto' ad esempio quando si indica in edificio al lato opposto della strada rispetto ad un altro edificio. Invece **in front of** significa 'davanti a'.



Ci sono numerose differenze tra inglese e italiano nell'uso delle preposizioni.

Alcune tra le più importanti sono:

*He's **in** bed. (a letto)*

*I live **in** London. (a Londra)*

*I read it **in** the paper **on** page two. (a pagina due del giornale)*

*The bank is **on** the right. (sulla destra)*

*They live **on** the third floor. (al terzo piano)*

*There's a poster **on** the wall. (sul muro)*

*Let's meet **at** Roberto's (house). (da Roberto)*

*We live **at** the end of the street. (in fondo alla via)*

*The school is **at** the top/bottom of the hill. (cima alla collina/ai piedi della collina)*

1 Guarda la stanza e completa le frasi usando le preposizioni di luogo corrette.

- 0 There's a tree outside the window.
- 1 There are two people the room.
- 2 The boy is the bed.
- 3 The girl is sitting the desk.
- 4 The desk is the window.
- 5 There's a laptop the desk.
- 6 There's a chair the bed.
- 7 The chair is the bed and the wardrobe.
- 8 There's a guitar the chair.
- 9 There are some books the wardrobe.
- 10 There are some shoes the bed.
- 11 There's a poster the wall the bed.



2 Completa l'email usando le preposizioni di luogo corrette.



Here I am ⁰ in New York. I'm staying ¹ Greenwich Village. The hotel is ² the end of a little road ³ Mercer Street and Thompson Street. It's quite ⁴ Union Square, which is about five minutes' walk away. My room is ⁵ the third floor and I've got a great view of the street ⁶ There are lots of cafés, restaurants and shops. In fact, there's a fantastic Italian restaurant directly ⁷ the hotel. It's called Luigi's. And there's a great little café ⁸ Luigi's. It's got some tables and chairs ⁹ and it's a great place to sit and watch the world go by – if it's not raining, of course! And if it is raining, the café's pretty cool ¹⁰ , with lots of interesting art ¹¹ the walls and books to read.

3 Completa le frasi con la preposizione corretta.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1 Kate's bed. | 5 My house is the left. |
| 2 Sam lives Oxford. | 6 I stayed home last night. |
| 3 He lives Green Road. | 7 Let's meet Joe's house. |
| 4 I saw Sue Nic's party. | 8 The picture is page six. |

Preposizioni: moto

I'm going to the shops. We walked through the park. I translated it into English.

Queste sono le principali preposizioni di moto in inglese.



I walked across the road.



I went over the bridge and along the river.



I ran through the gate and round/around the fountain.



I drove under the bridge and past the church.



I walked from my house to the bus stop.



I got on/onto the bus.



I got off the bus.



I went in/into the shop.



I came out of the shop.



We drove towards London and then turned south.

i Si usa in genere *to* quando si ‘viaggia’ fino ad un luogo.

I usually walk to school. I'm going to the supermarket.

We went to Rome at the weekend.

Ma si dice *I'm going home*. Non *I'm going to home*.

ii *Into* e *onto* indicano movimento. Comunque, se il contesto implica in modo chiaro l’idea di movimento, si può usare anche *in* e *on*.

He pushed me into/in the river. I kicked the ball onto/on the roof.

iii Si usa *get in/into* e *get out of* per macchine, taxi e piccole imbarcazioni (per esempio barca a remi, canoa). Si usa *get on/onto* e *get off* per autobus, pullman, treno, aereo, grandi barche (per esempio nave, traghetto ecc.), bicicletta, scooter, motocicletta e cavallo.

Get in the car. Where do we get out of the taxi?

Get on the scooter. Where do we get off the bus?

- 1** Guarda la mappa. Poi completa il tragitto di Paula da casa a scuola usando le preposizioni di moto corrette.

I go ⁰ out of my house and walk ¹ the corner. I walk ² the shops and I go through the gate ³ the park. I then walk ⁴ the park and ⁵ the other side. I go ⁶ the bridge and ⁷ the river for about half a kilometre. I then go ⁸ the road, ⁹ the bridge and ¹⁰ the shops. I turn ¹¹ Green Street and the school is on the left. I take the same route in reverse to come back ¹² school. Sometimes, I take the bus. I get ¹³ the bus near my house and get ¹⁴ the bus outside the shops near the school.



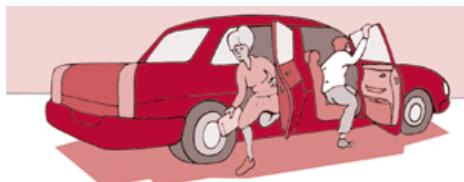
- 2** Leggi le descrizioni che alcune persone fanno delle vacanze dell'estate precedente. Completale usando le preposizioni di moto corrette.

Last summer we went ⁰ to Italy. We drove ¹ London ² Bari. We went ³ France and Switzerland and ⁴ the east coast of Italy.

We went ⁵ Greece for our holidays last year. It was amazing when we flew ⁶ the Alps. We then hired a car at Athens airport and drove ⁷ Athens ⁸ the south of Greece. It was exciting when we drove ⁹ the bridge that goes ¹⁰ the Corinth Canal.

We went ¹¹ a small island in the north of England called Holy Island. When the tide is low, you can drive ¹² the island ¹³ a narrow road. The island is very small: you can walk all the way ¹⁴ it in a few hours. It's my favourite place in England.

- 3** Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Scrivi delle frasi per ciascuna persona usando le preposizioni di moto corrette.



- 0 He's getting in the car.
She's getting out of the car.



- 2 He
She



- 1 He
She



- 3 He
She

- 4** Scrivi un breve testo in cui descrivi il tuo tragitto da casa a scuola.

I go out of my house and

Let's meet at 6.30. I saw him on Monday. I was born in 1999.

Le principali preposizioni di tempo e i loro usi sono:

A At, on, in

- i Si usa *at* per periodi e per le festività e nelle espressioni *at the moment*, *at the weekend* e *at night*.
The bus leaves at 6 o'clock. I'll see you at Christmas. What are you doing at the weekend?
 - ii *On* si usa per i giorni e per le date.
The party's on Friday. Suzy's birthday is on 28th May. Kim was born on New Year's Day.
 - iii Si usa *in* per periodi di tempo più lunghi, come mesi, anni, secoli e stagioni.
My birthday is in June. We got married in 1998. In the spring. Life was hard in the 1800s.
- Si usa *in* anche per le parti del giorno. Ma si usa *on* se si specifica anche il giorno.
The exam's in the afternoon. The exam's on Tuesday afternoon.
- Si usa *in* anche per dire il momento in cui qualcosa avverrà nel futuro.
The film starts in ten minutes. I'll email you in a couple of days.
- Si usa *in* anche per dire quanto tempo ci vuole per fare qualcosa.
I can run a kilometre in five minutes.

B For, from ... to/until, between ... and

- i *For* si usa per dire per quanto tempo continua qualcosa.
You are at school for six hours each day.
We're going on holiday for two weeks.
- **Vedi unità 27 per altri usi di *for*.**
- ii *From* si usa per dire quando inizia qualcosa e *to* o *until* per dire quando finisce.
I work from 8.30 to 5.00. You can stay up until midnight.



Nota che in inglese non si uniscono le preposizioni con gli articoli. Per esempio:
in the morning = *al mattino*
in the afternoon = *nel pomeriggio*

C By

Si usa *by* per esprimere 'non più tardi di'.
I need to finish my work by Friday at the latest. We have to be at school by 8 o'clock.

1 Completa la tabella con le parole ed espressioni del riquadro.

four o'clock five minutes half past three the afternoon Thursday afternoon Saturday
 the 15th April August winter Christmas Christmas Day my birthday 2012 8.45 the weekend

at	on	in
four o'clock		

2 Completa le frasi con le preposizioni di tempo corrette.

- 0 My birthday is in July.
- 1 My birthday is on 15th July.
- 2 I was born in 2002.
- 3 I usually get up at 7.15 ...
- 4 ... but I get up at about 9 o'clock on the weekend.
- 5 I usually watch TV in the evening.
- 6 I go to school from 8.00 to 2.00.
- 7 We have an English class on Monday morning.
- 8 The school year starts in September.
- 9 It's my brother's birthday on Wednesday.
- 10 The weather is usually very hot in summer.
- 11 I started school in 2006.
- 12 In Italy, you have to go to school for nine years.
- 13 The shop is open from 8.30 to 5.30 every day.
- 14 I need to finish my homework by Friday at the latest.
- 15 We're going on holiday for two weeks, on 2nd of 16th August.

3 Completa le frasi usando un'espressione di tempo che sia vera per te.

- 0 I was born in 1998.
- 1 I was born in 1998.
- 2 My birthday is in June.
- 3 School starts at 8.00 and finishes at 16.00 each day.
- 4 I go to school for 6 hours each day.
- 5 The school year starts in September and continues until June.
- 6 I usually go to bed at 22.00.

4 Riscrivi le frasi usando *in*.

- 0 It's now 10.30. The lesson finishes at 10.45.
The lesson finishes in fifteen minutes.
- 1 It's now 8.20. The shop opens at 8.30.
.....
- 2 It's now 10th October. My birthday is on 15th October.
.....
- 3 It's now 18th July. The football season starts on 18th August.
.....

5 Completa le frasi usando le date del riquadro e la preposizione adatta.

1896 2nd June, 1946 4th July 21st July, 1969 AD 43 1945

- 0 American Independence Day is on 4th July.
- 1 Italy became a republic in 1896.
- 2 The first modern Olympic games were held in Greece in 1896.
- 3 The Second World War lasted from 1939 to 1945.
- 4 Humans first walked on the moon on 21st July, 1969.
- 5 The Romans ruled Britain for 43 years, from AD 43 to 1945.

1 Preposizioni Completa i dialoghi con le preposizioni corrette di stato in luogo, moto a luogo o di tempo.

- Gina Did you get wet when it started raining?
 James Not really. We were ⁰ *in* the park so we sheltered ¹ a tree. It only rained ² about ten minutes.
- Tom How do I get ³ your house?
 Sam I live ⁴ Henry Street. Take the number 3 bus ⁵ the station. Get ⁶ the bus ⁷ the first stop after you have gone ⁸ the river. Henry Street is directly ⁹ the bus stop – cross the road ¹⁰ the traffic lights. My house is number 42. It's ¹¹ the left ¹² the end of the road.
- Bella Did you go away at the weekend?
 Julia Yes, we went ¹³ London, actually. ¹⁴ Friday ¹⁵ Sunday evening. We stayed ¹⁶ a little hotel right ¹⁷ the city centre.
- Bella Did you have a good time?
 Julia Yes, it was great. We saw all the sights and we took a trip ¹⁸ a boat ¹⁹ the River Thames. That was my favourite bit.
- Visitor Can you tell me how to get ²⁰ Mr Smith's office?
 Receptionist Yes. It's ²¹ the third floor. You can take the lift or go ²² the stairs. When you get ²³ the third floor, turn left and Mr Smith's office is ²⁴ the right.
- Anna Are you going on holiday next year?
 Linda Yes, we're going ²⁵ America ²⁶ August. We're going ²⁷ three weeks. We're going to spend a week ²⁸ New York and then we're flying ²⁹ San Francisco. We're hiring a car and we're going to drive ³⁰ San Francisco ³¹ Las Vegas.
- Anna Nice. We went there a few years ago – ³² 2009, I think. I was about ten. But we just stayed ³³ Florida ³⁴ two weeks.

2 Preposizioni Completa l'email con le preposizioni corrette.

Hi Carlo,

I'm having a really good time here ⁰ *in* England. I'm ¹ Bournemouth, which is ² the south coast. I'm doing an English course ³ a language school. We have lessons ⁴ 9.30 ⁵ 12.30 and ⁶ the afternoon we visit places or do sports. Yesterday, we went ⁷ a park and played football against another school. We won!

The school is ⁸ the centre of Bournemouth and very ⁹ to the sea – you can walk there ¹⁰ about ten minutes. The school has students ¹¹ lots of different countries – we are all ¹² 14 and 16 years old. The lessons are really fun and I am learning a lot.

I am staying with an English family. There is a boy our age and a girl who is 17. They are very friendly. I walk ¹³ the school every day. I go ¹⁴ the seafront and then ¹⁵ a park that goes ¹⁶ the seafront ¹⁷ the town centre. It's really nice.

I have to go now because we have a lesson ¹⁸ five minutes. Please email me back soon.

Ciao,

Salvatore

PS The teacher asked us to write an email in English. I hope you understand it!

3 Preposizioni Riferisci le informazioni spiegando dove o quando hanno luogo.

Channel 5		Documentary
8.30	Olympics Live	7.00 C
8.30		8.30 P
10.00		10.00 Y
10.35		10.35 H
11.30	Today	11.30 Th

0 The Olympics is on channel 5 at 8.30.

meet Jane's house Friday 7.30

MEMO
Meeting in room 6, 2.30

1 The meeting is



3 We're meeting



2 The wedding is

4 The sale starts



I've booked a football pitch - Brookes Sports Centre, Thursday 5.30-7.00. See you there! Alex

5 Alex has booked a football pitch

T 4 Preposizioni Traduci le frasi.

0 Sono nato nel 1999.

I was born in 1999.

1 Ci incontriamo a casa di Armando alle 2.30.

2 Il caffè è a fianco del museo, sulla destra.

3 Ho visto Gianni alla stazione ieri. Stava andando a Milano.

4 Incontriamoci davanti al cinema alle 7.30.

5 Riesce a correre i 100 metri in circa dieci secondi.

6 C'è un parco dietro alla scuola.

5 Grammatica e lessico: preposizioni di tempo (le date) Rispondi alle domande scrivendo le date in due modi diversi.

(Di solito si può esprimere la data in due modi: 15th May = 'the fifteenth of May' oppure 'May the fifteenth'.)

1 What is the date today?

2 When is your birthday?

3 When is Festa della Repubblica?

A Uso e forma

Ci sono molte espressioni formate da preposizione + nome. Le seguenti sono tra le più utili:

On + nome

on fire (a fuoco)
on foot (a piedi)
on holiday (in vacanza)
on the internet (su internet)
on a journey/a trip/a tour (in viaggio/in gita/in giro)
on the phone (al telefono)
on purpose (di proposito)
on strike (in sciopero)
on television/the radio (alla televisione/alla radio)
on the whole (nel complesso)

In + nome

in advance (in anticipo)
in cash (in contanti)
in charge of (la supervisione di)
in control of (in controllo di)
in danger (in pericolo)
in fashion (di moda)
in general (in generale)
in a hurry (in fretta)
in love (innamorato)
in luck (fortunato)
in my opinion (secondo me)
in order (al fine di)
in pain (sofferente)
in summary/short/brief/a word/conclusion
 (in sintesi/in breve/brevemente/in una parola/in conclusione)

By + nome

by car/bus/train (in macchina/autobus/treno)
by chance (per caso)
by cheque/credit card (tramite assegno/carta di credito)
by mistake/accident (per caso)

For + nome

for breakfast/lunch (a colazione/pranzo)
go for a drink/for a walk/for a swim ecc.
 (andare a fare una bevuta/una passeggiata/una nuotata)
for sale (in vendita)

Out of + nome

out of control (fuori controllo)
out of danger (fuori pericolo)
out of date (fuori moda)
out of luck (sfortunato)
out of order (fuori servizio)
out of work (disoccupato)

Up to + nome

up to date (aggiornato)

Under + nome

under age (minorenne)
under control (sotto controllo)
under pressure (sotto pressione)

B At the end, in the end

- i *At the end* si riferisce alla fine di qualcosa. L'opposto di *at the end of* è *at the beginning of*.
*We're going on holiday **at the end of** July.*
*I'll phone you **at the beginning of** next week.*
- ii *In the end* significa 'alla fine' o 'finalmente'. L'opposto di *in the end* è *at first*.
*At first, we wanted to go to France, but **in the end** we decided to go to Italy.*

C On the way, in the way

- i *On the way* significa 'durante il tragitto'.
*Shall I call at your house **on the way** to school?*
- ii *In the way* significa 'che ostruisce' o che 'impedisce la visuale'.
*I can't see Toni. There are too many people **in the way**.*

D On time, in time

- i *On time* significa 'puntuale', secondo un orario o un tempo prefissato.
*The train left exactly **on time**.*
- ii *In time* significa 'abbastanza in tempo'. Il contrario è *too late* (troppo in ritardo).
*Did you get to the shop **in time**? ~ No, we were **too late**. It was already closed.*

1 Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 A Did you come here *by* / *in* bus?
B No, I came *by* / *in* train.
- 1 A Sorry we're late. First, the bus didn't leave *in* / *on* time and then it broke down *in* / *on* the way.
B You should have come *by* / *in* car.
- 2 A Alice has gone *for* / *to* a walk *by* the river.
B Well, lunch will be ready in five minutes. I hope she gets back *in* / *on* time.
- 3 A Is the Arsenal game *in* / *on* TV tonight?
B Let me check. Er, no, you're *out of* / *under* luck I'm afraid. They're showing the Chelsea game.
- 4 A Have you decided where to go *in* / *on* holiday?
A Well, we thought about England, or Ireland, but *at* / *in* the end we decided to go to France again.
- 5 A William and Britney seem so *in* / *on* love!
B Haven't you heard? They're getting married *at* / *in* the end of the year.
- 6 A How do you get to school?
B *By* / *On* foot. But if I'm *in* / *on* a hurry, I go *by* / *on* bike.
- 7 A Did Harry delete the photograph *in* / *on* purpose?
B Well, he said he did it *by* / *in* accident.

2 Scrivi la preposizione mancante.



3 UNEMPLOYMENT
RISES – 5 MILLION
NOW OUT
.....
WORK

3 Scrivi delle frasi che descrivano le figure. Usa le parole del riquadro accompagnate da *in* oppure *on*.

danger fire the internet love pain the phone



- 0 They're *in* love.
- 1 It
- 2 He

- 3 She
- 4 He
- 5 She

I'm listening to the radio. It depends on the weather. We're waiting for Jimmy.

A Uso e forma

Alcuni verbi sono usati con una preposizione. Alcuni tra i più utili sono:

apologize for/to (scusarsi di/a)

apply for (fare domanda per)

ask for (chiedere, chiedere di)

believe in (credere a)

belong to (appartenere a)

complain about/to (lamentarsi di/con)

concentrate on (concentrarsi su)

dream about (sognare)

dream of (sognare di)

depend on (dipendere da)

happen to (accadere a)

hear about (sentire)

hear from (avere notizie di)

hear of (sentire di)

listen to (ascoltare)

live on (vivere di)

look after (badare a)

look/stare at (guardare/fissare)

look for (cercare)

pay for (pagare per)

play for (giocare per)

rely on (contare su)

speak/talk to (parlare a/con)

think about (pensare a)

think of (pensare di)

travel/run/fly at (viaggiare/correre/volare a)

wait for (aspettare)

write to (scrivere a)

I apologized to the teacher for being late.

I've applied for a new job.

Did you ask for a clean knife?

Do you believe in God?

Who does this belong to?

We complained to the manager about the service.

I need to concentrate on my work.

I dreamt about you last night!

I dream of being a billionaire one day.

We may go for a walk. It depends on the weather.

What happened to you?

Did you hear about Matt's party?

Have you heard from Peter recently?

I've never heard of a band called 'Nirvana'.

Sssh! I'm listening to the radio.

He's got a terrible diet. He lives on burgers and coke!

Can you look after my cat for a few days?

What are you looking at?

What are you looking for?

I'll pay for lunch.

I play for the school football team.

I can always rely on my parents if I need advice.

Did you speak/talk to Harry last night?

You're quiet. What are you thinking about?

We're thinking of going to France this year.

The train travels at about 200 kph.

I'm waiting for the taxi.

I'll write to you soon.

Nota che si dice *write to*, ma non si usa una preposizione con i verbi *telephone, email, text* ecc.

I'll email you later. I'll text you this evening. Can you fax me the details?

B Verbo + preposizione + -ing

Dopo verbo + preposizione si usa la forma *-ing* del verbo.

He apologized for being late. I'm thinking of buying a car.

► Vedi unità 80 per l'uso delle preposizioni + *-ing*.

1 Da quale preposizione sono seguiti i verbi del riquadro? Riscrivili nella colonna corretta.

apply ask belong concentrate depend happen listen live pay rely talk wait write

to	for	on
talk		

2 Descrivi ciò che stanno facendo queste persone usando i verbi del riquadro.

apply ask dream listen wait write



0 She's writing to John.



3 He ... pizza.



1 She ... music.



4 They ... a bus.



2 He ... the bill.



5 She ... a job.

3 Questi verbi richiedono una preposizione diversa a seconda del contesto.

Leggi i dialoghi e scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 A Have you heard from / of a group called The Changelings?
B No, I haven't. What kind of music do they play?
- 1 A Did you complain to / about the waiter to / about the service?
B Yes, we did. And he apologized to / for us to / for the terrible food, as well.
- 2 A Have you heard the news of / about Penelope?
B No. In fact, I haven't heard of / from Penelope for ages. No emails, no phone calls, nothing.
- 3 A You're quiet. What are you thinking of / about?
B Oh, I'm thinking of / about getting a new car. Do you think I need a new one?
- 4 A What are you looking at / for? Have you lost something?
B Yes. My keys.
A Are you blind? They're there. You're looking right for / at them!

4 Completa le domande usando la preposizione corretta. Poi scrivi risposte vere per te.

- 0 Do you belong to ... any clubs? ~ Yes, I belong to a sports club.
- 1 Do you believe ... ghosts? ~
- 2 What did you dream ... last night? ~
- 3 Which famous person do you dream ... meeting? ~
- 4 How much money do you live ... each week? ~
- 5 Who pays ... your school books? ~
- 6 What kind of music do you listen ... ? ~

I borrowed some money from Thomas. I need to do something about my hair.

A Uso e forma

Alcuni verbi seguono la costruzione verbo + complemento + preposizione. Alcuni dei verbi più utili sono:

accuse someone of (accusare qualcuno di)
arrest someone for (arrestare qualcuno per)
ask someone for (chiedere qualcosa a qualcuno)
blame someone for (dare la colpa a qualcuno per)
borrow something from (prendere in prestito qualcosa da)
congratulate someone on (congratularsi con qualcuno per)
cut/divide/separate something into (tagliare/ dividere/separare qualcosa in)
do something about (fare qualcosa per)
explain something to (spiegare qualcosa a)
invite someone to (invitare qualcuno a)
lend something to (prestare qualcosa a)
prefer something to (preferire qualcosa a)
prevent someone/thing from (impedire a qualcuno/qualcosa di)
protect someone/thing from (proteggere qualcuno/qualcosa da)
provide someone with (rifornire qualcuno di)
remind someone about (ricordare a qualcuno di)
remind someone of (ricordare a qualcuno di)
share something with (condividere qualcosa con)
spend something on (spendere qualcosa in)
suspect someone of (sospettare qualcuno di)
tell someone about (dire a qualcuno di)
throw something at (tirare qualcosa a)
throw/pass something to (lanciare/passare qualcosa a)
thank someone for (ringraziare qualcuno per)
translate something from/into (tradurre qualcosa da/a)
warn someone about (ammonire qualcuno di)

Nota che si può usare *ask for* senza un complemento oggetto.
We asked for a clean glass.

B Verbo + complemento + preposizione + -ing

Quando si usa un verbo dopo la costruzione verbo + complemento + preposizione, si usa la forma -ing.

He accused me of stealing the money. He thanked us for being so patient.

The teacher accused us of cheating in the exam.

The police arrested him for burglary.

We're lost. Let's ask someone for directions.

Everyone blamed the goalkeeper for the defeat.

I borrowed twenty euros from Janet.

We all congratulated Sam on passing his exam.

Cut the pizza into four pieces.

We need to do something about Bill's behaviour.

Can you explain the rules of the game to me?

I didn't invite Scott to the party.

I lent my scooter to Harry for the afternoon.

I prefer tea to coffee.

The rain prevented us from going out.

Sun cream protects you from getting burnt.

The hotel provides us with clean towels each day.

Thanks for reminding me about the exam. I'd forgotten.

This song always reminds me of the summer of 2008.

Simon didn't share his sweets with us.

I spend all my money on computer games.

The police suspect him of several crimes.

Who told you about the party?

The children threw stones at the window.

Quick. Pass the ball to Riccardo.

Let me thank you for all your help.

Can you translate this from Italian into English?

The teacher warned us about cheating.

1 Da quale preposizione sono seguiti i verbi del riquadro? Riscrivili nella colonna corretta.

blame borrow explain invite lend prevent protect remind thank tell warn

to	for	from	about
explain			

2 Riferisci queste affermazioni iniziando con le parole date.

- 0 Sam: 'Peter caused the accident.'
Sam blamed Peter for causing the accident.
- 1 Jim: 'I think Henry broke the window.'
Jim accused .
- 2 Andrea: 'Maria. Do you want to come to my party?'
Andrea invited .
- 3 Yuko: 'I like baseball more than football.'
Yuko prefers .
- 4 Alex: 'When I hear this song, I always think about my holiday last summer.'
This song reminds .
- 5 Silvia: 'Don't forget about the washing-up, Viola.'
Silvia reminded .
- 6 Debbie: 'Thanks Oliver. Your help is appreciated.'
Debbie thanked .

3 Che cosa stanno facendo queste persone? Completa le frasi usando le espressioni del riquadro e la preposizione corretta.

arrest the man lend €50 pass the ball share the cake throw stones translate the letter



- 0 He's throwing stones at the window.



- 3 He's ... Ben.



- 1 She's ... English.



- 4 He's ... number 10.



- 2 She's ... her friends.



- 5 He's ... robbery.

133 Aggettivo + preposizione

I'm interested in most sports. He's worried about his exam.

Alcuni aggettivi sono seguiti da una preposizione. Ecco alcuni degli aggettivi più utili.

A Aggettivi che descrivono un atteggiamento o un sentimento

afraid/frightened/scared of (spaventato/impaurito da)	<i>I'm afraid of spiders.</i>
bored/fed up with (stanco di)	<i>I'm bored with this book.</i>
disappointed in/with (deluso da)	<i>I'm disappointed with my exam results.</i>
enthusiastic about (entusiasta di)	<i>Harry's very enthusiastic about school.</i>
excited about (eccitato alla prospettiva di)	<i>I'm really excited about the party tonight.</i>
interested in (interessato a)	<i>Are you interested in sport?</i>
keen on (appassionato di)	<i>I'm not keen on Indian food.</i>
proud/ashamed of (orgoglioso/vergognoso di)	<i>I'm very proud of my children.</i>
sorry about/for (dispiaciuto di)	<i>I'm sorry for being late.</i>
sure about (sicuro di)	<i>I'm not sure about the colour - it's too dark.</i>
upset about (turbato per)	<i>Anna's upset about failing her driving test.</i>
worried/nervous about (preoccupato/agitato per)	<i>Danny's worried about the exam.</i>

B Altri aggettivi

allergic to (allergico a)	<i>Linda's allergic to cats.</i>
covered in (coperto di)	<i>The children are covered in paint.</i>
different from (diverso da)	<i>Sally's very different from her sisters.</i>
equivalent to (equivalente a)	<i>One euro was equivalent to about one US dollar.</i>
famous/well known for (famoso per)	<i>Oxford is famous for its university.</i>
full of (pieno di)	<i>The beach was full of holiday-makers.</i>
married/engaged to (sposato/fidanzato con)	<i>Paula is married to an American.</i>
responsible for (responsabile di)	<i>Who is responsible for this mess?</i>
similar to (simile a)	<i>Is Oxford similar to Cambridge?</i>
short of (a corto di)	<i>I'm always short of money.</i>
typical of (caratteristico)	<i>That's typical of you!</i>

C Good, bad, excellent ecc.

Si usa un aggettivo per esprimere gradi di abilità, per esempio *good, bad, excellent, OK, not bad + at*. *Anna's brilliant at tennis. I'm OK at swimming. Are you any good at skiing?*

D Angry, annoyed, furious

Si usa *angry/annoyed/furious + with 'qualcuno' for 'qualscosa'*.

Si usa *angry/annoyed/furious + about 'qualscosa'*.

I'm angry with Steve for not waiting for me. I'm annoyed about failing the exam.

E Aggettivo + of/to someone

Si possono usare aggettivi come *nice, kind, friendly, good, rude, unfair + to 'qualcuno' o + of + 'qualcuno' (+ infinito)*.

The waiter was rude to me. Our teacher is always very nice to us.

Thanks for the present. It's very kind of you. It was good of you to help.

F Aggettivo + preposizione + -ing

Quando si usa un verbo dopo un aggettivo + preposizione, si usa la forma *-ing*.

I'm fed up with waiting. I'm sorry for being late.

- 1** Da quale preposizione sono seguiti di solito gli aggettivi del riquadro? Riscrivili nella colonna corretta.

afraid allergic bad bored covered equivalent excellent excited fed up full good interested married OK proud similar surprised typical upset worried

about	of	to	with	in	at
excited	afraid	allergic			bad

- 2** Scrivi una frase per ciascuna figura usando i suggerimenti del riquadro e la preposizione corretta.

covered / mud pleased / her exam results rude / his sister
very similar / her mother worried / her interview angry / his friend



0 She's pleased with her exam results.

1 _____

2 _____

3 _____

4 _____

5 _____

- 3** Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Inizia con la seconda frase.

0 You jumped in the river. It was stupid. It was stupid of you to jump in the river.

1 You helped me. It was very kind. _____

2 You ate all the biscuits. It was greedy. _____

3 Katie gave Sara €50. It was very generous. _____

- 4** Aggiungi la preposizione corretta. Se le frasi sono vere per te metti ✓, se non sono vere per te metti X.

0 I'm good at tennis. ✓

1 I'm allergic to cats. _____

2 I'm afraid of flying. _____

3 I'm interested in history. _____

4 I've always been keen on music. _____

5 I'm always enthusiastic about studying. _____

6 I never get nervous before exams. _____

7 I'm always short of money. _____

8 I'm very similar to my mother. _____

9 I'm quite different from my father. _____

There's no difference between them. What was his reaction to the news?

A Uso e forma

Alcuni nomi sono spesso seguiti da una preposizione. Ecco alcuni dei nomi più utili:

advantage/disadvantage of (vantaggio/
svantaggio di)
answer to (risposta a)
attack on (attacco a)
attitude to/towards (atteggiamento verso)
cause of (causa di)
chance of (possibilità di)
damage to (danno a)
difference between (differenza fra/tra)
difficulty with (difficoltà con)
experience of (esperienza in)
invitation to (invito a)
matter with (problema di)
mixture of (insieme di)
opinion of (opinione su)
photograph/picture of (fotografia/immagine di)
reaction to (reazione a)
reason for (ragione per)
research into (ricerca su)
respect for (rispetto per)
relationship with (relazione con)
room for (spazio per)
solution/answer to (soluzione/risposta a)
trouble/problems with (problema/problemi con)

The advantage of living alone is freedom.

What's the answer to question 2?

An attack on an army base injured ten soldiers.

She has a good attitude towards her work.

What was the cause of the accident?

There's a good chance of rain later.

Did you do any damage to the car?

What's the difference between these two mobiles?

I'm having difficulty with my computer.

Have you got much experience of sales?

Did you get an invitation to Valerie's party?

What's the matter with Sam? He seems quiet.

There's a mixture of old and new buildings.

What's your opinion of the new Bond film?

Here's a photograph of my brother.

What was your parents' reaction to the news?

There's no reason for behaving so badly.

I'm doing research into internet use.

I have a lot of respect for my teacher.

I have a great relationship with my parents.

Is there room for one more person in the car?

We need to find a solution to the problem.

I'm having trouble with my internet connection.

B Desire, need ecc. + for

Desire, need, demand, wish, hope, request si usano con *for*.

There is a great need for more public transport in the city. Is there any hope for world peace?

C Connection, link ecc.

Le parole come *connection, link, contrast, relationship, contact, problem* si usano

con *with* (una cosa o persona) o *between* (due o più cose o persone).

Crime has a connection with poverty. There's a connection between crime and poverty.

D Increase, decrease ecc.

I nomi che indicano cambiamento come *increase, decrease, rise, fall* si usano con *in, of, from* o *to*.

Last year, there was an increase in unemployment of 1.5%. The increase was from 4.0% to 5.5%.

1 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

0 Amy I need a lift. Have you got room *for* of one more person in the car?

Bruce Yes, I think we can fit you in.

1 Customer What's the difference *between* / *of* these phones?

Shop assistant One has a 10GB memory and the other has 20GB. The advantage *of* / *with* a bigger memory is that you can store more videos and songs.

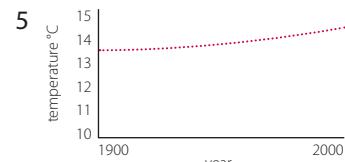
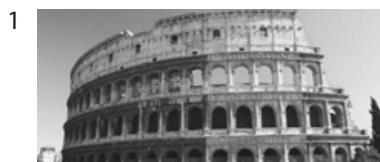
- 2 Alex What's the answer of / to question 3?
 Beth I'm not sure. I'm having difficulty for / with question 3 too.
- 3 Interviewer Have you had much experience for / of working in a shop?
 Interviewee Yes, I have. And I feel that I've always had a good relationship to / with the customers.
- 4 Andy There has been a massive fall in / on CD sales in the last few years.
 Bill Yes, I think there's been a decrease at / of about 80% since 2005.
- 5 Anna What's the matter of / with Sasha? She seems upset.
 Ben Oh, she's having a bit of trouble for / with her boyfriend. They'll be OK, I'm sure.

2 Aggiungi la preposizione adatta ai titoli di giornale.

- 0 Solution needed to global warming, says US President
- 1 Photograph life on Mars is a fake
- 2 THERE WAS NO CONTACT ALIENS, SAYS NASA
- 3 Islamic leader receives invitation Vatican
- 4 Hope finding missing mountaineers fades
- 5 ACTOR'S DEATH CAUSED BY MIXTURE DRINK AND DRUGS
- 6 Problem wheels was cause train crash
- 7 Poverty is main reason increase crime
- 8 Attack airport causes damage three planes

3 Guarda le figure e completa le frasi. Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro.

the answers / exam questions a connection / price and sales a rise / temperature / 1°C
 an invitation / a wedding a photo / the Coliseum the price / petrol



0 It's the answers to the exam questions.

1 It's .

2 It's .

3 It shows .

4 It shows .

5 It shows between 1900 and 2000.

- 1 Preposizione con nome** Queste parole richiedono la preposizione *on* o *in*? Riscrivile nella spazio corretta.

advance charge control danger fashion fire foot general holiday a hurry
love my opinion purpose strike television the phone the whole

on	
in	advance

- 2 Preposizione con nome** Completa le frasi usando la preposizione corretta.

- 0 Tickets cost €15 *in* advance or €20 *on* the night.
- 1 I'm going a walk.
- 2 Did you drive here or come bus?
- 3 Did you pay cash or credit card?
- 4 Are you going holiday this year?
- 5 What did you have lunch today?
- 6 Sorry I'm late. We stopped to get some petrol the way.
- 7 first I was going to have a big party, but the end it was just a few friends and family.
- 8 Harry's the phone at the moment.
- 9 I didn't delete the files purpose. I did it accident – sorry.
- 10 Don't panic. Everything is control.
- 11 Is there anything interesting TV tonight?
- 12 my opinion, learning English is fun.

FCE

- 3 Preposizione con nome** Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 Is it quicker to drive or take the train? *car*
Is it quicker to go *by car* or take the train?
- 1 The drinks machine isn't working at the moment. *order*
The drinks machine at the moment.
- 2 Don't be late for the interview. *time*
You must for the interview.
- 3 This price list is out of date, I'm afraid. *date*
This price list isn't , I'm afraid.
- 4 The Smiths are selling their house, aren't they? *sale*
The Smiths' house , isn't it?
- 5 Over a million people haven't got a job at the moment. *work*
Over a million people at the moment.
- 6 The final scene of the film was fantastic. *end*
The scene the film was fantastic.

4 Verbi, aggettivi e nomi con preposizione Completa i dialoghi scegliendo la preposizione corretta.

- A What are you listening ⁰at /to?
- B It's the new Monkeys album.
- A The Monkeys? I've never heard ¹from / of them!
- A What's the matter?
- B Oh, I'm feeling a bit nervous ²about / of the exams.
- A You'll be fine. Stop worrying ³about / for it.
- A Sorry we're late. We waited for ages ⁴of / for a bus.
- B I should've warned you ⁵about / for that – the buses are always late.
- A Is that your bike?
- B No, I've borrowed it ⁶from / to Marco. He's lent it ⁷for / to me for a few days.
- A What's happened ⁸at / to you? You're covered ⁹in / of mud!
- B Me and Fabio have been playing rugby in the park.
- A I didn't know you were interested ¹⁰in / of rugby.
- B Didn't you? I much prefer it ¹¹of / to football. And Fabio plays ¹²for / to the school team. He's really good ¹³at / in it.

5 Verbi, aggettivi e nomi con preposizione Completa le informazioni usando la preposizione corretta.

Did you know...?

- 1 The Harry Potter books have been translated over 40 languages.
- 2 Americans spend over \$100 billion fast food every year.
- 3 The Amazon rainforest provides the earth more than 20% of its oxygen.
- 4 A fruitarian is someone who **lives** entirely fruit and seeds. There are several million fruitarians in the world.
- 5 51% of Americans believe ghosts.
- 6 China and Russia both share their border 14 countries.
- 7 The world's rarest allergy is aquagenic urticaria. Sufferers are allergic water.
- 8 Light travels about 300,000 km per second. One light year is equivalent about 10,000,000,000,000 kilometres.
- 9 Termites work faster if they **listen** rock music.
- 10 The chance winning the biggest European lottery is 1 in 76 million.

136

Phrasal verbs

I grew up in Rome. Can you fill this form in? I ran into John last week.

A Uso e forma

Un *phrasal verb* è un verbo + particella (*on, in, off, up* ecc.). Il verbo unito alla particella acquisisce un significato diverso da quello del verbo e della particella quando sono usati indipendentemente.

The machine broke down. = *The machine stopped working.*

She takes after her mother. = *She has a similar personality to her mother.*

I came across an old photo. = *I found an old photo by accident.*

B Verbo + particella (senza complemento)

Questi *phrasal verbs* sono intransitivi (non reggono un complemento).

We set off at 6.30. Can you speak up, please? How many people turned up?

break down (rompersi)

set off (partire)

fall out (litigare)

show off (darsi delle arie)

get up (alzarsi)

speak up (parlare ad alta voce)

go off (spegnersi/esplodere)

take off (decollare)

grow up (crescere)

turn up (presentarsi)

hang out (frequentare)

wake up (svegliarsi)

meet up (incontrarsi)

C Verbo + complemento + particella (separabile)

Questi *phrasal verbs* sono transitivi (reggono un complemento). Il complemento va quasi sempre **tra** il verbo e la particella.

Turn the light off. Turn it off. Throw the boxes away. Throw them away.

Tuttavia, se il complemento è un nome, può anche andare dopo la particella.

Se invece il complemento è un pronome, non può andare dopo la particella.

bring up (educare)

put on (indossare/mettere)

call off (disdire)

sort out (risolvere)

cross out (eliminare/cancellare)

switch/turn/put off (spegnere)

fill in (riempire)

switch/turn/put on (accendere)

find out (trovare/scoprire)

take off (togliersi degli abiti)

give up (rinunciare/smettere)

throw away (buttare via)

hand in (consegnare)

tidy/clear up (mettere in ordine)

hang up (appendere/sospendere)

try on (provare degli abiti)

let down (deludere)

turn down (abbassare)

look up (cercare)

turn up (alzare)

make up (inventare)

wake up (svegliare)

put off (posporre/rinviare)

D Verbo + particella + complemento (non separabile)

Questi *phrasal verbs* sono transitivi (prendono un complemento). Il complemento va sempre dopo la particella.

Look after the children. Look after them. Non Look the children after. o Look them after.

come across (incontrare per caso)

look after (badare a/prendersi cura di)

count on (contare su)

look into (investigare)

deal with (occuparsi di)

take after (assomigliare a/essere come)

do without (fare a meno di)

run/go after (correre dietro)

get over (superare/guarire)

run into (incontrare per caso)

Nota che alcuni *phrasal verbs* hanno più di un significato e possono a volte essere sia transitivi che intransitivi. Per esempio:

I turned up the volume. Only three people turned up for the meeting.

I took off my coat. The plane took off.

1 Completa le frasi con i *phrasal verbs* del riquadro.

go off get up grow up meet up set off speak up turn up wake up

- 0 I was born in London, but we moved when I was a baby and I in Oxford.
- 1 I can't hear you. Can you, please?
- 2 Last night was a disaster! We arranged to at my house at 7.30, but no one until 8.30, which was too late to see the film.
- 3 Normally, I when my alarm clock at 7.15. I don't have time to stay in bed, so I immediately, have breakfast and for school at about 7.45.

2 Sostituisci le parole in neretto usando i *phrasal verbs* del riquadro.

call off get over try on give up look into hand in make up look up take after

- 0 She is **very similar** to her mother. She takes after her mother.
- 1 They've **cancelled** the meeting.
- 2 The children **invented** a new game.
- 3 I'll **investigate** the cost of hiring a car.
- 4 Ronaldo **recovered** from his injury quickly.
.....
- 5 Jane **stopped** smoking a few years ago.
- 6 I need to **find the meaning** of this word in the dictionary.
.....
- 7 Why don't you **wear** the shirt **for a short time** to see if it suits you?
.....
- 8 When do we need to **give** our homework **to the teacher**?
.....

3 Completa le battute di B usando i *phrasal verbs* in corsivo e un pronome al posto del nome.

- 0 A What shall I do with my jacket?
B Give it to me. I'll hang it up for you. hang up
- 1 A The music's too loud.
B OK, I'll turn down
- 2 A Do you want to keep these old socks?
B No, please throw away
- 3 A What a mess!
B Don't worry. We'll before we leave. tidy up
- 4 A Do you always wear your glasses?
B Yes, all the time. I can't do without
- 5 A There's a problem with the computer.
B I'm busy. Can you ? sort out
- 6 A Have you seen Barry Scott recently?
B I have, actually. I at the gym the other day. run into

Phrasal verbs in tre parti

We've **run out of** time. I'll **get back to** you later. We need to **come up with** a plan.

Un *phrasal verb* in tre parti è formato da verbo + particella + particella (*on, up, with, to* ecc.).

The printer has run out of ink. = *The printer has used all its ink.*

How do you put up with that noise? = *How do you tolerate that noise?*

carry on with (continuare)

I'll have a coffee and then carry on with my homework.

catch up with (recuperare)

I need to catch up with the schoolwork I missed.

come/get back from (rientrare)

When did you come back from your holiday?

come down with (ammalarsi)

I think I'm coming down with a cold.

come up with (escogitare)

We need to come up with a plan.

cut down on (ridurre)

I really should cut down on the amount of sugar I eat.

do away with (eliminare)

We should do away with out of date laws.

drop out of (ritirarsi)

Sam's dropped out of university. He didn't enjoy it.

face up to (accettare)

You need to face up to reality.

fall back on (ricorrere a)

He's got lots of friends he can fall back on.

feel up to (sentirselo di)

I'm tired. I don't feel up to going out tonight.

get away with (passarla liscia)

The referee didn't see the foul, and the player got away with it.

get back to (ritornare/riparlare)

I'll get back to you as soon as I hear any news.

get on with (andare d'accordo)

I get on really well with my parents.

get on with (continuare)

Stop wasting time - get on with your work.

get round to (trovare il tempo di)

Will you ever get round to fixing the gate?

get through to (comunicare con)

I can't get through to Alice. Her phone may be off.

keep up with (stare al passo con)

It's important to keep up with the latest fashions.

look forward to (attendere con impazienza)

I'm really looking forward to the party on Friday.

look up to (guardare con ammirazione)

I've always looked up to my grandparents.

make up for (compensare)

Beating Juve will make up for losing to Roma.

put up with (sopportare)

I can't put up with their behaviour any more.

run out of (finire/restare senza)

We need to finish now. We've run out of time.

stand up for (difendere/lottare)

It's important to stand up for what you believe in.

I *phrasal verbs* in tre parti sono transitivi e reggono un complemento, che si colloca sempre dopo la seconda particella.

He dropped out of university after one semester.

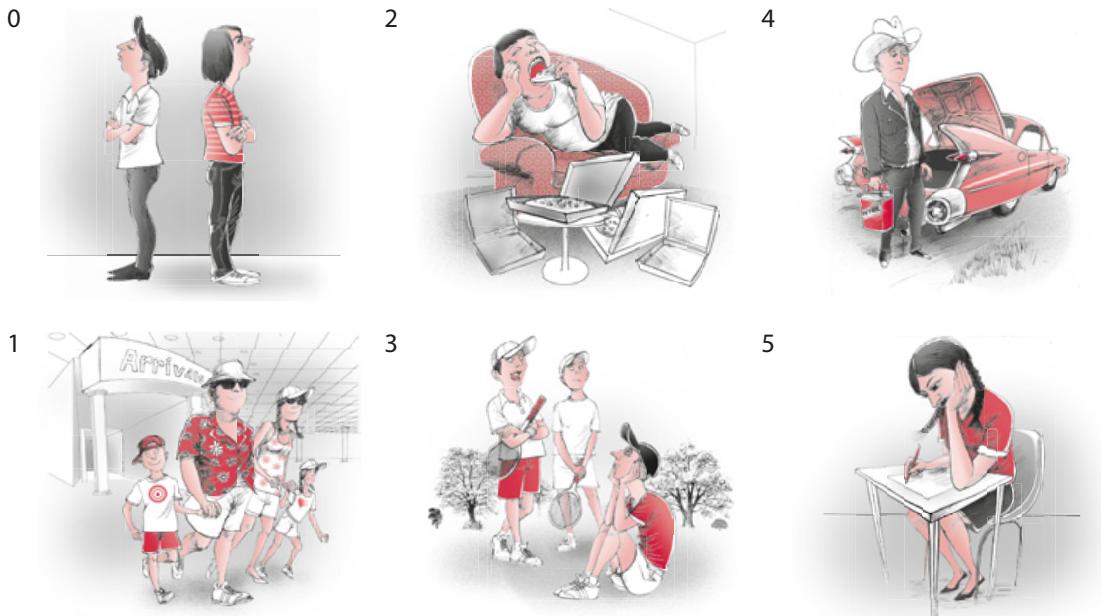
I'll get back to you tomorrow.

Alcuni *phrasal verbs* in tre parti possono essere usati senza un complemento e senza la seconda particella. Si evitano in questo modo le ripetizioni.

He didn't like university, so he dropped out.

1 Completa le frasi usando una parola da ciascun riquadro. Coniuga il verbo al tempo corretto.

come back from cut down on feel up to get on with get on with run out of
each other holiday petrol pizzas playing tennis her work



0 They're not getting on with each other.

1 They've just run out of petrol.

2 He needs to cut down on his work.

3 He doesn't feel up to playing tennis.

4 The car's broken down and I need to get it repaired.

5 She's been working all day and now she's tired.

2 Completa l'email di Silvie con i *phrasal verbs* del riquadro.

look forward to catch up with get back to come up with get back from come down with



Hi Tamas,

It was good to run into you the other day and to ⁰ catch up with you all your news. And it's a shame that you've ¹ come down with a cold just before your holiday! I'm sure you'll be over it soon and have a great time.

Anyway, let's try and ² make a date to meet up when you ³ get back from your holiday. Perhaps we can go for a meal or something. I'll check my diary and ⁴ see you in the next few days. I ⁵ can't wait to see you again.

Love, Silvie x

3 Elimina le parole superflue per evitare le ripetizioni e rendere le frasi più naturali.

- 0 I drink too much coffee. I really should cut down ~~on coffee~~.
- 1 I've been trying to phone Lucy all morning, but I can't get through ~~to Lucy~~.
- 2 He hated university, so he dropped out of university after one term.
- 3 My brother and I are always arguing. We don't get on with ~~each other~~.
- 4 I never know what's in or out of fashion. I just can't keep up with ~~fashion~~ these days.
- 5 I missed a lot of work when I was on holiday. Now I need to catch up with ~~the work I missed~~.

- 1 Significato dei phrasal verbs** Trova altri dieci phrasal verbs nel diagramma e scrivili a fianco della definizione sottostante. I verbi si trovano in questi sensi: [→], [↓] e [↖]. Ti aiuterà sapere che tutte le vocali del diagramma fanno parte dei phrasal verbs.

W	S	D	T	Y	G	P	K	L	N	G
Q	Z	E	X	B	O	F	J	H	Y	T
R	T	V	T	Z	O	Z	X	H	L	U
C	A	L	L	O	F	F	P	T	W	R
Y	C	D	O	Z	F	T	K	M	V	N
T	V	P	G	O	A	F	T	E	R	D
U	Q	U	M	A	K	E	U	P	P	O
R	J	T	T	K	W	I	H	R	S	W
N	Y	O	W	S	H	K	N	X	L	N
U	R	F	I	N	D	O	U	T	S	L
P	Y	F	R	U	N	I	N	T	O	Z

- 0 explode
 1 begin a journey
 2 postpone
 3 cancel
 4 chase
 5 invent
 6 investigate
 7 discover
 8 meet by chance
 9 increase (volume)
 10 decrease (volume)

- 2 Significato dei phrasal verbs** Completa il testo con i phrasal verbs del riquadro.

get up go off hang out meet up put on put on set off tidy up wake up

My day

I usually ⁰wake up when my alarm clock ¹ at 7.30. I lie in bed for a few minutes and then I ² and ³ my school uniform. I have breakfast and then I usually ⁴ for school at about 8.15. After school, I go home and do my homework. I then usually ⁵ with a few friends and we generally play computer games at someone's house or just ⁶ for an hour or so. Then it's back home for dinner at about seven o'clock and then I generally go to my bedroom and watch TV or ⁷ some music while I surf the internet. My mum insists that I always ⁸ my room before I go to bed.

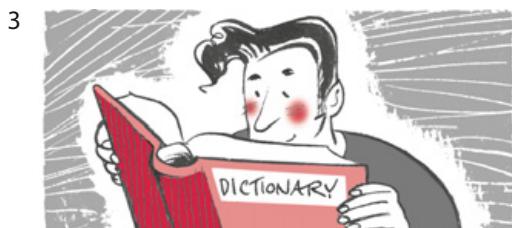
- 3 Significato dei phrasal verbs** Descrivi una tua giornata-tipo usando almeno quattro dei phrasal verbs dell'Esercizio 2.

4 Significato dei phrasal verbs Descrivi che cosa sta succedendo in ciascuna figura usando i phrasal verbs del riquadro.

cross-out deal with fill in look up try on turn down



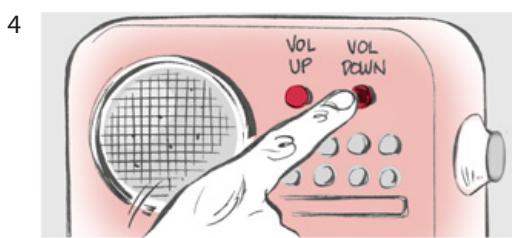
She's crossing out a word.



He looked up a word.



She tried on a hat.



She turned up the radio.



He filled in a form.



She spoke to a lot of people.

5 Posizione del complemento nei phrasal verbs Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 A What does 'gig' mean?
B I don't know. Look it up / Look up it in the dictionary.
- 1 A I can't hear the TV.
B Here's the remote. Turn it up / Turn up it.
- 2 A What are you doing with your dog while you're away on holiday?
B My aunt and uncle are going to look it after / look after it.
- 3 A What shall I do with my coat?
B Oh, you can hang it up / hang up it over there.
- 4 A I'm sorry to hear you failed your exam.
B Oh, don't worry. I'll get it over / get over it!
- 5 A When's the deadline for the geography homework?
B You need to hand it in / hand in it by Friday.
- 6 A Look, John's forgotten his keys.
B I'll go him after / go after him. He only left a minute ago.
- 7 A What's the best way to get from London to Bournemouth?
B I'll look it into / look into it for you and let you know.
- 8 A Do you still wear these old shoes?
B No, I don't. Throw them away / Throw away them.

6 Phrasal verbs in tre parti Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi sostituendo le parti in neretto con i phrasal verbs del riquadro.

carry on with cut down on come down with come up with get back from
get back to get on with keep up with put up with run out of

- 0 I think I'm **getting** a cold.
I think I'm coming down with a cold.
- 1 What time do you usually **return from** school?
.....
- 2 I really should **reduce** the amount of fast food I eat.
.....
- 3 I'll **contact** you in a day or two to let you know my decision.
.....
- 4 Do you **have a good relationship with** your neighbours?
.....
- 5 The music from next door is driving me mad – I can't **tolerate** it any longer!
.....
- 6 After lunch, I need to **continue** my work.
.....
- 7 We must finish the lesson now – we **don't have any more** time.
.....
- 8 You have to change your mobile every two months to be **up to date** with the latest technology. I've no idea what they will **think of** next.
.....

FCE 7 Phrasal verbs: varie forme Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 They left for the airport at about 9.30. **set**
They set off for the airport at about 9.30.
- 1 I met Francesco by chance in the city centre yesterday. **ran**
I in the city centre yesterday.
- 2 I found some old photos by chance the other day. **across**
I the other day.
- 3 The game has been postponed until next week. **off**
The game until next week.
- 4 They've cancelled the meeting. **off**
They the meeting.
- 5 The printer has no ink left, I'm afraid. **run**
The printer , I'm afraid.
- 6 I spent my childhood in Florence. **grew**
I Florence.
- 7 Billy left university at the end of the first year. **dropped**
Billy at the end of the first year.
- 8 I'm really excited about going on holiday. **forward**
I'm really on holiday.

8 Phrasal verbs: varie forme Traduci usando i phrasal verbs.

0 I usually go to bed at about 11 o'clock.

Di solito vado a letto intorno alle 11.

1 Sono cresciuto a Roma.

2 Di solito mi alzo alle 7.

3 Spengo il computer?

4 Puoi abbassare la musica, per favore?

5 Mi tolgo le scarpe?

6 Il mio scooter si è rotto questa mattina.

9 Phrasal verbs: varie forme Scrivi due complementi per ogni phrasal verb qui sotto.

Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

a bag	a bomb	a car	chocolate	an alarm clock	a football match	a coat	shoes	a TV
a computer	a machine	a meeting	a child	music	a person	food	work	a friend
a party	a holiday	petrol	ink	a radio	schoolwork	a shirt	trousers	

0 go off a bomb, an alarm clock,

1 break down

2 call off

3 put on/take off

4 turn up/down

5 turn on/off

6 try on

7 look after

8 catch up with

9 cut down on

10 get on with

11 look forward to

12 run out of

139

Aggettivi

I've got a new mobile. It's a lovely day. She's Italian. Is your teacher nice?

A Uso e forma

Gli aggettivi danno informazioni sui nomi. Si usano in due modi:

- i prima del nome,
She's got blonde hair. Non *She's got hair blonde.*
It's an interesting book. Non *It's a book interesting.*
- ii dopo i verbi *be, look, feel, smell, sound* e *taste*.
My computer is old. *You look tired.* *It sounds interesting.*

Nota che ci sono alcuni aggettivi che si usano solo dopo un verbo e non prima di un nome.

Alcuni dei più comuni sono: *afraid, alive, alone, asleep, content, pleased, ready* e *sure*.

Don't disturb the children who are asleep. Non *Don't disturb the asleep children.*

B Is your teacher nice?

Nelle domande, si può mettere l'aggettivo dopo un nome o un pronome.

Are your shoes comfortable? *Were they expensive?*

Does the exhibition look interesting?

C Get + aggettivo

Get + aggettivo si usa per dire 'diventare'.

I'm getting hungry. *Inizio ad avere fame.* *We got lost.* *Ci siamo persi.*

► Vedi unità 87 per altri usi di *get*.

1 Completa le frasi usando i nomi e gli aggettivi dei riquadri.

day dress friends house man sizes black different good lucky big sunny



- 0 We live in a big house.
1 It's a
2 They're

- 3 She's wearing a
4 The socks are
5 He's a

2 Ben racconta ad Alex delle sue vacanze. Completa il dialogo usando i suggerimenti in corsivo e la forma corretta di *be*.

Alex How was your holiday? ⁰ *Was it good?* *it / good*
Ben ⁰ *It was OK,* I suppose. *It / OK*
Alex And what was your hotel like? ¹ ? *it / comfortable*
Ben No, ² *the beds / hard*
Alex Oh dear. And ³ ? *the beach / nice*
Ben No, ⁴ We stayed by the pool. *the beach / crowded*
Alex And ⁵ ? *the local sights / interesting*
Ben No, ⁶ *they / boring*
Alex And the weather? ⁷ ? *it / sunny*
Ben No, ⁸ all the time. And cold. *it / cloudy*
Alex And the local food? ⁹ ? *it / tasty*
Ben No, ¹⁰ We all got ill. *the food / awful*
Alex Oh dear. But ¹¹ ? *the local people / friendly*
Ben No, ¹² *they / very unfriendly*
Alex Oh well. ¹³ to be back home? *it / good*
Ben No, ¹⁴ I have to go back to school tomorrow. *it / terrible*

3 Completa le frasi usando le parole dei riquadri.

feel feel look smell sound taste

disgusting expensive nice really nervous sick really good

- 0 I ate too much. I *feel sick*.
- 1 Ugh! There's too much salt! It
- 2 Kate's wearing a diamond ring. It
- 3 I'm taking my driving test tomorrow. I
- 4 Tom's new band You should listen to them.
- 5 You Are you wearing a new perfume?

4 Completa le frasi usando la forma corretta di *get* e gli aggettivi del riquadro.

angry hungry late lost tired wet

- 0 I'm *getting hungry* I think I'll make some lunch.
- 1 Hurry up, it It'll be dark soon.
- 2 He when I told him I'd broken the window.
- 3 We didn't take a map and we
- 4 Did you when it started raining?
- 5 I didn't finish the race. I after about 5 kilometres.

5 Queste frasi sono corrette o no? Cancella quelle sbagliate.

- 0 Look at that black cat.
- 0 The ready students left the classroom.
- 1 We saw an asleep lion at the zoo.
- 2 I'm reading an interesting book.
- 3 The alone child had no one to play with.
- 4 There are lots of pleased customers in the shop.
- 5 The afraid mouse ran away.
- 6 The frightened mouse ran away.

140

Aggettivi che terminano in -ed e -ing

The book's boring. I'm bored with the book. The news was shocking. I was shocked.

- i Un buon numero di aggettivi termina in -ed o in -ing.

Si usano gli aggettivi che terminano in -ed per descrivere come si sente qualcuno.

I was surprised. Fui sorpreso.

We're bored. Siamo annoiati.

He's tired. È stanco.

- ii Si usano gli aggettivi che terminano in -ing per descrivere la cosa, o la persona, che causa l'emozione o la sensazione.

The news was surprising. La notizia fu sorprendente.

The film is boring. Il film era noioso.

It's tiring work. È un lavoro faticoso.

- iii Alcuni aggettivi comunemente usati che possono avere sia la forma in -ed sia quella in -ing sono:

amazed/amazing (stupito/stupefacente)

amused/amusing (divertito/divertente)

annoyed/annoying (infastidito/fastidioso)

astonished/astonishing (sorpreso/sorprendente)

bored/boring (annoiato/noioso)

confused/confusing (confuso/che crea confusione)

depressed/depressing (depresso/deprimente)

disgusted/disgusting (disgustato/disgustoso)

embarrassed/embarrassing (imbarazzato/imbarazzante)

excited/exciting (emozionato/emozionante)

exhausted / exhausting (esausto/che rende esausto)

fascinated/fascinating (affascinato/affascinante)

frightened/frightening (spaventato/spaventoso)

horrified/horrifying (atterrito/raccapricciante)

interested/interesting (interessato/interessante)

invigorated/invigorating (corroborato/corroborante)

relaxed/relaxing (rilassato/rilassante)

satisfied/satisfying (soddisfatto/soddisfacente)

shocked/shocking (sconvolto/sconvolgente)

surprised/surprising (sorpreso/sorprendente)

terrified/terrifying (terrorizzato/terrificante)

thrilled/thrilling (elettrizzato/elettrizzante)

tired/tiring (stanco/stancante)

worried/worrying (preoccupato/preoccupante)

Nota che la *y* si trasforma in *i* prima di -ed (con l'eccezione di *annoyed*).

They were worried. It was worrying.

- 1 Guarda le figure, poi completa le frasi usando gli aggettivi terminanti in -ed e -ing partendo dalla radice data in corsivo.



0 **tir-**

He's tired. _____

The journey's tiring. _____



1 **bor-**

The party

They



2 **embarrass-**

She
Her parents



3 **disappoint-**

The exam results
He



4 **terrify-**

The film
They



5 **exhaust-**

He
The race

2 Completa le battute di B usando la forma corretta delle parole in corsivo.

- 0 A How was the exhibition?
B It was *fascinating* You should go and see it. *fascinate*
- 1 A It's been raining for days now.
B Yes, this weather is very at the moment. *depress*
- 2 A Have you heard the news?
B Yes. It's very , isn't it? *worry*
- 3 A You must be pleased with your exam results.
B I am. I'm *thrill*
- 4 A How was the game last night?
B Really We won 3–2. *excite*
- 5 A What's the new student like?
B He's very You should talk to him. *interest*
- 6 A Do you want to come to the England vs Italy game with us?
B No, thanks. I'm not in rugby. *interest*

3 Immagina che ti siano accadute le cose elencate qui sotto. Scrivi come ti sei sentito usando *I was ... e un aggettivo in -ed*. Poi descrivi come ti ha fatto sentire la situazione usando *It was ... e un aggettivo in -ing*.

- 0 You forgot someone's name. *I was embarrassed.*
It was embarrassing.
- 1 You failed an exam.
- 2 You saw a ghost.
- 3 You won the lottery.
- 4 You met your all-time hero.

A Uso e forma

Quando si usa più di un aggettivo per descrivere qualcosa, gli aggettivi sono espressi in un ordine fisso.

i Gli aggettivi di ‘opinione’ sono espressi prima di quelli che si riferiscono ai ‘fatti’.

It's a lovely sunny day. Non *It's a sunny lovely day.*

She's got amazing red hair. Non *She's got red amazing hair.*

ii Gli aggettivi che si riferiscono ai ‘fatti’ seguono di norma il seguente ordine.

grandezza → età → colore → origine/nazionalità → materiale.

He's got big brown eyes. (grandezza → colore)

We watched an old Italian film. (età → origine)

She was wearing a long red silk dress. (grandezza → colore → materiale)

Gli aggettivi relativi a grandezza e lunghezza (*big, small, long, short* ecc.) di norma vanno prima degli aggettivi relativi alla grandezza e all’ampiezza (*square, round, wide, narrow* ecc.).

It's a tall thin building. *The room has a big round bed.*

Nota che non esiste una regola precisa sull’uso della virgola tra gli aggettivi ed è considerato accettabile sia usarle sia non usarle.

It's a beautiful sunny day. o *It's a beautiful, sunny day.*

B Nomi usati per classificazioni

Alcuni nomi funzionano come aggettivi e classificano l’esatto tipo di cosa alla quale ci si riferisce. Sono posti immediatamente prima del nome.

Where are the wine glasses? *Maria runs a successful software company.*

He's got an amazing red sports car.

1 Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l’alternativa corretta.

- 0 A What will the weather be like tomorrow?
B Well, the forecast says it will be a horrible wet day / wet horrible day.
- 1 A Which is your coat?
B It's the *leather brown jacket* / *brown leather jacket* on the chair.
- 2 A Which is your car?
B It's the *red small one* / *small red one* over there.
- 3 A Who are those people?
B The girl with *long black hair* / *black long hair* is Jenny, and the guy wearing the *Roma football shirt* / *football Roma shirt* is Andy.
- 4 A Where do your grandparents live?
B They live in a *little beautiful village* / *beautiful little village* not far from Oxford.
- 5 A Which one is your boyfriend?
B He's the guy over there with the *curly black short hair* / *short black curly hair* and the *big black moustache* / *black big moustache*.

2 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi riordinando gli aggettivi.

- 0 It's a metal box. It's big.
It's a big metal box.
- 1 We sat under an enormous tree. It was old.
- 2 We went to a fantastic pizza restaurant. It was family-run. It was little.
- 3 I stayed in a little beach hut. It was wooden. It was lovely.
- 4 We visited an ancient temple. It was Buddhist. It was amazing.
- 5 He's bought an Italian sports car. It's red. It's expensive.

3 Completa le descrizioni usando gli aggettivi dei riquadri. Usa due aggettivi per descrivere ogni nome.



baseball black dark old red short leather white

He's got ⁰ short dark hair. He's wearing a
¹ jacket and a ² cap.
He rides an ³ scooter.

big black black and white blonde denim knee-length long old round striped

She's got ⁴ hair. She's wearing an
⁵ jacket, a ⁶ sunglasses. She's carrying a
⁸ bag.

4 Descrivi tre cose che vedi in questo momento. Usa almeno due aggettivi per ogni descrizione.

I can see ...

- 0 a grey plastic chair
- 1 _____
- 2 _____
- 3 _____

I'm quite cold. I'm absolutely freezing. It's very crowded.

A Aggettivi che ammettono gradi di comparazione

La maggior parte degli aggettivi ammette gradi di comparazione. Questi aggettivi possono essere espressi con diversi gradi o gradazioni. Si usano parole come *a little*, *quite*, *very* ed *extremely* con gli aggettivi con gradi di comparazione.

I'm tired. Sono stanco. I'm quite tired. Sono abbastanza stanco.

I'm very tired. Sono davvero stanco. I'm extremely tired. Sono estremamente stanco.

B Aggettivi che non ammettono gradi di comparazione

Alcuni aggettivi non ammettono gradi di comparazione, pertanto non possono essere espressi con diversi gradi o gradazioni. In questi casi si usa generalmente *absolutely*, ma anche *totally* e *completely*.

I'm exhausted. I'm absolutely exhausted. I'm completely exhausted.

Non *I'm very exhausted*. E, allo stesso modo, non si può dire *I'm absolutely tired*.

C Really

Nota che si può usare *really* sia con aggettivi che ammettono gradi di comparazione sia con aggettivi che non li ammettono.

He was really angry. He was really furious.

► Vedi unità 153 e 173 per altri usi di *really*.

D Equivalenti

La tabella qui di seguito contiene un elenco di aggettivi che ammettono gradi di comparazione con i loro equivalenti che non li ammettono. Gli aggettivi che non ammettono gradi di comparazione sono più enfatici dei loro equivalenti che ammettono i gradi di comparazione.

angry—furious, attractive—gorgeous/beautiful, clean—spotless, cold—freezing/frozen, dirty—filthy, frightened/scared—terrified, funny—hilarious, hot—boiling, hungry—starving, important—vital/essential, interesting—fascinating, pleased—thrilled, sure—certain/positive, tasty—delicious, tired—exhausted, wet—soaking/soaked

Nota che molti aggettivi che non ammettono gradi di comparazione non hanno un diretto equivalente che li ammette, e viceversa.

It's absolutely perfect. The story is totally false. The film was very enjoyable.

E Good, bad, big, small

Good, bad, big e *small* hanno una serie di equivalenti che non ammettono gradi di comparazione.

Aggettivi che ammettono gradi di comparazione	Aggettivi che non ammettono gradi di comparazione
good	amazing, brilliant, excellent, fantastic, incredible, superb, wonderful
bad	atrocious, appalling, awful, dreadful, rubbish, terrible
big	enormous, gigantic, huge, massive
small	microscopic, minuscule, minute, tiny

► Vedi anche unità 173 (enfasi con aggettivi e avverbi).

- 1 Scrivi due frasi per ogni figura. Nella prima usa *He's/She's very*, nella seconda *He's/She's absolutely* e gli aggettivi del riquadro.

boiling cold dirty filthy freezing exhausted hot hungry soaking starving tired wet



- 0 He's very wet.
He's absolutely soaking.



- 3



- 1



- 4



- 2



- 5

- 2 Completa l'email scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.



Hi Joe, It's a big shame you missed the party last night. It was ⁰*very* / *absolutely* brilliant. David's house is ¹*very* / *absolutely* enormous with a ²*really* / *absolutely* big garden. And their swimming pool is ³*very* / *totally* amazing. I think his family must be ⁴*very* / *absolutely* rich. The music was excellent and the food was ⁵*very* / *absolutely* delicious. Unfortunately, the weather was ⁶*very* / *absolutely* awful – it started to rain and we got ⁷*very* / *completely* soaked, so we had to have the party inside. I met David's sister. She's ⁸*very* / *absolutely* attractive, ⁹*very* / *absolutely* gorgeous in fact. And she's ¹⁰*really* / *absolutely* interesting to talk to. See you soon, Jim

- 3 Completa le battute di B con gli aggettivi che non ammettono gradi di comparazione.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 0 A Are you sure the party is on Friday? | B Yes. I'm <i>absolutely certain</i> . |
| 1 A Was the film funny? | B Yes, it was <i>absolutely</i> |
| 2 A Was the kitchen clean? | B Yes. Completely |
| 3 A Was she angry? | B Angry? She was <i>absolutely</i> |
| 4 A Is it small? | B Small? It's <i>absolutely</i> |
| 5 A I hear the weather was quite bad. | B Bad? It was <i>absolutely</i> |

A Uso e forma

Si possono formare aggettivi da alcuni nomi e verbi aggiungendo un suffisso.

Alcuni dei suffissi più comuni sono:

i nome + *-y/-ful/-ous/-ish/-able*

a cloudy sky (un cielo nuvoloso) *a colourful painting* (un dipinto pieno di colore)
a dangerous situation (una situazione pericolosa) *childish behaviour* (comportamento infantile) *a knowledgeable person* (una persona di cultura)

ii nome + *-less*

a cloudless sky (un cielo senza nuvole) *a windowless room* (una stanza senza finestre)
The situation is hopeless. (La situazione è senza speranza.)

iii verbo + *-ive/-able*

an impressive building (un edificio imponente) *a talkative person* (una persona loquace)
an unstoppable penalty kick (un calcio di punizione imprendibile/non parabile)
a likeable person (una persona piacevole)

B -able o -ible

-ible è una alternativa meno comune di *-able*. Non esiste una semplice regola che dica quale aggettivo finisce in *-ible* e quale in *-able* e occorre impararli uno per uno. Nota che esistono alcune forme irregolari:

It's reputable. = *It has a good reputation.*

It's inexplicable. = *You can't explain it.*

It's (in)destructible. = *You can('t) destroy it.*

It's (in)defensible. = *You can('t) defend it.*

It's (il)legible. = *You can('t) read it.*

It's (in)audible. = *You can('t) hear it.*

It's (in)visible. = *You can('t) see it.*

It's (in)edible. = *You can('t) eat it.*

C Prefissi negativi

Si usano spesso prefissi negativi con gli aggettivi che derivano da nomi e verbi e con aggettivi che terminano in *-able* o *-ible* e *-ive*.

i I prefissi negativi più comuni che vengono usati in questo modo sono *un-* e *in-*.
unstoppable invisible inactive

ii Si usa in genere *il-* per le parole che iniziano con 'l', *im-* per le parole che iniziano con 'm' e 'p', e *ir-* per le parole che iniziano con 'r'.
illegal immature impossible irregular

Tuttavia, nota che ci sono eccezioni a queste regole.

unpredictable unpopular

► Vedi unità 179 e 180 per altri usi di prefissi e suffissi.

- 1** Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Completa le frasi con gli aggettivi formati partendo dalle parole in corsivo.



- 0 That's very nice. It's very stylish! *style*
 1 Thank you. That's very of you. *thought*
 2 Don't worry. He's *harm*
 3 Oh, stop being ! *child*
 4 What a horrible day! *rain*
 5 He's very and *act/adventure*

- 2** Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa l'aggettivo derivato dal nome o dal verbo della prima frase.

- 0 It has no soul. It's soulless.
 1 His clothes have lots of colours. His clothes are
 2 There are lots of clouds. It's
 3 The building impressed me. The building is
 4 There's a lot of salt in it. It's
 5 There is no hope for the situation. The situation is
 6 She changes her mood a lot. She's
 7 It causes harm. It's
 8 There are a lot of mountains. It's
 9 He behaves like a fool. He's
 10 There were no goals in the game. The game was

- 3** Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa l'aggettivo che termina in *-able* derivato dal nome o dal verbo delle prime frasi. In alcuni casi devi aggiungere un prefisso negativo.

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| 0 You can't predict it. It's <u>unpredictable</u> . | 5 People generally like her. |
| 1 You can download them. | 6 He has lot of knowledge. |
| 2 You can't explain it. | 7 It has a lot of value. |
| 3 You can't see them. | 8 You can't stop it. |
| 4 It has a good reputation. | 9 You can't read it. |

- 4** Pensa a qualcosa o a qualcuno che può essere descritto da ciascuna delle frasi dell'Esercizio 3.

- | | |
|---|---------|
| 0 The weather is <u>unpredictable</u> . | 5 |
| 1 | 6 |
| 2 | 7 |
| 3 | 8 |
| 4 | 9 |

144

Too e enough

It's too hot. I'm not old enough. We haven't got enough time for a coffee.

A Too

Too si usa prima di aggettivi e nomi.

i *too + aggettivo*

I'm too cold. Ho troppo freddo.

The restaurant is too expensive. Il ristorante è troppo costoso.

ii *too much/many + nome*

I've got too much homework. Ho troppi compiti.

There are too many cars on the roads. Ci sono troppe macchine sulla strada.

Nota che si usa *too many* + nome numerabile e *too much* + nome non numerabile.

B Enough

Si usa *enough* dopo gli aggettivi e prima dei nomi.

i *aggettivo + enough*

I'm not warm enough. Non f' m not enough warm. Non ho abbastanza caldo.

Your room is tidy enough. La tua stanza è abbastanza in ordine.

ii *enough + nome*

I haven't got enough money. Non f' haven't got money enough. Non ho abbastanza denaro.

Have you got enough food? Hai abbastanza cibo?

Si possono anche usare *too* e *enough* con gli avverbi.

He answered too slowly. Rispose troppo lentamente.

You didn't work quickly enough. Non hai lavorato abbastanza velocemente.

C Infinito e for

Si possono usare *too* e *enough* con infinito o *for*.

The sea isn't warm enough to go swimming. This cake is too sweet for me.

Nota che il nome può essere omesso.

Have you had enough food to eat? I don't earn enough money.

D Had enough (of)

I've had enough (of) (Ne ho abbastanza) è un'espressione comune in inglese.

I can't do any more work today - I've had enough!

I've had enough of this weather!

Nota che, con un verbo dopo *had enough of* si usa la forma *-ing*.

Sara's had enough of being a waitress. She's going to look for another job.

1 Completa le possibili risposte alle domande usando *too* o *enough*.

Why aren't you going out tonight?

0 I'm too busy.

2 I've got many things to do.

4 I won't get home early

1 I haven't got money.

3 I'll get home late.

5 I'll be tired.

2 Per ogni figura scrivi una frase con *too* e un'altra con *enough* usando i suggerimenti del riquadro.

people / chairs short / tall small / big work / time



- 0 It's too small.
It isn't big enough.



- 1 She
She

- 2 There
There



- 3 He's got
He hasn't got

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando *too* o *enough* e le parole in corsivo.

- 0 You must be 18 to join the gym. I'm 17. *young*
I'm too young to join the gym.

- 1 I don't want to go to bed. It's only 9 o'clock. *early*
It's

- 2 It's €2 for a coffee. I've got €1. *money*
I haven't got

- 3 Five people can go in the taxi. There are six of us. *people*
There are

- 4 You need to be 16 to ride a scooter. I'm 15. *old*
I'm

- 5 I earn €400 a week. I can't live on my own. *earn*
I don't

4 Le seguenti situazioni non ti soddisfano. Scrivi delle frasi usando *had enough of*.

- 0 You play computer games all the time.
I've had enough of playing computer games.

- 1 The weather has been awful for days.

- 2 You eat pizza every day.

- 3 You spend all your time revising for exams.

5 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te.

- 0 I'm not rich enough to buy a car.

- 1 I'm too young

- 2 I haven't got enough

- 3 I've got too many

- 4 I've got too much

- 5 I've had enough of

So e such, What (a) ...*I'm so hungry. It's such a nice day. What a lovely day!***A So/such + aggettivi/nomi**Si usa *so* e *such* per dare enfasi ad aggettivi e nomi.**i** Si usa *so* + aggettivo.*The film was so bad. The weather is so amazing.***ii** Si usa *such* + aggettivo + nome.*It was such a bad film. It's such amazing weather. They were such interesting people.*Nota che si usa *such a* con un nome numerabile e che si usa *such* (senza *a*) con un nome non numerabile o plurale.**iii** Si può anche usare *so* con gli avverbi. Non si usa *such* con gli avverbi.*He speaks so quickly.***iv** Si usa *so many/few* + nome plurale e si usa *so much/little* + nome non numerabile.*I took so many photos. I spent so much money. We've got so little time.***v** Si usa *such a lot of* + nome plurale o non numerabile.*I took such a lot of photos. I spent such a lot of money.*Nota che generalmente non c'è differenza di significato tra *so much/many* ... e *such a lot of***B So/such ... that ...***So/such ... that* ... è una struttura usata per parlare di una situazione e delle sue conseguenze.*There were so many people at the party that we couldn't move.**It was such a nice day that we went to the beach.*Nota che è possibile anche omettere *that*.*He was so shocked he couldn't speak.***C What (a) ...***What (a) ...* (Che...) è un'esclamazione comunemente usata. Si usa *what* con un nome numerabile e *what* (senza *a*) con un nome non numerabile o plurale.*What a great lesson! What nice people!*Si può usare anche *What (a) ...* senza aggettivo.*What a view! What a goal!*

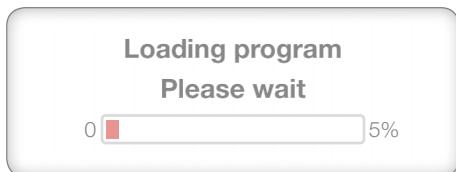
► Vedi unità 106 per i nomi numerabili e non numerabili.

- 1** Riscrivi le frasi relative a una giornata in spiaggia. Usa *so* o *such* per dare enfasi all'aggettivo o al nome.

- 0 It was a lovely day. *It was such a lovely day.*
- 1 It was hot.
- 2 It's a beautiful beach.
- 3 The sea was warm.
- 4 There were many people.
- 5 We had a lot of fun.
- 6 It was a great day.

- 2** Completa le due frasi relative a ogni figura usando *so* nella prima e *such* nella seconda e gli aggettivi del riquadro.

close easy expensive slow



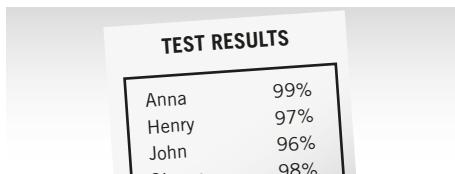
- 0 My computer is so slow.
It's such a slow computer.



- 2 The game game.



- 1 The café café.



- 3 The test test.

- 3** Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa *so/such ... that*

- 0 It was a nice day. We went for a walk.
It was such a nice day that we went for a walk.
- 1 I was tired. I went to bed at 9 o'clock.
- 2 They are a popular band. Tickets sold out in minutes.
- 3 The film was bad. I walked out after 30 minutes.
- 4 Ms Jones is a great teacher. I enjoy all her lessons.
- 5 I've got a lot of clothes. I can never decide what to wear.

- 4** Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Usa *What (a) ...* e le parole del riquadro.

cold day fantastic view goal delicious food



- 0 What a cold day!



- 2



- 1



- 3

146 Revisione e potenziamento (unità 139–145)

Aggettivi

1 Aggettivi: varie forme Completa i dialoghi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

A Are you ⁰ *interesting / interested* in football?

B No. I think it's really ¹ *boring / bored*.

A Do you want something to eat?

B Yes, I'm absolutely ² *hungry / starving*.

A Is Nicole the one with ³ *hair blonde / blonde hair*?

B Yes, ⁴ *blonde long / long blonde* hair.

A Where exactly is your school?

B It's that ⁵ *big old grey / grey old big* building next to the ⁶ *centre sports / sports centre*.

A How was the film?

B It was very ⁷ *good / fantastic*. Absolutely ⁸ *funny / hilarious*.

A How's your pizza?

B Very ⁹ *tasty / delicious*. And yours?

A Absolutely ¹⁰ *tasty / delicious*.

A It was ¹¹ *so / such* a nice day yesterday, wasn't it?

B Yes. We went to the beach, actually. It was ¹² *so / such* hot.

A How was the tennis?

B Really ¹³ *tiring / tired*. I'm ¹⁴ *so / such* ¹⁵ *exhausted / exhausting*.

A Did you buy that ¹⁶ *computer game new / new computer game*?

B No, it was ¹⁷ *too expensive / too much expensive*. I didn't have ¹⁸ *enough money / money enough*.

A Are you ¹⁹ *enough warm / warm enough*? Shall I close the window?

B Well, I am quite ²⁰ *cold / freezing*, actually.

A You can't watch this film. You're ²¹ *too young / too much young*.

B Oh, that's ²² *so unfair / such unfair*! All my friends have seen it. They all say it's absolutely ²³ *good / brilliant*.

T 2

Aggettivi: varie forme Traduci le frasi.

0 Sono troppo vecchio per leggere i fumetti. I'm *too old to read comics*.

1 Non ho abbastanza soldi per un caffè. *I don't have enough money for a coffee*.

2 Sono troppo stanco per uscire stasera. *I'm too tired to go out tonight*.

3 Che film assolutamente brillante! *What a brilliant movie!*

4 Sara stava indossando un vestito rosso stupefacente. *Sara was wearing a really amazing red dress*.

5 Sono così emozionato per le mie vacanze. *I'm so excited about my holidays*.

6 Quella è stata una lezione veramente eccellente! È stata proprio interessante. *That was a really excellent lesson! It was really interesting*.

7 Ho comprato uno gonna di cotone, verde e lunga. *I bought a long green cotton skirt*.

8 Sto leggendo un interessante libro di scienze. *I'm reading an interesting science book*.

9 I dipinti di Jane sono molto colorati. *Jane's paintings are very colorful*.

3 Aggettivi derivati da nomi e verbi Leggi il testo tratto da un libro e usa le parole date alla fine di ogni riga per formare l'aggettivo corretto.

Four days in Tuscany

I woke up, opened the window and I looked up at the beautiful ⁰ cloudless blue sky. I was in Tuscany in July and I was staying with a family in a ¹ old villa with a red roof, yellow walls and an ² big green door. The villa was surrounded by vineyards and ³ narrow tracks for as far as the eye could see.

The family were very ⁴ and welcoming and the home-cooked food was absolutely ⁵ The best I have ever tasted.

The grandmother, who was in her nineties, was an extremely ⁶ old lady and we chatted all day long. In her younger days, she had been unusually ⁷ and had travelled all over the world, studied in America and had met many ⁸ people, including two presidents. Not surprisingly, she was also very ⁹ and she had answers to all my questions. She told me the secret of old age was to be ¹⁰ in body and mind at all times. Her enthusiasm for life was truly ¹¹

After four days I said goodbye to one of the most ¹² and ¹³ times of my life. We have kept in touch.

The old lady is now a hundred and five.

cloud
colour
impress
dust

friend
wonder

talk
adventure

fame
knowledge

act
amaze
enjoy
memory

4 Grammatica e lessico: aggettivi (varie forme) Completa le descrizioni usando gli aggettivi del riquadro.

diamond-shaped oval rectangular round spherical square triangular

0 a square birthday cake

1

3

5



1 coffee table

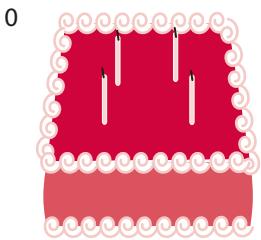
2 watch

3 picture frame

4 glass vase

5 goldfish bowl

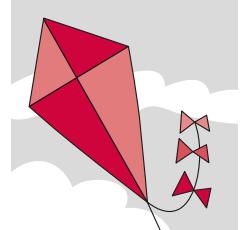
6 kite



2

4

6



A Forma

Gli aggettivi al grado comparativo si formano aggiungendo *-er* o aggiungendo *more*.

- i Per aggettivi monosillabici, si aggiunge *-er*.

small → *smaller* *quick* → *quicker* *cheap* → *cheaper*
It's quicker by train. È più veloce con il treno.

Nota che agli aggettivi che terminano in *e* si aggiunge solo *-r*, mentre negli aggettivi che terminano in vocale seguita da una consonante si raddoppia la lettera finale.

nice → *nicer* *big* → *bigger*

- ii Per aggettivi con due o più sillabe, in genere si usa *more*.

famous → *more famous* *expensive* → *more expensive*

Houses are more expensive in the UK. Le case sono più costose in Gran Bretagna.

Nota che si può usare anche *less*.

Houses are less expensive in France. Le case sono meno costose in Francia.

- iii Per aggettivi bisillabici che terminano in *-y* si usa in genere *-ier*, ma a volte si può anche usare *more*.

friendly → *friendlier* o *more friendly* *funny* → *funnier* o *more funny*

- iv Queste sono alcune forme comparative irregolari:

good → *better* *bad* → *worse* *far* → *farther/further*

► Vedi appendice 1, pagina 411, per i cambi ortografica.

B Than e as ... as

Si può usare *than* e *(not) as ... as* per paragonare due cose tra loro.

Pete's taller than me. Pete è più alto di me.

I'm not as tall as Pete. Non sono alto come Pete.

I'm as tall as my dad. Sono alto come mio padre.

C A little, a lot, much ecc.

Si possono fare paragoni più precisi con espressioni come:

<i>a little</i> (un po')	<i>a lot</i> (molto)	<i>twice</i> (il doppio)
<i>slightly</i> (leggermente)	<i>much</i> (molto)	<i>three times</i> (il triplo)
<i>a bit</i> (un po')	<i>far</i> (di molto)	<i>300 metres</i> (300 metri) ecc.

The train is slightly more expensive than the bus. This shirt is €20 cheaper.

Nota che non si usa *very* prima di un comparativo.

The weather is much nicer today. Non *The weather is very nicer today.*

D Twice, three times ecc.

Di solito si possono usare espressioni come *three times*, *ten times* (il triplo/tre volte più, dieci volte più) ecc. con un aggettivo al grado comparativo o con *as ... as*.

This mobile is three times more expensive than that one.

This mobile is three times as expensive as that one.

Twice (il doppio, due volte più) si usa sempre con *as ... as*.

This mobile is twice as expensive as that one. Non *This mobile is twice more expensive than that one.*

1 Completa le frasi con il comparativo di maggioranza dell'aggettivo in corsivo.

- 0 Your mobile is *quite cool*, but mine is *cooler*.....
- 1 It's a *nice* day today, but yesterday was
- 2 Today's lesson was *interesting*, but yesterday's was
- 3 Rihanna is *famous*, but Beyoncé is
- 4 I'm pretty *good* at computer games, but my friend Luigi is
- 5 My last exam results were *bad*, but these are much
- 6 Italy is *hot*, but Greece is generally a little
- 7 Oxford is *beautiful*, but Cambridge is
- 8 The last exercise was *easy*, but this one is much

2 Scrivi le domande usando *Which is ...* e il comparativo di maggioranza degli aggettivi del riquadro.

big busy intelligent near

- | | |
|---|--------------------------|
| 0 A <i>Which is bigger</i> – Canada or the USA? | B Canada, I think. |
| 1 A – Venus or Mars? | B Venus, I think. |
| 2 A – a gorilla or a chimpanzee? | B A chimpanzee, I think. |
| 3 A – JFK or Heathrow airport? | B Heathrow, I imagine. |

3 Confronta le seguenti cose in due modi usando *than* e *not as ... as* e gli aggettivi del riquadro.

big high long popular

- | | |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| The Amazon 6400 km | Italy 301,000 km ² |
| The Nile 6695 km | The UK 244,000 km ² |
| 0 The Nile <i>is longer than the Amazon</i> .
The Amazon <i>is not as long as the Nile</i> . | 2 Italy
The UK |
| Mount Everest 8848 m | Football 200 million participants |
| The Matterhorn 4477 m | Rugby 2 million participants |
| 1 Mount Everest
The Matterhorn | 3 Football
Rugby |

4 Confronta le cose dell'Esercizio 3 usando le espressioni del riquadro. Usa *than* o *as ... as*.

about twice a hundred times a little quite a bit

- 0 The Nile *is a little longer than the Amazon*.
- 1 Mount Everest
- 2 Italy
- 3 Football

5 Qual è la tua opinione su questi argomenti? Scrivi delle frasi vere per te usando gli aggettivi in corsivo e *than* o *not as ... as*.

- | |
|---|
| 0 Angelina <i>is better-looking than</i> Keira. <i>good-looking</i> |
| 1 French food Italian food. <i>healthy</i> |
| 2 Brazil Italy. <i>good at football</i> |
| 3 Johnny Depp Brad Pitt. <i>cool</i> |
| 4 Rome Paris. <i>beautiful</i> |

148

Aggettivi superlativi

I'm the oldest. Which is the most expensive? This one is the best.

A Forma

Gli aggettivi superlativi si formano aggiungendo *-est* o usando *most*. Prima dell'aggettivo si usa *the*.

- i Per gli aggettivi monosillabici, si aggiunge *-est*.

small → **the smallest** *quick* → **the quickest** *cheap* → **the cheapest**
Vatican City is the smallest country in the world.

La Città del Vaticano è il Paese più piccolo del mondo.

Nota che per gli aggettivi che terminano in *e* si aggiunge solo *-st* e, per gli aggettivi che terminano in vocale-consonante, si raddoppia la lettera finale.

nice → **the nicest** *big* → **the biggest**

This is the hottest room in the house.

Questa è la stanza più calda della casa.

- ii Per aggettivi di due o più sillabe, in genere si usa *most*.

famous → **the most famous** *expensive* → **the most expensive**
Moscow is the most expensive city in the world.

Mosca è la città più cara del mondo.

Nota che si può anche usare *least*.

The XD1 is the least popular model in the range.
L'XD1 è il modello meno popolare della gamma.

- iii Per aggettivi bisillabici che terminano in *-y* si usa in genere *-iest*, ma a volte si può anche usare *most*.

friendly → **the friendliest** o **the most friendly**

- iv Ci sono alcune forme superlative irregolari.

good → **the best** *bad* → **the worst** *far* → **the farthest/furthest**

Ricorda che *most* non viene usato con *-est* o con le forme irregolari.

It's the most biggest. It's the most best.

► **Vedi appendice 1, pagina 411, per i cambi ortografici.**

B By far

Si può dare enfasi al superlativo usando *by far* (di gran lunga).

Russia is by far the biggest country. La Russia è di gran lunga il paese più grande.

C My oldest..., this year's biggest... ecc.

Si possono usare altri determinanti come *my*, *this*, *his* *year's*, *the school's* ecc. al posto di *the*.

My oldest friend is Paolo. This year's biggest film was 'Space Wars.'

1 Scrivi la forma superlativa degli aggettivi in corsivo.

- 0 A Are you a fan of The Beatles?
B Absolutely. They are the greatest band ever. *great*
- 1 A What was Prague like?
B I'd say it's city I've ever been to. *beautiful*
- 2 A Can you recommend a good book?
B *Perfume* by Patrick Süskind. It's book I've ever read. *amazing*
- 3 A Thomas never does any work.
B I agree. In fact, he must be person I know. *lazy*
- 4 A How was your meal last night?
B Terrible. By far meal I've ever eaten. *bad*
- 5 A What's the best way to get to your house?
B By bus. It's way and probably also *cheap, quick*
- 6 A How was the party?
B Brilliant. It was party ever! *good*

2 Completa il quiz usando i suggerimenti del riquadro. Sai rispondere alle domande?

which / big what / common which / long who / long-serving what / popular which / visit

USA QUIZ

Answer the questions and win a holiday in the USA!

- 0 Which is the biggest US state?
a California **b** Alaska **c** Texas
- 1 river in the USA?
a the Mississippi **b** the Colorado **c** the Missouri
- 2 family name in the USA?
a Johnson **b** Jones **c** Smith
- 3 spectator sport in the USA?
a football **b** baseball **c** basketball
- 4 US president?
a Harry S Truman **b** George Washington **c** Franklin D Roosevelt
- 5 tourist attraction in the USA?
a the Empire State Building **b** the Statue of Liberty **c** Times Square

Answers: 0b, 1c, 2c, 3a, 4c, 5c

3 Scrivi frasi vere per te usando la forma superlativa dell'aggettivo dato.

- 0 hot / place I've been to The hottest place I've been to is Turkey.
- 1 interesting / place I've been to
- 2 good / book I've ever read
- 3 my old / friend
- 4 expensive / thing I own
- 5 my treasured / possession

- 1 Aggettivi comparativi** Completa le frasi in cui Italia e Regno Unito sono messi a confronto. Usa gli aggettivi in corsivo e *than* o *not as ... as*.

	ITALY	UK
1 area		301,000km ²
2 urban population		66%
3 agricultural land		33%
4 life expectancy		80.1
5 world wealth rank		23rd
6 happiness index		71%

- 0 Italy is *bigger than* the UK. *big* 3 Italian people live British people. *long*
 1 Italy is the UK. *urban* 4 Italy the UK. *wealthy*
 2 Italy the UK. *agricultural* 5 Italian people British people. *happy*

- 2 Aggettivi comparativi** Elimina l'alternativa che non è possibile. Usa le informazioni della tabella dell'Esercizio 1.

- 0 Life expectancy in Italy is *a little/a lot/*slightly higher.
 1 Italians are generally *much/slightly/a little* happier in life.
 2 Italy is *quite a lot/much/very* more agricultural.
 3 Italy is *about 25%/quite a bit/only very slightly* bigger.

- 3 Aggettivi superlativi** Completa il testo con la forma superlativa degli aggettivi del riquadro.

annoying long old popular successful successful young

British pop records

Elvis Presley is by far ⁰ the most successful music star of all time in Britain. The singer, who died in 1977, has had a total of 2,463 weeks in the UK single and album charts. The second ¹ act is The Beatles with 1,749 weeks in the chart, followed closely by Queen with 1,725.

Elvis has also had the most Number One UK singles with 21. He also holds the record for ² time between his first and last Number One, currently 47 years and six months, from June 1957 to February 2005.

³ chart-topper is Louis Armstrong, who was 68 when *What A Wonderful World* reached Number One in 1968, and pop star-turned-actress Billie Piper is ⁴ person to top the charts, aged 15.

In a separate survey, *The Birdie Song* from 1981 was voted the UK's ⁵ pop song ever and Queen's *Bohemian Rhapsody*, which was the Christmas Number One twice in 1975 and 1991, was voted ⁶

4 Aggettivi comparativi e superlativi Completa queste informazioni sportive usando l'aggettivo in corsivo e le parole che servono.



0 The world's most popular non-competitive sport is swimming.
It is marginally more popular than cycling, which is the second
most popular popular

1 competitive sport in the world is volleyball. It is more than
twice basketball, which is
next popular

2 Suleiman Nashnush is professional sportsman ever.
When he represented Libya at basketball in 1962, he was 2.45 metres. This is ten centimetres
..... North Korean basketball star Ri Myong-hun, who at
one time was person in the world. tall

3 sportsman ever is Sumo wrestler Konishiki. In 1994,
he weighed 267 kg. heavy

4 In 1997, Yiannis Kouros of Greece ran anyone has ever
run in a single day. He covered 300 km in 24 hours at an average speed of 12.5 kmh. far

5 man in the world is Usain Bolt, who shot to
fame when he ran at 43.9 kmh in the 2008 Olympic 100 metres final. This was 0.3 kmh
..... the previous record achieved by Maurice Greene
in the 1997 World Championships. fast

6 world's sport
is powerboat racing. Statistically, it is five times
motor racing. dangerous

T

5 Aggettivi comparativi e superlativi Traduci le frasi e la domanda.

0 Sono il più giovane della mia famiglia. I'm the youngest in my family.

1 Il libro è molto meglio del film.

2 L'Italia non è così costosa come il Regno Unito.

3 L'Ucraina è di gran lunga il paese più grande dell'Europa.

4 È più veloce andare in autobus o in treno?

5 Carolina è una delle mie più vecchie amiche.

6 Firenze è la città più bella del mondo.

*I opened the door **slowly**. They won the game **easily**. He played **well**.*

A Uso

Gli avverbi di modo si usano per descrivere un'azione. Esprimono il modo in cui qualcuno fa qualcosa o il modo in cui accade qualcosa.

*He ran **quickly**. Corse velocemente.*

*I did my work **carefully**. Feci il lavoro attentamente.*

B Forma

La maggior parte degli avverbi di modo si forma aggiungendo *-ly* ad un aggettivo.

slow → slowly immediate → immediately

Tuttavia, ci sono diverse forme a seconda di come termina l'aggettivo.

-y → -ily easy → easily

-le → -ly terrible → terribly

-ic → -ically automatic → automatically

Ci sono alcune forme irregolari.

good → well fast → fast hard → hard

early → early late → late

*He played **well**. He's driving **fast**. I worked **hard**.*

*We arrived **early/late**.*

C Posizione nella frase

Gli avverbi di modo in genere vanno dopo il verbo e i relativi complementi.

*They left **suddenly**.*

*He opened the door **slowly**.*

Alcuni avverbi di modo possono andare prima del verbo, specie se il complemento è lungo. Non c'è alcuna regola che stabilisca quali avverbi possano e quali non possano andare prima del verbo. È importante notare come sono usati gli avverbi.

*They **suddenly** left.*

*You'll **easily** pass the exam.*

*He **slowly** opened the door of the room at the end of the corridor.*



Nota che in inglese gli avverbi di modo non vanno messi tra il verbo e i relativi complementi.
*She speaks **well** Spanish.
 He opened **slowly** the door.*

D Comparativi e superlativi

Si usa *more* e *the most* + avverbio. Si possono usare anche *less* e *the least*.

*Can you drive **more slowly**? Puoi guidare più lentamente?*

*Andrea speaks **the most fluently**. Andrea parla nel modo più corretto possibile.*

*Can you speak **less quickly**? Può parlare meno velocemente?*

Si usa *-er* e *the -est* per avverbi irregolari.

*We arrived **earlier** than everyone else. Arrivammo prima di chiunque altro.*

*We arrived **the earliest**. Arrivammo per primi.*

- 1** Che cosa succede nelle figure? Completa le frasi con la forma avverbiale degli aggettivi del riquadro.

angry bad careful dangerous heavy quiet



0 He's riding dangerously.

2 She's shouting

4 She's speaking



1 He's listening

3 He's playing

5 It's raining

- 2** Completa le insegne e gli avvisi usando i verbi e gli avverbi dei riquadri.

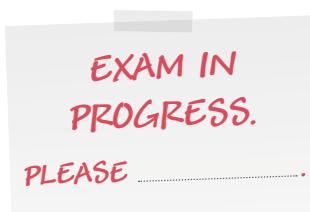
drive fasten mix speak walk write

carefully clearly quietly securely thoroughly slowly

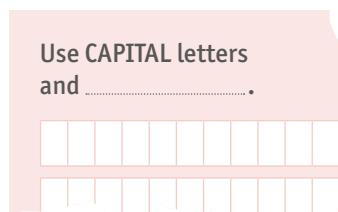
0



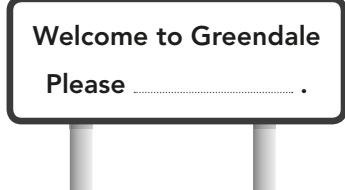
2



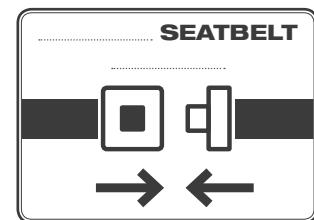
4



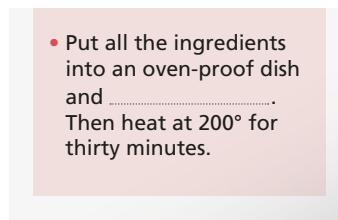
1



3



5



- 3** Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando un avverbio.

- 0 He's a good tennis player. He plays tennis well.
- 1 I'm a fast typist. I can
- 2 He's a slow reader. He
- 3 She's a good guitarist. She plays
- 4 I was early for my interview. I arrived
- 5 We were late for class. We came
- 6 His singing is very bad. He
- 7 Her spoken English is good. She
- 8 Is she a hard worker? Does she?

A Uso e forma

- i Gli avverbi di luogo indicano il luogo dove avviene qualcosa. Sono composti da parole ed espressioni come: *in London, at the cinema, to school, on the table, outside, here, everywhere, away* ecc.
- ii Gli avverbi di tempo indicano il momento in cui qualcosa avviene o la durata di tempo di un avvenimento, un'azione ecc.
Sono parole ed espressioni come: *at six o'clock, on Friday, in July, in 2015, yesterday, at the moment, for two hours, since June, when I was a child* ecc.

B Posizione nella frase

- i Gli avverbi di luogo e di tempo generalmente vanno dopo il verbo e il suo complemento.

We're leaving on Monday. Non *We're on Monday leaving.*

I saw Pedro at the gym. Non *I saw at the gym Pedro.*

We have lunch at 12.30. Non *We have at 12.30 lunch.*

Comunque, gli avverbi di tempo e luogo si possono mettere all'inizio della frase o dell'espressione.

At 12.30 we have lunch, and then we have lessons until 2.30.

They drive on the right in the USA, but in Australia, they drive on the left.

- ii Quando si esprimono tempo e luogo, la posizione degli avverbi dipende dal verbo.

- Per i verbi che hanno un forte collegamento con il luogo (*go, come, arrive, stay, live* ecc.) si indica il luogo prima del tempo.

I went to London at the weekend. Non *I went at the weekend to London.*

We've lived here for years. Non *We've lived for years here.*

Pedro was at the gym on Friday. Non *Pedro was on Friday at the gym.*

- Per i verbi che non hanno un così forte collegamento con il luogo (*see, meet, speak* ecc.), ciò che si vuole enfatizzare viene anteposto.

Have you seen Pedro recently? ~ Yes, I saw him on Friday at the gym. o Yes, I saw him at the gym on Friday.

► Vedi unità 154 per gli avverbi di tempo relativo *already, yet, just, soon, still e recently*.

1 Quali di queste risposte sono accettabili (✓) e quali non lo sono (✗)?

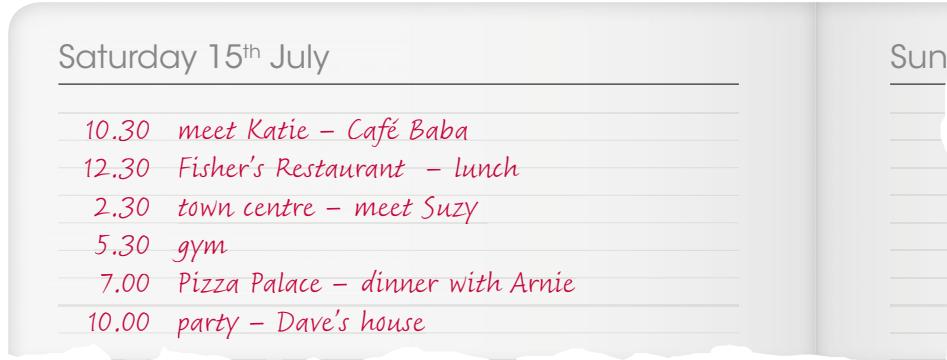
- 0 Have you seen Simon recently?
 - a I saw him in the park yesterday. ✓
 - b I saw him yesterday in the park. ✓
 - c I saw yesterday him in the park. ✗
- 1 What did you do at the weekend?
 - a On Saturday we went to the beach and on Sunday we stayed at home.
 - b We went on Saturday to the beach and we stayed on Sunday at home.
 - c We went to the beach on Saturday and on Sunday we stayed at home.
- 2 What are you doing tonight?
 - a I'm meeting at Café Roma at 7.30 Julia.
 - b I'm meeting Julia at Café Roma at 7.30.
 - c I'm meeting Julia at 7.30 at Café Roma.

- 3 What are your plans for the summer?
- We're going to Spain in July and in August we're going to the UK.
 - In July we're going to Spain and in August we're going to the UK.
 - We're going to Spain in July and we're going in August to the UK.
- 4 How long have you lived here?
- I've all my life lived here.
 - I've lived all my life here.
 - I've lived here all my life.

2 Riordina le parole in modo da scrivere delle frasi di senso compiuto.

- 0 after school / we / to the park / are going
..... We are going to the park after school.
- 1 English / have studied / I / for two years
<.....
- 2 study / we / on Tuesdays and Thursdays / Biology
<.....
- 3 this semester / economics / am studying / I
<.....
- 4 to school / I / five days a week / go
<.....
- 5 at 7.55 / arrived / this morning / I / at school
<.....
- 6 at school / was / I / all day yesterday
<.....

3 Leggi l'agenda di Jen e completa le frasi sulla sua giornata di sabato.



- 0 She's meeting Katie at Café Baba at 10.30.
- 1 She's having
- 2 She's meeting
- 3 She's going
- 4 She's having
- 5 She's going

4 Completa le frasi relative a tre impegni che hai preso. In ciascuna frase usa almeno due informazioni a scelta tra 'chi', 'dove' e 'quando'.

- 0 I'm meeting my friend Sofia at her house this evening.
- 1 I'm meeting
- 2 I'm seeing
- 3 I'm going

I usually walk to school. I am occasionally late for work. I go out twice a week.

A Uso e forma

Gli avverbi di frequenza si usano per indicare quanto spesso si compie qualcosa.

- i I principali avverbi di frequenza sono:

always (sempre)
often/frequently (spesso/frequentemente)
usually/normally/generally (spesso/normalmente/generalmente)
sometimes (a volte)
occasionally (occasionalmente)
rarely (raramente)
hardly ever (quasi mai)
never (mai)

più frequente

meno frequente

I occasionally go to the gym.

I hardly ever listen to classical music.

Do you ever play computer games? ~ No, never.

- ii Si usano anche espressioni di frequenza come:

every day (ogni giorno) *twice a year* (due volte all'anno)
every two months (ogni due mesi) *on Mondays* (il lunedì)
I check my emails every day.
I go swimming once a week.

Nota che *always* e *usually/normally/generally* si usano insieme con altre espressioni di frequenza o quando la frequenza è sottintesa.

I normally go to the gym three times a week.

I usually walk to school. (È sottinteso 'ogni giorno'.)

B Posizione degli avverbi di frequenza

Gli avverbi di frequenza in genere vanno:

- i prima del verbo principale,
I occasionally play tennis. Non ~~I play occasionally tennis.~~
I never buy a newspaper. Non ~~I buy never a newspaper.~~

- ii dopo *be*.

He is occasionally late for school. Non ~~He occasionally is late for school.~~

I'm often in bed by 10 o'clock. Non ~~I often am in bed by 10 o'clock.~~

Nota che si possono anche mettere *occasionally*, *sometimes*, *usually*, *normally* e *generally* all'inizio o alla fine della frase.

Sometimes, it rains for days. It rains for days sometimes.

Le espressioni di frequenza in genere vanno alla fine della frase.

We have English lessons every day. Non ~~We have every day English lessons.~~

C How often ...?

Si può usare *How often ...?* per chiedere con quale frequenza avviene qualcosa.

Si può usare anche *How many times a day/week/month/year ...?*

How often do you study English?

How many times a week do you play tennis?



Nota che non si usa un verbo negativo con *never* e *hardly ever*.
I never drink coffee.
 Non ~~I don't never drink coffee.~~

1 Cancella l'alternativa sbagliata.

A day in my life

I ⁰normally get up *normally* at about 7 o'clock, have a quick shower and then I get dressed. I ¹usually am *usually* hungry in the morning so I have a big breakfast. I then set off for school; I ²usually walk *usually*, but ³sometimes I go *sometimes* on my bike. I ⁴normally am *normally* at school by 8.30. I get home from school at about 4 o'clock. We ⁵every day have homework every day and I do this before dinner. After dinner, I ⁶usually surf *usually* the internet for an hour or so and download some new music and send a few emails. I'll ⁷sometimes watch *sometimes* TV if there's anything interesting on. I ⁸once or twice a week go to a friend's house once or twice a week and ⁹occasionally we go out *occasionally* to the cinema or something. I ¹⁰generally go *generally* to bed at about 10.30 and read for a while. I ¹¹always am *always* asleep by midnight.

2 Riscrivi le frasi aggiungendo le espressioni avverbiali in corsivo nella posizione corretta.

- 0 I use the internet. *two or three times a week*

I use the internet *two or three times a week*.

- 1 I buy things online. *hardly ever*

- 2 I post things on forums. *occasionally*

- 3 I check my emails. *usually / several times a day*

- 4 I spend three or four hours on the internet. *generally / each day*

- 5 I change my passwords. *every six months*

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che siano vere per te aggiungendo un avverbio e/o un'espressione di frequenza.

- 0 I use the internet. I usually use the internet *every day*.

- 1 I play online games.

- 2 I download music.

- 3 I chat with friends online.

- 4 I change my password.

- 5 I send emails.

- 6 My internet connection is slow.

4 Scrivi le domande usando *How often ...?*

- 0 get your hair cut? How often do you get your hair cut?

- 1 go to the cinema?

- 2 be late for school?

- 3 play football?

5 Scrivi delle risposte vere per te alle domande dell'Esercizio 4.

- 0 I usually get my hair cut *every two months*.

- 1

- 2

- 3

He's very old. It's really hot. I'm fairly sure. It's quite interesting.

Si usano avverbi comparativi per rafforzare o attenuare il significato di aggettivi, avverbi o verbi.

A Very, really e so

Very, really e so sono gli avverbi rafforzativi più comuni. Si usano con gli aggettivi e gli avverbi. Con i verbi si può anche usare *really*.

My teacher's very nice. Il mio insegnante è molto simpatico.

Brrr! It's so cold. Brrr! Fa così freddo.

I really enjoyed the film. Mi è davvero piaciuto il film.

B Extremely, incredibly ecc.

Altri avverbi che vengono in genere usati per rafforzare aggettivi e avverbi sono: *extremely* (estremamente), *unbelievably* (incredibilmente), *incredibly* (incredibilmente). *The exam was incredibly difficult. It's extremely old.*

C Not very, a little, a bit e slightly

Not very, a little, a bit e slightly sono gli avverbi più comunemente usati per attenuare il significato di aggettivi e avverbi.

I'm not very hungry. Non ho molta fame.

We were a little late this morning. Eravamo un po' in ritardo stamattina.

D Quite, rather, fairly e pretty

Quite, rather, fairly e pretty significano più di *a little* ma meno di *very*. Si usano con gli aggettivi e gli avverbi. Si può usare anche *quite* con i verbi *like* e *enjoy*.

The film was quite good. Il film era piuttosto bello.

He played fairly well. Ha giocato piuttosto bene.

I quite like ballet. Mi piace parecchio il balletto.

Tuttavia, se si sottolinea l'aggettivo, l'avverbio o il verbo quando si usa *quite, rather, fairly e pretty* si suggerisce che si è sorpresi o che si pensa che chi ascolta sarà sorpreso. *The film was quite good. I quite like ballet.*

E A lot e (not) very much

A lot e (not) very much si usano con espressioni verbali.

I like Indian food a lot. Mi piace molto il cibo indiano.

I didn't enjoy the film very much. Il film non mi è piaciuto molto.

► Vedi unità 142 per altri avverbi comparativi e aggettivi con/privi di gradi di comparazione.

F Posizione degli avverbi rafforzativi

Gli avverbi rafforzativi si mettono subito prima della parola che modificano.

It's very beautiful. She's quite tall. I have really enjoyed myself.

Invece, *very much* e *a lot* vanno dopo il verbo e il complemento.

I enjoyed the party very much. La festa mi è piaciuta moltissimo.

Non *I enjoyed very much the party.*

I like playing tennis a lot. Mi piace molto giocare a tennis. Non I like a lot playing tennis.

► Vedi anche unità 173 (enfasi con aggettivi e avverbi).

1 Guarda le figure poi completa le frasi usando le parole in corsivo.



0 tall quite, really

She's quite tall.

He's really tall.



3 expensive not very, incredibly

The sports car

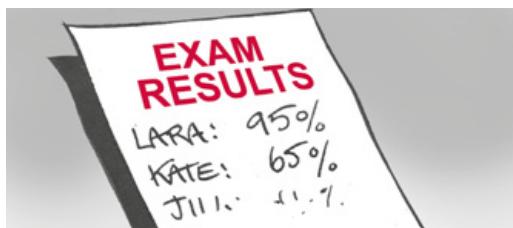
The family car



1 old fairly, very

She

He



4 did well quite, really

Lara

Kate



2 untidy a bit, so

His desk

Her desk



5 enjoyed the film quite, a lot

She

He

2 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

0 A How was the game?
B It was OK. We played a bit / quite well.

1 A Phew! It's a lot / so hot today.
B Yeah, it's very much / pretty amazing, isn't it? It's 35 degrees, I think.

2 A Thank you very / very much for my birthday present.
B Don't mention it. You're very / a lot welcome.

3 A I really / very don't like rap music.
B Don't you? I quite / a little like some of it.

4 A I extremely / really enjoyed the film last night.
B Did you? I thought it was a bit / not very boring, actually.

3 Aggiungi **very, really, not very, quite, fairly** ecc. in modo che le frasi siano vere per te. Puoi usare anche **not** o **don't**.

0 I'm quite tall.

4 I'm interested in football.

1 My hair is short.

5 I enjoy studying.

2 I like rock music.

6 I'm cool!

3 I'm good at chess.

7 I'm friendly.

I've already had lunch. I haven't finished my work yet. Have they just arrived?

A Uso e forma

Si usano *already, still, yet, just, soon* e *recently* per parlare di tempo relativo in contrasto con il tempo esatto.

i Si usa *already* (già) per parlare di qualcosa che è già avvenuto in precedenza.

Si usa *yet* (già, non ancora) per parlare di qualcosa che non era accaduto prima, ma ci si aspetta che accada.

Sam has already left. Sam è già partito.

Sam hasn't left yet. Sam non è ancora partito.

Sia *already* che *yet* si possono usare nelle domande.

Has Sam left yet? Sam è già partito?

Has Sam already left? Sam è già partito?

Not yet è una risposta breve usata comunemente.

Have you had lunch? ~ Not yet. Hai già pranzato? ~ Non ancora.

ii Si usa *just* (appena) per dire che qualcosa è avvenuto da pochissimo tempo.

Sam has just left. Sam è appena andato via.

iii Si usa *soon* (tra breve) per dire che qualcosa avverrà entro breve tempo.

Sam is leaving soon. Sam partirà tra breve.

iv Si usa *still* (ancora) per dire che una situazione continua.

Sam is still here. Sam è ancora qui.

v Si usa *recently* (recentemente, di recente) per dire che qualcosa è avvenuto poco tempo fa. Si usa inoltre per qualcosa che è iniziato nel passato e che continua fino ad ora.

Sam has recently left. Sam è partito recentemente.

I've been working hard recently. Di recente lavoro sodo.

Not recently è una risposta breve usata comunemente.

Have you seen Tony? ~ Not recently. Hai visto Tony? ~ Non di recente.

Nota che spesso si usa *already, yet, just, still* e *recently* con il present perfect.

► Vedi unità 25–28 per l'uso degli avverbi con il present perfect.

B Posizione nella frase

i Si mette in genere *already, still, just* o *recently* immediatamente prima del verbo principale ma dopo il verbo *be*.

I've already eaten. I'm still hungry. They still live here.

Bill's just arrived. He recently won the Nobel prize.

Si può anche mettere *already* o *recently* alla fine della frase.

I've eaten already. Have you seen Karen recently?

ii Si mette in genere *soon* o *yet* alla fine della frase.

The taxi will be here soon. I haven't eaten yet.

1 Riscrivi i dialoghi usando le parole in corsivo nella posizione corretta.

- 0 A Is Peter back? *yet* Is Peter back *yet*?
B No. He's on holiday. *still* No. He's still on *holiday*.
- 1 A Have you had lunch? *already*
B Yes, but I'm hungry. *still*
- 2 A Have you seen Jimmy? *recently*
B I saw him in the library, actually. *just*
- 3 A Are you waiting for Harry to call? *still*
B No, he's phoned. *just*
- 4 A Have you phoned Lena? *yet*
B No, but I'll do it. *soon*
- 5 A I think I'll get a new mobile. *soon*
B Oh, I've bought a new one. *just*
- 6 A Has the taxi arrived? *yet*
B No, we're waiting. *still*

2 Completa i dialoghi usando *Not yet* o *Not recently*.

- 0 A Have you had lunch today? B *Not yet*. It's at 1.30
1 A Have you passed your driving test? B I'm only 15.
2 A Have you seen Sara? B I last saw her three months ago.
3 A Have you had dinner today? B We're eating at about 8.30.
4 A Have you had exams at school? B , but we had some last term.
5 A Have you had your exam? B It's next Monday.

3 Scrivi una frase per ciascuna delle 'cose che devi fare prima di compiere diciotto anni'.

Usa *have already done it* o *haven't done it yet* e le parole del riquadro.

8 THINGS TO DO BEFORE YOU ARE 18

0 Learn to drive	4 Learn a foreign language
1 Learn to play a musical instrument	5 Go on holiday without your parents
2 See a live band	6 Stay up all night
3 Go abroad	7 Represent your school at sport

already yet recently still soon

- 0 I've *already* learnt to drive.
1
2
3
4
5
6
7

Have you ever been to the USA? You can sit wherever you want to.

A Ever

Ever (mai) significa ‘in qualsiasi momento’ oppure ‘per tutto il tempo’ e si usa in genere per dare enfasi ad una frase. *Ever* si usa in molti modi, ma gli usi più comuni sono:

- i Generalmente prima del verbo principale. *Ever* è usato prevalentemente nelle domande e nelle frasi con un elemento negativo.

Have you ever been to Australia? Sei mai stato in Australia?

No one will ever swim across the Atlantic. Nessuno attraverserà mai l'Atlantico a nuoto.

I only ever drink wine with a meal. Bevo vino soltanto durante i pasti.

Nota che spesso si usa *ever* con il present perfect, specie nelle domande del tipo *Have you ever ... ?*

► **Vedi unità 26 per l'uso di ever con il present perfect.**

- ii Con *since*

I've loved Orlando Bloom ever since I saw The Lord of the Rings films.

Mi piace Orlando Bloom da quando ho visto i film del Signore degli Anelli.

- iii Con *if*

If ever you need help, just ask. o If you ever need help, just ask.

Se mai avrai bisogno di aiuto, chiedi. o Se avrai mai bisogno di aiuto, chiedi.

- iv Con aggettivi superlativi e con *first, last* ecc.

This is the best party I've ever been to! Questa è la migliore festa a cui sia mai andato!

This is the first time I've ever eaten Chinese food. È la prima volta che mangio cibo cinese.

Pavarotti's last ever concert was at the Turin Winter Olympics.

L'ultimo concerto in assoluto di Pavarotti è stato alle Olimpiadi invernali di Torino.

- v Con aggettivi comparativi + *than* e con *more/less than*.

The competition is closer than ever. La gara è più serrata che mai.

I love you more than ever. Ti amo più che mai.

B -ever

- i Il suffisso *-ever* si unisce alle parole interrogative: *whatever, whenever, wherever, whichever, whoever e however*. Il significato è ‘qualunque cosa, tempo, luogo’ ecc.

You can invite whoever you like to your party. Puoi invitare chiunque tu voglia alla tua festa.

Whenever I go to Brighton, I always visit my cousins.

Ogni volta che vado a Brighton, vado sempre a trovare i miei cugini.

- ii Spesso si usa *whatever, whenever* ecc. al termine di una lista.

I don't mind where we go for a walk - the park, the river, wherever.

Non mi importa dove andare a fare una passeggiata - al parco, al fiume, dovunque.

The internet is great for shopping, gaming, downloading music and whatever.

Internet è favoloso per fare shopping, per giocare, per scaricare musica e qualsiasi altra cosa.

1 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa *ever* per dare maggiore enfasi, se appropriato.

- 0 A When did the World Cup start?
B The first World Cup was in Uruguay in 1930.
The first *ever* World Cup was in Uruguay in 1930.
- 1 A How was the concert last night?
B Great – much better than I imagined it would be.
Great – much
- 2 A Where do you live?
B Milan. We moved there in 2008 and we've lived there since.
Milan. We moved
- 3 A Where did you go last night?
B To Club Habana. Have you been there?
To Club Habana
- 4 A What's your favourite TV programme?
B *The Sopranos*. Did you watch it?
The Sopranos
- A Yes, I did. I thought the last episode was brilliant.
Yes, I did.
- 5 A Who's your favourite actor?
B Dennis Hopper. I've been a big fan since I saw *Apocalypse Now*.
Dennis Hopper.
- A I've never seen it.
B Well, if you get the chance, you really should. It's the best film!
Well, if

2 Scrivi delle domande che inizino con *Have you ever*?

Poi scrivi delle risposte vere per te usando *Yes, I have* o *No, never*.

- 0 go to the USA? *Have you ever been to the USA?* ~ *No, never*.
1 drink jasmine tea? ~
2 go to the UK? ~
3 meet a famous person? ~
4 win anything on the lottery? ~

3 Completa le frasi con una parola interrogativa + *ever*.

- 0 That's the new student – Barry, Brian or *whatever* his name is.
1 You can sit you like – these chairs are all free.
2 wins the game tonight will play England in the semi-final.
3 You can use the computer you like. You don't need to ask.
4 We've got no plans – we can do you'd like to do.
5 You can invite many people you like to your party ...
6 ... and you can invite you like.

4 Completa le frasi con una parola interrogativa + *ever*.

- 0 I don't mind what we eat – Chinese, Indian, Italian, *whatever* ..
1 I don't care who wins – Italy, Brazil, France, ..
2 I'm happy to listen to anything – rock, pop, punk, ..
3 I don't mind where I sit in class – front, back, middle, ..
4 I'll have tea or coffee – ..
5 Call round anytime – five, five-thirty, six, ..

156 Revisione e potenziamento (unità 150–155)

Avverbi

1 Significato degli avverbi Completa i dialoghi con gli avverbi dei riquadri.

0 just really yet

- A Do you fancy a coffee?
 B No, thanks. I've just had one. But I haven't had lunch yet Have you?
 A No, I haven't. And I'm really hungry, actually. Let's go.

1 just soon still

- A Is Sue here?
 B No. She's gone to post a letter. But I think she'll be back

2 ever normally so

- A Brrr! It's cold! It's not this cold, is it?
 B No, it isn't. They say this winter is going to be the coldest

3 soon still yet

- A Have Giulia and Armando arrived ?
 B No, we're waiting for them. I hope they get here or we'll have to go without them.

4 at the moment for ages last week really recently

- A Have you seen Jolanda ?
 B Yes, I saw her , actually.
 A I haven't seen her How is she?
 B She's fine, but she's busy , revising for her final exams.

5 easily every week quite usually

- A How was the football? Did you win?
 B Yes, we won , actually. Three-nil.
 A Do you play ?
 B Yes, on Wednesdays and Sundays.

6 fluently quite slowly very well

- A Does Karen speak Italian?
 B Yes, I think she speaks it , but not
 A Do you speak it?
 B Well, I can understand a little if you speak !

2 Avverbi: forme e posizione Completa l'oroscopo cinese scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.



CHINESE ASTROLOGY

In Chinese astrology each year is represented by an animal, and people born in that year have the characteristics of that animal.



RAT 1996, 2008

You are ¹very / a lot determined and ambitious. You work ²hard / hardly at all times and you ³make carefully decisions / make decisions carefully.



OX 1997, 2009

You are ⁴very / a lot dependable and you ⁵keep always / always keep your word. You are ⁶too serious sometimes / sometimes too serious about life.



TIGER 1998, 2010

You ⁷extremely are self-confident / are extremely self-confident. You make ⁸decisions quickly / quickly decisions and they ⁹usually are / are usually the right decision.



RABBIT 1999, 2011

You ¹⁰generally are / are generally quiet and calm. You are sensitive and you ¹¹often worry / worry often about other people.



DRAGON 1988, 2000

You are a ¹²very much / very lucky person and you are ¹³generally very successful / very generally successful at whatever you do.



SNAKE 1989, 2001

You are lively and energetic. However, you can ¹⁴get sometimes / sometimes get quickly angry / angry quickly.



HORSE 1990, 2002

You are sociable and you make ¹⁵friends easily / easily friends. However, ¹⁶you rather can be / you can be rather insecure at times.



SHEEP 1991, 2003

You are considerate and you ¹⁷always think / think always before you act. However, ¹⁸you think sometimes / sometimes you think about things too much.



MONKEY 1992, 2004

You love parties and you ¹⁹always are / are always looking for fun. You ²⁰don't take life seriously / don't seriously take life.



ROOSTER 1993, 2005

You ²¹really / very love to be the centre of attention. You ²²smartly dress / dress smartly and you like to look ²³good at all times / at all times good.



DOG 1994, 2006

You have strong opinions and ²⁴always you fight / you always fight for what you believe in.



PIG 1995, 2007

You are ²⁵extremely polite in all situations / in all situations extremely polite. You are a ²⁶much / very popular person.

- 3 **Avverbi: posizione** Riscrivi le frasi della biografia di Keira Knightley usando gli avverbi in corsivo nella posizione corretta. Quando c'è più di un avverbio, usali nell'ordine dato.

Celebrity focus: Keira Knightley

- 0 Keira Christina Knightley was born on March 26th 1985.

in London

*Keira Christina Knightley was born in London
on March 26th 1985.*

- 1 Her father was an actor and her mother worked in the theatre, so she has been exposed to the acting profession. *all her life*



- 2 She started acting and she appeared in theatre productions while she was at primary school.
at age three regularly still

- 3 She first appeared on TV in 1993 and her first film role was in *Star Wars: The Phantom Menace*.
when she was seven in 1999

- 4 Her first major film role was in the popular British film *Bend it Like Beckham*.
phenomenally in 2002

- 5 The filming of *Bend it Like Beckham* was demanding because of the rigorous football training she did. *very extremely every day*

- 6 The success of the film opened the door for her into Hollywood. *quickly*

- 7 After her role in the successful *Pirates of the Caribbean* blockbusters, she found herself part of the Hollywood A-list. *enormously suddenly*

- 8 As well as acting, she models and she was voted the most attractive movie star.
sometimes recently ever

- 9 She lives in London and she watches her favourite football team West Ham United.
currently whenever possible

4 Avverbi: posizione Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa le parole in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 There has been a rapid decrease in unemployment this year. *rapidly*
Unemployment this year.
- 1 I think it will be an easy win for Arsenal tonight. *easily*
I think Arsenal tonight.
- 2 I enjoyed the film a lot. *really*
I the film.
- 3 The party wasn't very good I'm afraid. *much*
I didn't enjoy , I'm afraid.
- 4 Toni hasn't finished his work yet. *still*
Toni doing his work.
- 5 Have you had lunch yet? *already*
Have lunch?
- 6 Juliette left a short time ago. *just*
Juliette left.

T

5 Avverbi: forme e posizione Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Di solito vado a letto intorno alle 11. *I usually go to bed at about 11 o'clock.*
- 1 Siamo andati al cinema ieri sera.
- 2 Hai già pranzato?
- 3 Ho già inviato l'email.
- 4 Non ho molta fame.
- 5 Di solito vado a scuola a piedi.
- 6 Non arrivo mai in ritardo a scuola.
- 7 Parli mai in inglese a casa?
- 8 Abbiamo lezione di inglese due volte alla settimana.

6 Grammatica e lessico: avverbi di frequenza/espressioni di frequenza Abbina l'espressione inglese alla traduzione in italiano. Poi completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa i verbi del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

- | | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------|
| 1 all the time | a assai di rado |
| 2 from time to time | b di tanto in tanto |
| 3 once in a blue moon | c continuamente |

eat go listen play read see visit watch

- 0 *I play computer games* all the time.
1 all the time.
2 from time to time.
3 once in a blue moon.

I met someone who knows you. Here's the book you wanted to borrow.

Una frase relativa determinativa dà informazioni su qualcosa che descrive esattamente la persona o l'oggetto di cui stiamo parlando. La frase relativa viene immediatamente dopo questa persona o oggetto.

Where's the book that you gave me? Dov'è il libro che mi hai dato?

That's the man who helped us. Quello è l'uomo che ci ha aiutato.

A zoologist is someone who studies animals.

Uno zoologo è qualcuno che studia gli animali.

A Pronomi relativi

I pronomi relativi (*who*, *which*, *whose* e *that*) si mettono all'inizio della frase relativa.

i Si usa *who* oppure *that* per le persone e *which* o *that* per oggetti e animali.

That è usato più comunemente in contesti informali, come nell'inglese parlato.

Is that the guy who we met yesterday?

The people that live next door are really friendly.

Where's the DVD which Sue lent me?

What's the name of the film that we saw last week?

ii *Whose* si usa per esprimere un possesso. *Whose* è sempre seguito da un nome.

That's the guy whose house we went to.

B Omissione del pronomo relativo

Si può omettere *who*, *which* o *that* quando la parola che segue è soggetto (*you*, *we*, *I*, *Sue* ecc.). L'omissione di *who*, *which* o *that* è molto comune nell'inglese parlato.

Where's the book that you gave me? o Where's the book you gave me?

Is that the guy who we met yesterday? o Is that the guy we met yesterday?

*That's the man who helped us. (Ma non That's the man helped us poiché la parola che segue *who* non è un soggetto.)*

C Who o whom?

Whom si usa qualche volta come alternativa più formale a *who* a condizione che la parola seguente sia un soggetto.

Where is the person whom (or who) I saw earlier?

D Where e when

Si possono usare gli avverbi *where* e *when* in un modo analogo ai pronomi relativi.

Nota che *when* e *where* non possono essere mai omessi.

This is the church where we got married. This is where we catch the bus.

'The sales' are when shops sell clothes at a reduced price.

Christmas is a time when families get together.

1 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi usando un pronomo relativo. Inizia con le parole date.

0 I met someone last week. She says she knows you.

I met someone last week who says she knows you.

1 This is my friend. I was telling you about him.

This is

2 Have you seen the magazine? It was on the table.

Have you seen?

- 3 Is that the guy? You found his mobile.
Is that ?
- 4 I bought a DVD earlier. It doesn't work.
The DVD
- 5 A guy asked me to dance. He was very nice.
The guy
- 6 I saw a film last night. You'd love it.
You'd love

2 Riscrivi e unisci le due frasi usando *where* o *when*.

- 0 This is the room. We do our exams in here.
This is the room where we do our exams.
- 1 This is the club. I first met Silvia here.
.....
- 2 Here's the hotel. We stayed here last year.
.....
- 3 Your birthday is a special day. Everyone should be nice to you!
.....
- 4 Easter is a festival. At Easter people eat chocolate eggs.
.....

3 Completa le battute di A usando le informazioni del riquadro. Puoi omettere il pronomo relativo quando serve per rendere più naturale la frase.

You ordered it from Amazon. We got married there! You wanted to borrow it.
You borrowed it last week. We went to her party at the weekend. They live near Naples.
It was on the wall in the living room. It was on the table a minute ago.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 0 A Here's the book.
B Which book?
A <u>the book you wanted to borrow.</u> | 4 A Where's the photo gone?
B Which photo?
A |
| 1 A The DVD has arrived.
B Which DVD?
A | 5 A Look. There's the church.
B Which church?
A |
| 2 A Have you seen that pen?
B Which pen?
A | 6 A There's that girl.
B Which girl?
A |
| 3 A Can I have that £20?
B Which £20?
A | 7 A I'm going to visit my cousins.
B Which cousins?
A |

4 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

comfortable complicated cool different fashionable fun genuine
(dis)honest interesting natural sociable trendy have lots of special effects
have a surprise at the end make you think play rock/dance/RnB music

- 0 I like lessons which are interesting and fun.
- 1 I like people
- 2 I prefer clubs
- 3 I wear clothes
- 4 I like films
- 5 I don't like people

I've found the book I was looking for. Who was that guy you were speaking to?

- i Quando un verbo regge una preposizione (*look for, speak to* ecc.) in genere la preposizione si mette alla fine della frase relativa.

Are these the keys that you're looking for? Sono queste le chiavi che stai cercando?

The holiday you were thinking about is too expensive.

La vacanza alla quale stavi pensando è troppo costosa.

The person you spoke to is the manager. La persona alla quale hai parlato è il manager.

- ii In ogni caso, nell'inglese più formale, si può anche mettere la preposizione prima del pronomine relativo *which* e *whom*. La preposizione non si mette prima di *that* e *who*.

The person to whom you spoke is the manager.

La persona con la quale hai parlato è il manager.

There are many things for which I am grateful. Ci sono molte cose per le quali sono grato.

- 1 Jo e Jen stanno commentando alcune foto. Riscrivi ciò che dicono in modo che la frase risulti più naturale. Inizia con le parole date.

0 Jen What are these photos?

Joe It's that party. I went to it last weekend.

That's the party I went to last weekend.

1 Jen You're talking to a girl – who is she?

Who's the girl ?

Joe I used to go to school with her.

She's someone .

2 Jen Who's that with Ellie?

Joe She's going out with that guy at the moment.

That's the guy .

3 Jen Tom's dancing with a girl – who is she?

Who's the girl ?

Joe I told you about that girl. Tom danced with her all night.

That's the girl .

She's the one .

4 Jen And who's the guy in the checked shirt?

Joe Ellie works with him.

He's someone .



2 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi usando una frase relativa e una preposizione alla fine.

- 0 We stayed in a hotel, but I didn't like it.
I didn't like the hotel we stayed in.
- 1 I applied for a job, but I didn't get it.
I didn't get
- 2 We went to a restaurant. I really liked it.
I really liked
- 3 I was telling you about this book. Here it is.
Here's the book
- 4 You were listening to some music. What was it?
What was?
- 5 Paul was talking to some people. Who were they?
Who were?
- 6 You were looking at a magazine. Have you still got it?
Have you still got?

3 Completa le frasi usando le espressioni del riquadro.

for which in which in which with which to whom for whom with whom

- 0 *The Lord of the Rings* is a film in which the special effects are the real stars.
- 1 Smith spent most of his career at Liverpool he played 678 times.
- 2 The thieves stole a car they made their escape.
- 3 There are a number of people I must say a big, big thank you.
- 4 The *Harry Potter* stories are the books JK Rowling is best known.
- 5 She immediately knew he was the man she wanted to spend the rest of her life.
- 6 The fangs contain poison the snake kills its prey.

4 Abbina le frasi dell'Esercizio 3 alla fonte da cui sono tratte.

- a An Oscar acceptance speech
- b A film review
- c A news report
- d A romantic novel
- e A profile of a footballer
- f A nature book
- g An author biography

A Uso e forma

Quando un pronome relativo è seguito dal verbo *be* (*is, was, has been* ecc.), si può in genere omettere *be* e il pronome relativo. Si usa:

- i con forme progressive,
*Jana's the girl **standing** next to the door.* = *Jana's the girl (**who is**) **standing** next to the door.*
- ii con il passivo,
*The money **stolen** in the robbery **was never found**.* = *The money (**which was**) **stolen** in the robbery **was never found**.*
- iii con aggettivi ed espressioni con preposizioni.
*I'd like to speak to the person **in charge**.* = *I'd like to speak to the person (**who is**) **in charge**.*

B Forma -ing

Si può anche usare la forma *-ing* al posto di un pronome relativo + present simple.

*The people **living** next door **are very friendly**.* = *The people **who live** next door **are very friendly**.*
*We stayed in a room **overlooking** the beach.* = *We stayed in a room **which overlooks** the beach.*

C There is/are

Si usano spesso le frasi relative ridotte con *there is/are*.

There are six of us going to the gig.
Saremo in sei ad andare al concerto.
There's a café next door.
C'è un bar qui vicino.

1 Riscrivi le frasi usando le frasi relative ridotte.

- 0 All the people who were injured in the accident have now left hospital.
..... have now left hospital.
- 1 The Canaletto painting which was stolen last week has been found.
..... has been found.
- 2 Bags that are left unattended will be removed.
..... will be removed.
- 3 Students who are going on the school trip need to be at school at 6.30.
..... need to be at school at 6.30.
- 4 Anyone who finishes in the top three gets a medal.
..... gets a medal.
- 5 A bridge which joins the UK and France is going to be built.
..... is going to be built.
- 6 We stayed in a hotel which is right next to the beach.
.....
- 7 Twenty students are taking the IELTS exam.
There are
- 8 A car is parked in front of the gates.
There's

- 2** Alex è un nuovo studente e Bruno gli sta presentando la classe. Completa il dialogo usando i suggerimenti del riquadro e le frasi relative ridotte.



chat / with each other do / his homework listen to / her MP3 player use / the computer
stand next to the door read / the newspaper wear / a baseball cap

Alex Who's the guy ⁰ standing next to the door?

Bruno That's Will.

Alex OK, and who's the girl ¹ ?

Bruno That's Maria.

Alex And the two boys ² ?

Bruno They're Jake and Tim. Tim's the one ³.

Alex And who are the others?

Bruno The girl ⁴ is Tara. And the guy ⁵ is Andy.

Alex And which one is the teacher?

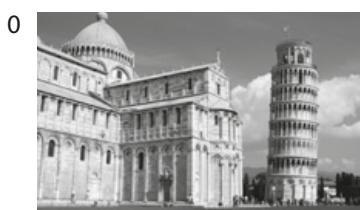
Bruno The teacher's the one ⁶.

- 3** Completa le descrizioni usando le frasi relative ridotte e le frasi del riquadro.

It's in Red Square in Moscow. It stands next to the Yamuna river in Agra, India.

It's high in the Andes. It was discovered in 1908. It overlooks Rio de Janeiro.

She's holding a torch. It stands in New York Harbour. It leans to one side.



0 It's a 12th century bell tower leaning to one side.

1 It's a multi-coloured cathedral.

2 It's a domed tomb.

3 It's a statue of Christ.

4 It's a statue of a woman.

5 It's a ruined city.

A Uso e forma

- i Si usa una frase relativa esplicativa per dare informazioni supplementari, non essenziali, su qualcuno o qualcosa. La frase relativa esplicativa si mette immediatamente dopo la persona o l'oggetto di cui si parla.

He was born in Witney, which is a small town near Oxford.

Redgrave, who won five Olympic gold medals, retired in 2004.

- ii La frase relativa esplicativa si può anche usare per fare commenti sul resto della frase precedente.

I failed the exam, which was a disaster.

Si separa sempre una frase relativa esplicativa dalla frase principale per mezzo di virgolette.

Nota che le frasi relative esplicative sono usate principalmente nello scritto e in altri contesti più formali. Tuttavia, le frasi relative esplicative che commentano tutta la frase sono molto comuni nell'inglese parlato.

B Pronomi relativi

- i I pronomi relativi si usano all'inizio di una frase relativa esplicativa. Si usa *who* per le persone, *which* per oggetti e animali e *whose* per gli oggetti posseduti.

The actor Jim Smith, who won three Oscars, has died.

L'attore Jim Smith, che ha vinto tre Oscar, è morto.

Smith was born in 1932 in Los Angeles, which of course is home to the Oscars.

Smith è nato nel 1932 a Los Angeles, che, naturalmente, è la patria degli Oscar.

Smith, whose career lasted six decades, is best known for ...

Smith, la cui carriera è durata sessanta anni, è noto soprattutto per...

Nota che non si usa mai *that* in una frase relativa esplicativa.

- ii Si possono anche usare le espressioni *where* e *which is where*.

Firbeck, where I grew up, is a small village in the north of England.

We visited Stratford, which is where Shakespeare was born.

C Who oppure whom?

Whom è usato a volte come alternativa più formale a *who* quando la parola che segue è un soggetto.

My brother, whom/who you met last year, is coming to visit.

D Omissione del pronomo relativo

- i Si può a volte omettere *who/which + be* (*is, was* ecc.) da una frase relativa esplicativa.

Moscow, the capital of Russia, is the world's most expensive city. = Moscow, (which is) the capital of Russia, is the world's most expensive city.

- ii Si può usare la forma *-ing* al posto del pronomo relativo quando si indica che qualcosa è il risultato di qualcosa d'altro.

In 2006, a Nebraskan lorry driver won \$235 million on the lottery, making him one of the USA's richest people overnight. = In 2006, a Nebraskan lorry driver won \$235 million on the lottery, which made him one of the USA's richest people overnight.

1 Completa i testi usando le frasi relative esplicative e le informazioni dei riquadri.

Selling over 200 million albums makes him one of the most successful rock musicians ever.

Elton John's real name is Reginald Dwight. Bernie Taupin writes the lyrics for all of Elton's songs. He studied at the Royal Academy of Music as a teenager.

Elton John, ⁰ whose real name is Reginald Dwight , has sold over 200 million albums, ¹ .

Elton ² , is without doubt an excellent musician and singer, but much of his success is due to his song-writing partnership with Bernie Taupin, ³ .

Pluto used to be the smallest planet. Jupiter has a diameter of 143,000 km.

Mercury has a diameter of just 4,900 km.

Jupiter, ⁴ , is the largest planet in the solar system while Mercury, ⁵ , is the smallest. Pluto, ⁶ , was declassified as a planet in 2006.

Winning the World Cup three times is a record that may never be broken.

Pelé's real name is Edson Arantes Do Nascimento.

Pelé has been officially declared the greatest footballer ever. The Brazilian, ⁷ , was born in Tres Coracoes, Brazil, in 1940. He played a total of 1,363 professional games, scored 1,282 goals and was in three World Cup winning teams, ⁸ .

2 Completa le frasi usando le frasi relative esplicative e le espressioni del riquadro.

It's very cheap. It gets on my nerves. It was very kind of her.

It meant I had to get a taxi. It's where I went to school. It's a disaster.

0 Mary offered to help, which was very kind of her.

1 My parents live in Milton Keynes,

2 I failed all my exams,

3 I missed the last bus,

4 My brother's always playing rap music,

5 The meal only cost €20,

3 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te.

0 I was born in Palermo , which is in Sicily.

1 I was born in , which

2 I live in , which

3 My best friend is , who

4 My favourite film is , which

5 My favourite actor is , who

He's in his room listening to music. Before leaving, can you turn off the lights?

A Frasi con forma -ing

Le frasi con forma -ing possono essere usate principalmente in due modi:

- i quando due eventi accadono contemporaneamente,
Danny's in the kitchen making lunch. = Danny's in the kitchen. (He's) making lunch.
I hurt my knee playing basketball. = I hurt my knee (while I was) playing basketball.
- ii dopo avverbi di tempo come *before*, *after*, *since*, *while* e *when*.
I always feel great after going to the gym. = I always feel great after I go to the gym.
Before buying anything, check out the prices on the internet. = Before you buy anything, check out the prices on the internet.

B Frasi con forma -ing e frasi participiali ad inizio del periodo

In qualche caso le espressioni con forma -ing e le frasi participiali si possono mettere all'inizio del periodo in contesti più formali, di norma nello scritto.

- i Le espressioni con forma -ing si possono mettere all'inizio del periodo ed assumono un significato simile a 'poiché'
Needing a break, she went for a walk. = Because she needed a break, she went for a walk.
Not having a map, we got lost. = Because we didn't have a map, we got lost.

Per porre l'enfasi sul fatto che un'azione avviene prima di un'altra, si usa *having* + participio passato.

Having missed the bus, he was late for school.

- ii Si può usare una frase participiale all'inizio di un periodo al posto di una costruzione passiva.
Woken by the explosion, Harry ran out of the house.
Svegliato dall'esplosione, Harry corse fuori dalla casa.
Held every four years, the Olympics are the world's biggest sporting event. Avendo luogo ogni quattro anni, le Olimpiadi sono l'evento sportivo più grande del mondo.

1 Completa i testi usando i suggerimenti dei riquadri. Usa la forma -ing dei verbi.

Before They Were Famous

while / spend before / become after / appear

Tom Cruise became a Hollywood A-list star almost overnight ⁰ *after appearing*

in the film *Top Gun* in 1986. Known today for his support for the Church of Scientology as much as for his acting, Cruise has always been spiritually-inclined; in fact

¹ an actor, he had contemplated becoming
 a priest ² a year studying theology.

before / become while / film

³ two of the biggest names in Hollywood, **Brad Pitt** was a van driver and **Jennifer Aniston**, just like her character in the hit TV show *Friends*, was a waitress. They first met each other ⁴ an episode of *Friends* in which Pitt made a guest appearance. They got married in 2000, but broke up only 4 years later.

move after / quit while / work while / perform

5 as a schoolteacher in the north of England in the mid-1970s, **Gordon Sumner** decided to follow his dream of becoming a professional musician.

6 his job and ⁷ to London, he formed the rock band *The Police*. He became known as '**Sting**' as he regularly wore a bee-like black and yellow shirt ⁸ on stage.

2 Completa le risposte in modo che includano una frase con la forma *-ing*. Usa le espressioni dei riquadri.

in his bedroom in the kitchen in the living room fall asleep

do his homework make coffee watch TV watch TV



0 Where are Kath and Fiona?

They're in the living room watching TV.



2 Where's Barry?

3 Where's Julie?

No,



1 Where's Julie?

3 Did you go out last night?

No,

3 Riscrivi i periodi in modo che inizino con una frase introdotta dalla forma *-ing* o da una frase participiale.

0 Because we don't know the area, we got lost.

Not knowing the area, we got lost.

1 Because you're an EU citizen, you don't need a visa for Italy.

....., you don't need a visa for Italy.

2 We had finished our work, so we were allowed to leave early.

....., we were allowed to leave early.

3 I haven't met her before, so I don't know what she's like.

....., I don't know what she's like.

4 She was feeling tired, so she went to bed.

....., she went to bed.

5 We were woken by a noise, so we ran outside to see what had happened.

....., we ran outside to see what had happened.

6 Amsterdam is known as Venice of the North, and is built on a network of canals.

....., Amsterdam is built on a network of canals.

....., Amsterdam is known as Venice of the North.

FCE 1 Pronomi relativi Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

Who is the greatest ever sportsman or woman?

Post your suggestions below:

Posted by Jim, UK:

The greatest sportsmen or women are those 0 ^B dominate their sport for the longest. Tennis player Martina Navratilova, ¹ won Wimbledon nine times in 12 years, and cyclist Lance Armstrong, seven-times winner of the Tour de France, are both contenders. But the greatest sportsperson ² the world has ever seen is rower Steve Redgrave, ³ won five gold medals in successive Olympics and ⁴ record will never be repeated.

Posted by Jean, Italy:

It's not about winning medals, ⁵ simply depends on how you perform on the day, it's about impact. And the sportsman ⁶ has had the greatest global impact ever is Pelé, the greatest player of the world's greatest game.

Posted by Ulrich, Germany:

In my opinion, it's impossible to choose the greatest sportsman or woman ever. It is impossible to compare athletes competing in different sports ⁷ require totally different skills.

Posted by Barry, Liverpool, UK:

My choice is not an individual, but a team of individuals. The greatest sportsmen of all time are the Liverpool 2005 European Cup final team, ⁸ determination to win when they were losing 3–0 is an inspiration to everyone. It was the greatest team performance ⁹ you will ever see.

Posted by Sam, New York:

The moments ¹⁰ something 'out-of-this-world' happens are the greatest moments in sport. The 100 metres final in the 2008 Olympic Games, ¹¹ Usain Bolt ran 9.69 seconds, is the most 'out-of-this-world' moment of them all, ¹² makes him the greatest sportsman ever.

- | | | | |
|------------|---------|---------|---------|
| 0 A which | B who | C – | D whose |
| 1 A who | B which | C that | D whose |
| 2 A which | B whose | C – | D where |
| 3 A that | B which | C who | D – |
| 4 A which | B who | C that | D whose |
| 5 A who | B – | C which | D that |
| 6 A that | B which | C – | D when |
| 7 A – | B where | C who | D that |
| 8 A who | B whose | C which | D that |
| 9 A who | B – | C when | D where |
| 10 A who | B which | C when | D whose |
| 11 A which | B where | C that | D – |
| 12 A whose | B which | C who | D when |

2 Frasi relative determinative ed esplicative Unisci le frasi sulla Virgin Galactic in modo che diventino una sola. Usa le frasi relative determinative o esplicative.

- 0 The Virgin Galactic spaceship was financed by Paul Allen. He was one of the founders of Microsoft.
The Virgin Galactic spaceship was financed by Paul Allen, who was one of the founders of Microsoft.
- 1 During take-off you listen to David Bowie's hit Space Oddity. It was originally recorded in 1969 at the time of the first moon landing.
During take-off you listen to at the time of the first moon landing.
- 2 Once in space, you will have a 360° view of the stars. They will be clearer and brighter than you have ever seen them.
Once in space, you will have than you have ever seen them.
- 3 The highlight of the trip is the three minutes of weightlessness. You will experience this when you are in true space.
The highlight of the trip is when you are in true space.
- 4 There are two astronaut pilots. They will be happy to answer all your questions.
There are two all your questions.
- 5 You will have a unique experience. This experience is literally out of this world.
You will have out of this world.
- 6 Each trip costs over £100,000. It lasts three hours.
Each trip over £100,000.

3 In quali frasi dell'Esercizio 2 si può omettere il pronome relativo?

4 Frasi relative determinative Riferisci le notizie riportate nei titoli del giornale usando una frase relativa.

0 **MISSING CHILD FOUND**

The child who was missing has been found.

1 **Escaped alligator recaptured**

..... has been recaptured.

2 **Stolen van Gogh painting found**

..... has been found.

3 **€100m LOTTERY WINNER TO GIVE €99m TO CHARITY**

The person is going to give €99m to charity.

4 **CD inventor dies**

The person has died.

- 5 Frasi relative ridotte** Trasforma le frasi relative in neretto in frasi relative ridotte. Usa la forma *-ing* o il participio passato.

News in brief

According to a survey, women ⁰**who steal** stealing chips from their husband or boyfriend's plate is the most common cause of arguments between couples ⁰**who are eating out** eating out.

Three university students have been evicted from their house after the people ¹**who live** next door complained that they made too much noise while watching football on TV.

A man ²**who pretended** to be a police officer to get into a football match for free was arrested after other police officers ³**who were watching** the match noticed that his hat was made of plastic. He had bought it in a fancy-dress shop.

A British woman ⁴**who has been obsessed** with Dracula since she was a child has started a company ⁵**which imports** coffins from Transylvania.

A painting ⁶**which was 'stolen'** from a London museum ten years ago has been found in the museum store room only a few metres away. The painting, ⁷**which is valued** at £5 million, was found by builders during renovation work. A security guard ⁸**who was working** at the museum at the time has been arrested.

- 6 Frasi con forma *-ing* o frasi participiali** Scrivi le risposte usando la forma *-ing* e i suggerimenti dati.

- 0 Where's Giuseppe? in his bedroom / do his homework
He's in his bedroom doing his homework.
- 1 What happened to you? break my arm / ski
- 2 Where's Bruno? outside / fix his scooter
- 3 Which one is Daniela? next to the door / wear a blue dress
- 4 What's Elena doing? on the phone / talk to her mum
- 5 Do you know where David is? see him five minutes ago / walk towards the library

- 7 Frasi con forma *-ing*** Scrivi che cosa stanno facendo in questo momento tre persone che conosci. Usa la forma *-ing* come nell'esempio.

- 0 My brother is in his bedroom watching TV.
1 _____
2 _____
3 _____

8 Frasi relative Traduci le frasi e le domande.

- 0 Ieri ho incontrato qualcuno che ti conosce.
Yesterday, I met someone who knows you.
- 1 Quella è la ragazza alla cui festa siamo andati.
- 2 Qual è il nome del caffè al quale sei andato?
- 3 Ecco il DVD che volevi.
- 4 La pizza costava €10, il che è piuttosto economico.
- 5 Carlo è nella sua stanza ad ascoltare musica.
- 6 Chi erano le persone con cui stavi parlando questa mattina?

9 Grammatica e lessico: *It's someone who ... (atteggiamenti ed opinioni)* Rispondi alle domande usando *It's someone who ...* e i suggerimenti dati.

He/She doesn't believe in God. He/She looks at life in a positive way.

He/She looks at life in a negative way. He/She wants to do everything as well as possible.

He/She doesn't eat any animal products. He/She loves their country.

- 0 What's an optimist? It's someone who looks at life in a positive way.
- 1 What's a pessimist?
- 2 What's an atheist?
- 3 What's a vegan?
- 4 What's a patriot?
- 5 What's a perfectionist?

10 Grammatica e lessico: *It's something (that) ... (attrezzi)* Rispondi alle domande usando le espressioni del riquadro. Inizia con *It's something (that) ...*.

you cut wood with it you knock nails into wood with it you keep tools in it

you make holes with it ~~you tighten bolts with it~~ you tighten screws with it

- 0 What's a spanner? It's something you tighten bolts with. 
- 1 What's a hammer? 
- 2 What's a saw? 
- 3 What's a drill? 
- 4 What's a screwdriver? 
- 5 What's a toolbox? 

A Uso e forma

Le più comuni ‘espressioni di sequenza’ sono *first* (prima), *then* (poi), *next* (dopo), *finally* (infine) e *after/before that* (dopo/prima che).

- i** Quando si ‘elencano’ gli eventi, queste espressioni di sequenza si mettono all’inizio della frase.

First, we have geography, next it's history and finally it's maths.

Turn left at the crossroads, after that turn right and then take the second right.

- ii** Si può a volte mettere *first*, *then*, *next* e *finally* prima del verbo (ma dopo il verbo *be*).

After/Before that non vanno normalmente in questa posizione.

I get up at 7.30. I first get dressed and I then have breakfast. I am then ready to leave for school.

- iii** Si possono anche mettere le espressioni di sequenza alla fine della frase, specie in contesti più informali. *Then* generalmente non si mette al termine della frase.

We're going for a pizza, but I need to get some money first.

I can't decide which book to read next.

Nota che la parola che indica sequenza normalmente va posta alla fine delle domande.
What did you do next?

B Before, after, while e when

Si usa *before* (prima), *after* (dopo), *while* (mentre) e *when* (quando) con soggetto + verbo. *After* e *before* si possono usare anche con un nome.

Before you leave, can you turn off the lights?

Let's get a coffee while we're waiting. We're going to the beach after school.

► **Vedi unità 161 per before, after, while e when + -ing.**

C Beforehand e afterwards

Beforehand (prima/all’inizio) e *afterwards* (in seguito) si usano all’inizio o alla fine di una frase.

The film starts at 7.30, so let's go for a pizza beforehand.

First we went shopping and afterwards we went for a coffee.

D Firstly, secondly, lastly

Si usano in genere *firstly*, *secondly* ecc. (prima/all’inizio, in un secondo momento) e *lastly* (infine) in contesti piuttosto formali come ad esempio la presentazione di una relazione o di un rapporto. Si mettono in genere all’inizio della frase.

Firstly, I'd like to tell you a little bit about myself.

E At first, in the end

Si usa *at first* (all’inizio) e *in the end* (alla fine) per parlare di un atteggiamento o di una situazione all’inizio o alla fine di qualcosa. Queste espressioni si mettono all’inizio o alla fine della frase.

At first, I didn't understand, but it became clear in the end.

I didn't understand at first, but in the end it became clear.

1 Completa le istruzioni usando le parole dei riquadri.

finally first then

Making a cup of tea

- 0 First ..., boil the kettle and put a teabag into a cup.¹ ... pour the boiling water into the cup.
2 ..., add milk and sugar if required.

after that first while

At the airport

At the airport you³ check in your bags.⁴, you go through passport control and into the departure lounge to wait for your flight to depart.⁵ you are waiting, you may want to do some duty-free shopping or read a book.

after that finally first then

Sending an email

- 6 , you need to open Outlook Express. You⁷ click 'Create Mail' and write your email.
8 , you write the 'Subject' of the email and enter the address of the person you are sending it to.
9 , you click 'Send'.

before next when

Buying on eBay

10 you bid for an item, you need to sign in.¹¹ you have selected the item you want to buy, click 'Place Bid' and enter the amount you want to pay.¹² , wait until the auction ends to see if you are the winner.

2 Riscrivi le frasi inserendo le parole in corsivo nella posizione corretta. In alcuni casi è possibile più di una soluzione.

0 I'm going to do my homework and I'm going to watch TV. *after that*
I'm going to do my homework and after that I'm going to watch TV.

1 Go past the shops and take the second left. *then*

2 Which bar shall we go to? *next*

3 So you moved to Rome last year. Where did you live? *before that*

4 Close the program and shut down the computer. *first, then*

5 We got lost, but we found the house. *at first, in the end*

3 Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

0 I'm meeting Alice before/beforehand the exam tomorrow and then I'm playing tennis with Vanessa after/afterwards.

- 1 The film starts at 8.30, so let's go for a pizza before/beforehand.
- 2 The film finishes at 10.30. What shall we do after/afterwards?
- 3 We've got a school council meeting after/afterwards lunch this afternoon.
- 4 I'm going away at the weekend, so let's either meet up before/beforehand, say on Thursday, or after/afterwards I get back on Monday.

A Uso e forma

i Le parole 'per l'addizione' usate più frequentemente sono *and* (e), *as well*, *too* e *also* (anche, anche e pure). *Too* e *as well* sono normalmente usate in contesti più formali e nel parlato.

Too e *as well* vanno dopo l'informazione supplementare.

I mostly listen to rock music. But I like jazz too.

Susie speaks French and she can speak some Italian as well.

ii *Also* per lo più va inserito prima dell'informazione supplementare.

Va messo prima del verbo principale o dopo *be*.

I mostly listen to rock music. But I also like jazz.

Susie speaks French and she can also speak some Italian.

Andy's brilliant at tennis. He's also quite good at golf.

In ogni caso, *also* può anche andare all'inizio della seconda frase. Molto raramente, può anche trovarsi alla fine di essa.

Can you email Tom? Also, will you phone Sarah?

Can you email Tom? Will you phone Sarah also?

B As well as

As well as (oltre a) si usa con un nome.

As well as the guitar and the piano, he also plays the drums.

You're having pizza as well as pasta!

C Parole 'di addizione' più formali

In contesti più formali, specie nello scritto, si possono usare *in addition*/ *additionally* (oltre a/inoltre), *moreover* (inoltre) e *furthermore* (inoltre/in aggiunta/per di più). Queste espressioni vanno prima di ciò che viene aggiunto.

The tickets are €45 and in addition, there is a €10 service charge.

It's not a good idea. And furthermore, it is actually illegal.

D On top of that

Si può usare *on top of that* (per giunta) in contesti formali e informali per aggiungere un senso enfatico. È usato spesso per lamentarsi di qualcosa.

The hotel room was dirty and cold. And on top of that, the shower didn't work.

E Besides

Si usa *besides* (d'altronde, inoltre) per 'dare spessore' a ciò che si è detto.

I don't want to go for a walk and, besides, it's raining.

I won't phone him. And besides, he never answers the phone.

1 Riscrivi le frasi usando le parole in corsivo.

0 She speaks French. And she can speak a little Spanish. *also*

She speaks French. And she can also speak a little Spanish.

1 Jenny's going to the party. And I think Chiara's going. *too*

Jenny's going to the party.

2 I know you play football. Do you play rugby? *as well*

I know you play football.

- 3 Are you going for a coffee? Can I come? *too*
Are you going for a coffee?
- 4 He's good looking. He's very rich! *also*
He's good looking.
- 5 He's got a car and a scooter. *as well as*
He's got a car
- 6 You said you like The Beatles. Do you like The Rolling Stones? *also*
You said you like The Beatles.

2 Completa le frasi usando *And besides* ... e le espressioni del riquadro.

there's something I want to watch on TV he never checks his emails
it's freezing I can't afford a taxi

- 0 I don't want to go to the beach. *And besides, it's freezing.*
- 1 I don't want to email him.
- 2 I'd rather walk than get a taxi.
- 3 I don't fancy going out tonight.

3 Completa la lettera usando le parole del riquadro.

also as well as furthermore in addition on top of that

Dear Head Teacher,

I am writing to complain about the behaviour of your students. I live in an apartment opposite your school and I am disturbed by the noise the students make every time they have a break from lessons.
⁰ Furthermore , the language they use and the things they talk about are quite unacceptable.
¹ , they ignore me when I ask them to be quiet.
² the noise and language, the students look like they are dressed to go to a party. All students should wear a uniform. ³ , holding hands and kissing should not be allowed at school.
I am ⁴ disappointed by the attitude of your teachers, who allow this to happen.
Please control your students, and teachers, from now on or I shall take my complaint to the police.
Yours faithfully,
A Codger

4 Dai risposte vere per te. Usa ogni parola del riquadro almeno una volta.

also as well too

- 0 What's your favourite colour?
I like blue and I also like purple.
- 1 Who's your favourite film star?
I like and I
- 2 What languages do you speak?
I speak and I
- 3 What kind of music do you listen to?
I mostly listen to and I
- 4 What did you do last weekend?
I and I
- 5 What are your hobbies?
I and I

*I phoned her, **but** there was no answer. It was a great idea. **However**, it didn't work.*

Le espressioni più usate per esprimere contrasto sono:

A **But**

But (ma) è il modo più comune per indicare contrasto. Va tra le idee che si pongono in contrasto. Può essere usato per continuare la frase, normalmente dopo una virgola, o può iniziare una seconda frase.

*We wanted to play tennis, **but** it was raining. It rained heavily. **But** it soon stopped.*

B **Though**

Though (però) è comune nell'inglese parlato, va in genere messo dopo la seconda idea che si esprime.

*We wanted to play tennis. It was raining **though**.*

C **However**

However (comunque) viene usato normalmente in contesti piuttosto formali.

Va all'inizio, a metà o alla fine della seconda frase.

*Sydney is the biggest city in Australia. **However**, it isn't the capital.*

*Sydney is the biggest city in Australia. It isn't the capital **however**.*

*Sydney is the biggest city in Australia. It isn't, **however**, the capital.*

Si può anche usare *nevertheless* (nondimeno) in maniera simile.

*It rained every day on holiday. **Nevertheless**, we had a good time.*

D **Yet**

Yet (tuttavia) si usa di norma in contesti piuttosto formali. Pone l'enfasi su qualcosa che è sorprendente o inaspettato. Va inserito tra le idee che pone in contrasto.

*He's a teacher, **yet** he drives a Ferrari.*

E **Whereas**

Whereas (mentre) è usato normalmente in contesti piuttosto formali.

Pone in contrasto idee senza contraddirle. Va messo all'inizio della frase o tra le idee che pone a contrasto.

*I have flexible working hours, **whereas** most people work 9 to 5.*

Si può usare *while* (anche) in modo simile.

While most people work 9 to 5, I have flexible working hours.

F **Despite, although ecc.**

Si usa *despite* (malgrado, a dispetto di, nonostante), *in spite of* (malgrado, a dispetto di, nonostante), *although* (benché) e *even though* (anche se) all'inizio della frase oppure tra le idee che pongono in contrasto.

i Si usa *despite/in spite of* con -ing oppure con un nome.

Despite being injured, Smith won the bronze medal.

*They played tennis **in spite of** the rain.*

ii Si usano *although/even though* con soggetto + verbo.

*They played tennis **even though** it was raining.*

1 Completa le frasi in due modi diversi per esprimere contrasto. Usa *but* o *though* e le espressioni del riquadro.

I can't go. *I couldn't find them.* I'm not very good. I've never won anything.

- 0 I looked everywhere for your keys. *But I couldn't find them.*
I looked everywhere for your keys. *I couldn't find them though.*
- 1 I love playing the guitar.
I love playing the guitar.
- 2 I buy a lottery ticket every week.
I buy a lottery ticket every week.
- 3 Petra's having a party on Friday.
Petra's having a party on Friday.

2 Completa le informazioni usando le parole in corsivo e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

Nine out of ten people hit at 20mph will survive. It uses 25% of the world's electricity.

It won only one. In most other European countries it's coffee. This afternoon there will be some rain.

- 0 The USA has 5% of the world's population. *However, it uses 25% of the world's electricity.* *however*
- 1 Tea is the most popular drink in the UK, *whereas*
- 2 The film was nominated for six Oscars, *yet*
- 3 This morning will be warm and sunny. *however*
- 4 Nine out of ten people hit by a car at 40mph will die, *whereas*

3 Completa le notizie giornalistiche usando *despite* o *even though*.

- 0 It was a tiring game, and *even though* Jones played well, he finally lost 3–6, 7–5, 6–4.
- 1 *winning a jackpot of €25m*, Mrs Evans says she will be back at work in her local supermarket on Monday morning.
- 2 *it measured 8.9 on the Richter Scale*, the earthquake did very little damage to buildings.
- 3 In the 2005 Champions League final, Liverpool beat AC Milan, *being 3–0 down at half-time.*
- 4 The concert was sold out, *the high prices.*

4 Leggi i risultati dell'inchiesta su alcune differenze tra uomini e donne e completali con *however*, *yet*, *whereas* o *despite*.

- 0 Teenage boys generally have a lot of friends, *whereas* teenage girls have fewer, but closer friends.
- 1 Fewer teenagers are starting to smoke nowadays. *the number of teenage girls starting to smoke is increasing.*
- 2 *girls generally talk more than boys when they are young*, by their teenage years there is no significant difference.
- 3 *making fewer motor insurance claims than men*, women have three times as many minor collisions.
- 4 As many teenage girls as boys own a computer, *teenage boys spend twice as much time surfing the internet.*
- 5 American women eat around 100 burgers a year, *American men eat about 300.*
- 6 The average weight of a man's brain is 1kg. A woman's brain, *weighs only 0.7kg on average.*

Per esprimere finalità, cause e conseguenze si possono usare numerose parole ed espressioni. Tra le più comuni troviamo:

A Modi per esprimere finalità

i Infinito e *in order to*

Per esprimere finalità si può usare l'infinito. In contesti più formali, si può usare *in order to* (per/in modo da/al fine di).

I'm going to the shop to get some bread.

We left early in order to miss the rush-hour.

► **Vedi unità 85 per altri modi di usare l'infinito per esprimere finalità.**

ii For

For (a/per) si usa con un nome. Si può usare la costruzione *for + -ing* per dire a cosa serve qualcosa.

I'm going to the shop for some bread.

You use a corkscrew for opening a bottle of wine.

Nota che *for + -ing* non si usa per parlare di un'azione specifica. Non si usa nemmeno *for + infinito*.

I'm going to the shop for getting some bread.

I'm going to the shop for get some bread.

I'm going to the shop for to get some bread.

iii So (that)

Si può usare *so* (così) oppure *so that* (in modo che/così che).

Take your mobile so I can phone you.

Use the sat nav so that you don't get lost.

iv In case

Si usa *in case* (in caso) per parlare di possibilità.

Take the sat nav in case you get lost.

B Modi per esprimere cause

i Because (of), as/since

Because (perché) è il modo più comune per esprimere il motivo per cui fare qualcosa.

Si usa *because of + nome*. Si può usare anche *as* (poiché, siccome) e *since* (poiché, siccome, dal momento che).

We went inside because it started raining.

We went inside because of the rain.

ii Due to, owing to, as a result of

Due to (a causa di), *owing to* (a motivo di) e *as a result of* (in conseguenza di) sono usati di norma solo in contesti più formali.

Due to the weather, all fights have been cancelled.

C Modi per esprimere le conseguenze

i So

Si può usare *so* (così) per esprimere conseguenze. Nota che le frasi sono separate da una virgola.

It started raining, so we went inside.

Nota che non si usa *so that* per esprimere conseguenza.

It was late, so we went to bed. Non *It was late, so that we went to bed.*

ii Therefore, consequently, as a result/consequence

Therefore (perciò), *consequently* (quindi), *as a result* (pertanto) e *as a consequence* (di conseguenza) sono generalmente usati in contesti più formali.

The pitch is icy. Therefore, the game is cancelled.

He failed two exams and as a result he was not accepted at university.

iii In that case e then

Si usa *in that case* (in tal caso) e *then* (allora) in contesti più informali e nel parlato. *In that case* può essere messo all'inizio o alla fine della frase, mentre *then* va di solito alla fine.

The train is delayed. ~ In that case, let's go for a coffee.

Isn't there any milk? I'll get some then.

1 Completa le frasi usando *to, for, so (that), in case o because* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

he can join a band get some milk check my emails
a coffee I missed the bus you don't get cold it rains

- 0 He's going to the supermarket to get some milk.
- 1 He's learning the guitar
- 2 We're going to Luigi's Café
- 3 Can I use your computer ?
- 4 I was late
- 5 Take a warm coat
- 6 Take an umbrella

2 Completa le battute di B usando i suggerimenti del riquadro e le parole in corsivo.

I'll see you the day after I'll have tea you want to borrow some, do you?
we'll have to walk we had to stop playing we're going for a pizza

- 0 A Who won the tennis?
B It started raining, so we had to stop playing. *so*
- 1 A There's no coffee.
B *then*
- 2 A Where are you going?
B We're hungry, *so*
- 3 A We've missed the last bus.
B *in that case*
- 4 A I'm not in school tomorrow.
B OK. *then*
- 5 A I've got no money.
B *so*

3 Completa i brani usando le parole dei riquadri.

KEY MOMENTS

in order to owing to so

As a single mother in the mid-1990s, JK Rowling couldn't afford to heat her home,
⁰ so she used to go to a nearby café ¹ keep warm. It was here that she started to write her first Harry Potter book and ² the huge success of the Harry Potter series, she is now one of the richest women in the world.

as a result so that therefore

Bill Gates didn't enjoy studying law at Harvard. He ³ decided to quit university ⁴ he could devote all his time to his software company. ⁵ , he went on to become a billionaire by the time he was 30.

because consequently as a result of

In 1988, Ben Johnson won the Olympic 100m gold medal. A failed drug test, however, showed that he had achieved his world record time not ⁶ super-human effort, but ⁷ he had been taking anabolic steroids. ⁸ , he lost the gold medal and was banned from taking part in athletics competitions for life.

1 **Sequenza** Completa il testo scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

MAN TURNS PAPER CLIP INTO HOUSE

In 2005, Canadian Kyle MacDonald set up a website and offered a red paperclip to be exchanged for something bigger and better.⁰ *Then / After / Afterwards* exactly one year and 14 exchanges he had traded the paperclip for a house.

¹ *At first / First / Firstly*, on 14th July 2005, he exchanged the paperclip for a fish-shaped pen. He ² *after / after that / then* exchanged the pen for a doorknob.

³ *Next / After / Afterwards*, came a camping stove and ⁴ *after / afterwards / while* four further exchanges, he had a snowmobile. ⁵ *When / After / After that*, his exchanges got more substantial, and included a van, an afternoon with rock star Alice Cooper and a role in a Hollywood movie. ⁶ *Finally / In the end / After*, he traded the movie role for a house in the town of Kipling in Saskatchewan province, Canada.

⁷ *First / At first / Firstly*, I thought it was impossible, MacDonald said, ‘But as time went on, I began to think it was actually possible, especially ⁸ *while / afterwards / after* all the media interest. It was a lot of effort, but ⁹ *after / then / in the end* it was worth it.’

¹⁰ *Before / Beforehand / At first* he began his red paperclip mission, MacDonald delivered pizzas for a living. But ¹¹ *after / afterwards / next*, he for a short time became a minor celebrity and best-selling author of the book One Red Paperclip.

FCE 2 **Addizione** Riscrivi le parole in corsivo nello spazio corretto.

- 0 A Are you going to the beach this afternoon?
B Yes. Larissa's coming as well.... as well
- 1 A Are you going to the cinema tonight?
B Yes. And we're going for a pizza too
- 2 A It's going to be cold this weekend.
B Yes. I think it's going to snow as well
- 3 A I'll email the party photos to Simona.
B OK. Can you email them to Joanna? also
- 4 A You're having tiramisu ice cream ? as well as
B Yes. I'm hungry!
- 5 A Do you speak any foreign languages?
B Yes, French and Italian. And I can speak a little German..... too
- 6 A How much were the tickets?
B €25. But there is a €5 booking fee. also
- 7 A I understand you are not happy with the service.
B No, we're not. We waited over an hour for our food, it was cold when it finally arrived and it wasn't what we ordered moreover
- 8 A How was your flight?
B Terrible. It was delayed by 2 hours, the food was disgusting and they lost our luggage on top of that

3 Contrasto Completa le frasi su alcuni personaggi famosi usando le parole del riquadro.

despite even though however whereas yet yet

Famous eccentrics

0 John Paul Getty was a multi-billionaire and one of the richest men in the world, yet he always asked visitors to use a pay-phone in his entrance hall.

1 Albert Einstein couldn't read or write until he was eight years old he went on to become the greatest scientist of the 20th century.

2 In 1952, Albert Einstein was offered the presidency of Israel. He turned it down,

3 Rock star David Bowie created some of the most colourful personas in popular music being colourblind since a childhood accident.

4 American businessman HL Hunt had a \$700 million fortune, he regularly used to steal his secretary's lunch.

5 most musicians want to become rich and famous, Nirvana front man Kurt Cobain hated this invasion of his privacy and he committed suicide aged 29.

FCE 4 Finalità, causa e conseguenza Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi.

Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

0 I'm going to the shop to get some milk. *for*
I'm going to the shop for some milk.

1 We abandoned the picnic because it started raining. *so*
It started raining the picnic.

2 Take your phone because I might need to phone you. *in case*
Take your phone phone you.

3 Sam went through a red light and failed his driving test. *because*
Sam failed his driving test a red light.

4 Give me your email address and then I can send you the photos. *so*
Give me your email address you the photos.

5 The game was cancelled because of the bad weather. *due*
The game the bad weather.

6 Because he was late for his interview, he didn't get the job. *result*
He was late for his interview and get the job.

7 Fog caused the flight to be delayed. *because*
The flight was fog.

8 We took a map because we didn't want to get lost. *so*
We took a map lost.

5 **Coesione: varie forme** Leggi il testo e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

EVERYDAY INVENTIONS
THIS WEEK
The light bulb

Contrary to popular belief, Thomas Edison didn't actually invent the light bulb. He did, ⁰ B, improve upon an existing idea. In the late 1800s, electric lighting was not new, ¹ up to that time the light lasted only a few minutes. It was ² dangerous. ³, in 1879 Edison produced a light bulb which burned for over ten hours. ⁴, Edison's invention was safe enough for use in the home. ⁵ the success of his electric light, Edison was able to start various electric companies. ⁶ the companies were all very successful, ⁷ in 1889, ⁸ competition from other companies, they were combined to form 'Edison General Electric'. ⁹ the use of 'Edison' in the company title, he never controlled this company and in 1892, 'Edison' was dropped from the name. The company became simply General Electric, which today remains one of the biggest companies in the world.

- | | | | |
|-----------------|---------------|---------------|---------------|
| 0 A whereas | B however | C but | D even though |
| 1 A despite | B even though | C whereas | D but |
| 2 A as well | B as well as | C too | D also |
| 3 A Although | B Despite | C Whereas | D However |
| 4 A As well | B Too | C In addition | D As well as |
| 5 A Owing to | B Because | C For | D So that |
| 6 A First | B Firstly | C At first | D Then |
| 7 A but | B however | C next | D afterwards |
| 8 A because | B so | C due to | D in order to |
| 9 A Even though | B Despite | C Though | D Whereas |

T

6 **Coesione: varie forme** Traduci le frasi.

- 0 Ero stanco, così sono andato a letto.
I was tired, so I went to bed.
- 1 Per prima cosa abbiamo matematica, poi biologia, dopodiché inglese.
- 2 All'inizio il libro non mi piaceva, ma alla fine l'ho adorato.
- 3 Suona sia la chitarra che il pianoforte.
- 4 Parlo spagnolo e anche un po' di francese.
- 5 Andammo a fare una passeggiata nonostante la pioggia.
- 6 Andammo a fare una passeggiata nonostante stesse piovendo.
- 7 Era una giornata piacevole, così andammo in spiaggia.
- 8 Sto facendo i compiti ora, così posso uscire più tardi.

- 7 Grammatica e lessico: parole di sequenza (preparazione del cibo)** Le figure 0–8 mostrano le diverse fasi di realizzazione di un primo piatto. Abbina le figure ai verbi del riquadro.

add beat boil cut fry grate mix pour slice



- 8 Grammatica e lessico: parole di sequenza (preparazione del cibo)** Completa la ricetta scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

HOW TO MAKE TORTILLA

⁰ At first First, ¹beat / cut the potatoes into small pieces and ²pour / boil them for about fifteen minutes. ³While / Then the potatoes are boiling, ⁴beat / slice the onion, pepper and mushrooms and ⁵boil / fry them in olive oil. ⁶Next / After, ⁷beat / grate the eggs in a bowl and ⁸then / after add the boiled potatoes, onion, pepper, mushrooms and herbs. ⁹Mix / Pour the ingredients together. ¹⁰While / Next, ¹¹cut / grate some cheese into the mixture. ¹²After that / After, ¹³pour / slice the mixture into a frying pan and cook for about ten minutes. The tortilla is ¹⁴after / then ready to serve.

I didn't go out because I didn't want to. Is it going to rain? ~ I think so.

Per evitare di ripetere alcune parole è possibile anche ometterle o sostituirle con altre parole.

A Ellissi

L'ellissi avviene quando si omettono alcune parole. È molto comune con i verbi, i nomi e i pronomi. È spesso usata con connettivi come *and*, *but* e *because*.

I enjoyed it, but Andy didn't enjoy it.

I didn't go out because I didn't want to go out.

I haven't got a car, but my brother has got a car.

I can't ski, but my sister can ski.

I've got 30 euros and Erin's got 15 euros.

The apples look nice. Shall we buy some apples?

She came to the party, but she left the party

after ten minutes.

B Sostituzione

Si ha sostituzione quando si sostituiscono delle parole con un'altra parola o parole.

Si usa una forma di *do*, *so* oppure *one/ones*.

i È possibile sostituire un'espressione verbale con una forma di *do*.

I don't like opera, but my parents do.

(*do = like opera*)

I didn't pass the exam. Ben did though.

(*did = passed the exam*)

ii So si usa per sostituire un'espressione verbale dopo verbi come *think* (pensare), *expect* (aspettarsi), *suppose* (supporre) e *hope* (sperare).

Are you going to the party? ~ I hope so.

(*so = I'm going to the party*.)

Is the train delayed? ~ I don't think so.

(*so = the train is delayed*.)

Nota che la forma negativa di *hope* è *hope not* non *I don't hope so*.

Nota inoltre che non si dice *I hope yes*. *I think yes*. *I think no*. ecc.

Si può inoltre usare *so* dopo una forma di *do*. Questo avviene per lo più in contesti piuttosto formali e solo per azioni volontarie o deliberate. In contesti più informali, si usa *it*.

He said he'd email me, but he hasn't done so yet. He said he'd email me, but he hasn't done it yet.

iii Si può usare *one* o *ones* per sostituire i nomi numerabili quando ci si riferisce a 'uno fra tanti'.

I'm going to get a coffee. Would you like one? (*one = a coffee*)

Can you pass me my shoes? The black ones. (*ones = shoes*)

Nota che si usa *some* o *any* per i nomi non numerabili.

She offered me some coffee, but I didn't want any. (*any = coffee*)

There's no milk. I'll get some. (*some = milk*)

I pronomi (*she, it, his, them, mine, those* ecc.) si usano per sostituire i nomi quando ci si riferisce a qualcosa di specifico.

I saw Jenny. She was in the bank.

(*she = Jenny*)

I've lost my shoes. Have you seen them?

(*them = my shoes*)

► Vedi unità 122 per altri usi dei pronomi e unità 124 per altri usi di *one/ones*.

1 Quali parole sono state omesse nella seconda parte di queste frasi?

- 0 I want to go out tonight, but I can't. *go out tonight.*
- 1 I've never been to the USA, but I'd like to. *the USA*
- 2 My brother's got a scooter, but I haven't. *My brother's got a scooter*
- 3 Simone came to school this morning and then went home. *Simone came to school this morning and then went home*
- 4 My friends went to the beach yesterday, but I didn't. *My friends went to the beach yesterday*
- 5 I'd love to come to the cinema with you, but I can't. *I'd love to come to the cinema with you*
- 6 This one's ten euros and that one's eight. *This one's ten euros and that one's eight*
- 7 I'm going to get a new mobile, but not yet. *I'm going to get a new mobile*
- 8 He saw me but didn't speak to me. *He saw me*

2 Quali parole sono state sostituite dalla parte in corsivo in queste frasi?

- 0 I don't like rap, but my boyfriend *does*. *likes rap*
- 1 I didn't have an exam, but all my friends *did*.
- 2 Most of my friends don't like school, but I *do*.
- 3 I once ate a vegetarian burger, but I'll never *do so again*.
- 4 Have you tidied your room? ~ I'll *do it* later.
- 5 Are we late? ~ I don't think *so*.
- 6 Is Anna here? ~ I hope *so*.

3 Completa le frasi con *one* o *ones*.

- 0 I haven't got a laptop. Have you got *one* ?
- 1 I need a new camera, but I haven't seen I can afford.
- 2 I've lost my sunglasses! I'll have to buy some new
- 3 I need a pen. Have you got ?
- 4 Can you pass me my gloves? They're the red
- 5 I'm going to get a scooter. Have you got ?

4 Riscrivi le frasi in corsivo in modo da renderle più naturali. Usa le parole dei riquadri.

For a healthy life, get a dog (but not a cat)

doing so do not them they

those who do not

A study has shown that people who own dogs are healthier than ⁰*people who do not own dogs* *those who do not* . Research has shown that people who keep dogs as pets generally have lower blood pressure than people who ¹*do not keep dogs as pets* ²*People who keep dogs as pets* also suffer from fewer medical problems in general. 'People with dogs generally take ³*their dogs* for a walk at least once a day, and the benefits of ⁴*taking their dog for a walk once a day* in terms of increased physical activity, are obvious,' says Dr Anna Wells of Prince's University.

didn't those walking without

The study also revealed that dog owners regularly make new social contacts thanks to conversations started when ⁵*they are walking* *their dogs*. In the study, participants went for walks in parks: sometimes with a dog and sometimes ⁶*without a dog* The participants who had a dog with them had on average 20% more social interaction than ⁷*participants* *who* ⁸*didn't have a dog with them*

do it one they

The study showed that cat owners, on the other hand, do not enjoy the health and social benefits that dog owners ⁹*enjoy* 'Cat owners tend to spend a lot more time sitting around at home, reading or watching TV. My advice is, if you haven't already got a dog, then get ¹¹*a dog* And if you've got a cat, start taking ¹²*your cat* for walks.'



A Are you?, Did they? ecc.

- i Si può rispondere alle affermazioni con una domanda breve come *Are you?*, *Did they?* per indicare che si è interessati a ciò che le persone dicono e aiutarle ad andare avanti con la conversazione.

I saw Tim at the weekend. ~ Did you? How is he?

Tracy's lost her ID card. ~ Oh, has she? Has she reported it?

- ii Si usa *be* o un verbo ausiliare + pronomi. Per il present e il past simple, si usa l'ausiliare *do*.

I'm exhausted. ~ Are you?

Dave's playing tennis. ~ Is he?

I love opera. ~ Do you?

Maria didn't pass her exam. ~ Didn't she?

I've bought a new computer. ~ Have you?

- iii L'intonazione è molto importante. L'intonazione si alza (la voce sale) sul pronomi e si dovrebbe avere un tono amichevole. Se l'intonazione diventa troppo forte, si può dare l'impressione di essere sorpresi, increduli e/o che si metta in dubbio ciò che dice il parlante.

I'm tired. ~ Are you?

B So am I, neither did I ecc.

- i Si può rispondere alle affermazioni con *so am I, neither did I* ecc. per mostrare che si è d'accordo con l'affermazione.

I love skiing. ~ So do I.

I'm having karate lessons. ~ So is Tom.

I don't like spicy food. ~ Neither do I.

- ii Si usa *so/neither + be* o verbo ausiliare + soggetto. Si usa *so* per esprimere accordo su un'affermazione.

I'm tired. ~ So am I.

We had pizza for lunch. ~ So did we.

Si usa *neither* per esprimere accordo su una negazione.

I'm not hungry. ~ Neither am I.

I've never been to Rome. ~ Neither have I.

Si può usare *nor* al posto di *neither*.

I don't like it. ~ Nor do I.

- iii Si possono usare *me too* ecc. e *me neither* ecc. al posto di *so do I/neither do I*. Ma ciò avviene più frequentemente nelle conversazioni informali.

I went swimming this morning. ~ Me too.

I haven't finished my homework. ~ Me neither.

- iv Per esprimere disaccordo si può usare soggetto + *be* o verbo ausiliare.

I'm cold. ~ I'm not. I love Chinese food. ~ I don't.

I'm not hungry. ~ I am. I don't like rap music. ~ I do.

► Vedi unità 73 per le risposte brevi alle domande yes/no.

1 Completa i dialoghi con le risposte brevi: *Are you?, Did they? ecc.*

- 0 A I'm tired.
B Are you? You should go to bed.
- 1 A I've got a new computer.
B? What make is it?
- 2 A It's raining.
B? Never mind. We'll go out later, shall we?
- 3 A I'm sorry, Dave's not here.
B? I'll catch him later then.
- 4 A There's a message for you by the phone.
B? Can you tell me what it says?
- 5 A I didn't go out last night after all.
B? What did you do then?
- 6 A I saw Billy last night.
B? How is he?
- 7 A We're going to Thailand this year.
B? Whereabouts?
- 8 A The film was rubbish.
B? That's a shame. It had a good review.

2 Completa i dialoghi. Nel primo caso usa *So* o *Neither* per esprimere consenso, nel secondo caso usa *be* o un altro ausiliare per esprimere dissenso.

- 0 Alice I don't like reality TV.
Ben Neither do I. It's so boring these days.
Chris I do. It's brilliant.
- 1 Anna I'm hungry.
Bobby Why don't we go for a pizza?
Colin I've just had lunch.
- 2 Alfie I've never been to Ireland.
Brian But I'd really like to one day.
Carlo I went to Dublin two years ago.
- 3 Amy I'd love to go to India.
Brad I really want to visit the Taj Mahal.
Clive Everyone gets ill as soon as they arrive.
- 4 Arthur I never drink coffee.
Bella It gives me a headache.
Carrie About six or seven cups a day!
- 5 Allie I didn't watch TV last night.
Ben There was nothing on worth watching.
Charles There was a great documentary about the Olympics.
- 6 Agnes I need to finish my assignment tonight.
Bruce I can't do it at any other time.
Chad The teacher gave me an extra week to finish it.

3 Scrivi risposte vere per te usando *So do I, Neither am I, I am, I don't ecc.*

- 0 I'm not going out tonight. Neither am I.
- 1 I'm a student.
- 2 I watched TV last night.
- 3 I've never been to Japan.
- 4 I don't play a musical instrument.
- 5 I can speak English.

I saw Sarah today. She was in the supermarket. Jim James has died. The actor was 85.

- i Sia nel parlato che nello scritto si ha spesso necessità di riferirsi a ciò che è già stato specificato. Per evitare di ripetere la stessa parola, si usano di norma i pronomi (*he, it, them, one, these* ecc.) e gli avverbi.

I saw Jim this morning. He was in the supermarket.

The party was great. There were about a hundred people there.

I'll be back home at 6.30. Call me then.

- ii In contesti formali, di norma nella scrittura e in testi lunghi, si possono anche usare sinonimi ed altre parole correlate per evitare la ripetizione della stessa parola.

Google is the world's most popular search engine. The company was set up in 1998.

We were attacked by a shark. The creature swam into our boat three times.

- iii Si possono anche usare pronomi e sinonimi se ci si riferisce a qualcosa che non è ancora stato specificato. Si usano più spesso nello scritto, come ad esempio nei resoconti di notiziari e nella scrittura creativa.

Then I saw something. It was moving towards us. I suddenly realized this creature was a snake.

► Vedi unità 122 per altri usi dei pronomi e unità 124 per altri usi di *one/ones*.

- 1 Completa le notizie giornalistiche usando dei sinonimi per la parola o le parole in neretto scegliendo tra quelle del riquadro.

the animal the band the clubs the creature the officers the 2000-year-old amphitheatre
the work of art the newly-elected Prime Minister

- 0 A Picasso painting has been stolen from the Musee D'Orsay in Paris.
The work of art is valued at €50 million.
- 1 Fifty policemen have been injured during a demonstration.
..... were trying to prevent protesters from entering Trafalgar Square.
- 2 This year's Champions League final will be between Liverpool and AC Milan.
..... have met before on six occasions.
- 3 Rome's most popular tourist destination is the Coliseum.
..... has about four million visitors each year.
- 4 The Beatles have once again been voted the greatest band of all time by readers of Music International magazine.
..... received almost double the votes of The Rolling Stones, who were in second place.
- 5 A tiger has escaped from Chicago Zoo.
..... was last seen strolling through a shopping centre. The public has been warned not to approach
- 6 In his first speech to the nation,
..... declared that the fight against poverty was the number one priority.

2 Completa le frasi usando un pronomo o un avverbio adatto che si riferisce alla parola in corsivo.

- 0 *Harriet and Joe are going to be late.* They missed the bus.
- 1 *I've been at the gym. I saw Leo*
- 2 *My lesson finishes at 10.30. Call me*
- 3 *I saw Harriet this morning. was talking to Hugo.*
- 4 *We went to that new café yesterday. was great.*
- 5 *Let's meet at your house. I'll see you at 6.30.*
- 6 *I can't find my mobile. Have you seen ?*
- 7 *Have you got Mike's email address? I need to send some photos.*
- 8 *I don't remember 1999. I wasn't even born*
- 9 *You want your coat? Which is ?*
- 10 *Can you pass me my bag? 's the blue*

3 Leggi il testo sui codici di sicurezza. A che cosa si riferiscono le parole in neretto?

How secure is your password?

One of the problems with passwords **is** that ⁰ **they** are easily forgotten. So, in an effort to make passwords as memorable as possible, people tend to base ¹ **them** on familiar things like someone's name, birth date, or favourite football team.

² **This** means that any computer hacker can easily discover your basic personal information and interests to try as potential passwords.

So, how can ³ **we** make our passwords more secure? Not basing ⁴ **them** on personal information **is** of course the first and most obvious precaution. And according to internet security expert Ian Smith ⁵ **we** should never use real words. 'If ⁶ **it's** in the dictionary, don't use ⁷ **it**,' he says.

As a general rule, all passwords should be at least eight characters long.

'ThisIsMyPassword is actually more secure than S3cur!ty even though the second ⁸ **one** uses a greater diversity of character types', Smith tells us.

And finally, Smith recommends that all passwords are changed every month and ⁹ **you** should not reuse ¹⁰ **them** for at least a year.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|--|
| 0 A) passwords | B) problems |
| 1 A) memories | B) passwords |
| 2 A) forgetting your password | B) basing passwords on familiar things |
| 3 A) computer users | B) computer hackers |
| 4 A) passwords | B) computer users |
| 5 A) internet security experts | B) computer users |
| 6 A) a word | B) your personal information |
| 7 A) your computer | B) the word |
| 8 A) password | B) rule |
| 9 A) computer users | B) you and your friends |
| 10 A) your computer | B) passwords |

Coesione: connessioni tra frasi

Actually, I'm Canadian. In a word, it was great. Anyway, what was I saying?

A Uso

Sia nel parlato sia nello scritto spesso si usa una parola o un'espressione per collegarsi alla frase precedente. Esistono molti modi per farlo, ma tra i più comuni vi sono:

i Per contraddirsi

*It's not expensive. Actually/On the contrary, it's quite cheap.**Non è costoso. In effetti/Al contrario, è abbastanza economico.**I'm not French. I'm Swiss actually.**Non sono francese. Sono svizzero, in realtà.*

Si usa *on the contrary* quando è vero l'opposto di quanto diciamo e si usa *actually* per dire che qualcosa è diverso da quanto è stato detto, ma non è necessariamente vero l'opposto. *On the contrary* va all'inizio della frase e *actually* può andare o all'inizio o alla fine.

ii Per sostenere un'affermazione

Let's walk to the station. After all, it's a lovely day.

iii Per mettere in primo piano e sintetizzare

Do I enjoy studying? Basically/In a word/In general/On the whole/All in all, yes.

iv Per dare enfasi a ciò che si pensa davvero

We're visiting my cousins this afternoon. To be honest, I don't want to go.

v Per cambiare il soggetto

*I've got my driving test next week. By the way, did Samantha pass her driving test?**The music at the party was great. ~ Talking of music, have you heard the new Monkeys album?*

B Anyway

Anyway (comunque, tuttavia, ad ogni modo) è spesso usato nella conversazione e ha diversi usi:

i Per tornare all'argomento principale

Anyway, what were you saying about Harry? Tuttavia, che cosa dicevi di Harry?

ii Per sostenere qualcosa che si è detto in precedenza

*I'm too tired to go out. Anyway, there's a good film on TV.**Sono troppo stanco per uscire. Comunque, c'è un bel film alla TV.*

iii Per indicare che si vuole terminare una conversazione

Anyway, I must go. It's very late. Ad ogni modo, devo andare. È molto tardi.

C Well

i Si usa di norma *well* (beh, bene) in conversazione, per indicare che si sta considerando, o si è considerato, qualcosa attentamente.*You want to have a party? Well, why not.**Vuoi fare una festa? Bene, perché no?**Well, that was a disaster!**Beh, quello è stato un disastro!*

ii Inoltre, lo si usa per correggere o per cambiare qualcosa che si è detto.

There were thousands of people. Well, hundreds anyway.

► Vedi anche unità 164 (addizione), unità 165 (contrasto) e unità 166 (finalità, causa e conseguenza).

1 Completa le frasi scegliendo l'alternativa corretta.

- 0 Pete said I got 80% in the exam. *Actually / After all*, it was 60%! *To be honest / On the contrary*, I thought I'd failed.
- 1 I'd better invite Kevin to the party. *Actually / After all*, he did invite me to his party.
Talking of / By the way, if you see Nina, can you invite her too?
- 2 Are you coming with us at the weekend? *After all / Basically*, we're going to meet up at my house at about 9.30 and go straight to the beach. *Actually / On the contrary*, we can pick you up on the way if you like, say about 10.
- 3 You wanted to know about my trip to Madrid. *In a word / After all*, it was brilliant!
Actually / By the way, did you see Diana while I was away?
- 4 Oh, *by the way / on the whole*, I saw a brilliant film last night – *No Way Out*. It's quite old, but really excellent. And *talking of / by the way* films, have you still got the DVD I lent you last month?
- 5 I saw Tony driving a new car the other day. *All in all / Well*, it looked like a new car.
By the way / To be honest, I think he might have just cleaned his old car!

2 Completa i dialoghi usando le parole dei riquadri.

after all anyway well well

- A Mum, can I buy that new Mario game?
B ⁰ *Well* , it's a lot of money. ¹ , you had a new game only last week.
A Please, Mum. Everyone's got it.
B ² , OK then. ³ , it's your money, I suppose.

anyway basically talking of

- A Have you heard the news about Tony?
B Oh, ⁴ Tony, he asked me to give you this DVD.
A Oh, thanks. It's a film he recorded for me.
B ⁵ , what news?
A ⁶ , he's going to be kicked out of school! He was caught cheating in the exam yesterday.

by the way in a word well

- A How was your holiday?
B ⁷ , terrible. It rained every single day.
A ⁸ , England in April – what do you expect?
B True. ⁹ , are you going away this year?

in a word to be honest well

- A How's your new job? Are you enjoying it?
B ¹⁰ , no.
A Oh dear, why's that?
B ¹¹ , I spend all day putting bits of paper in files and making coffee for my boss.
¹² , I may as well be working in a café!

actually anyway basically well

- A I hear Jane failed her exam. I'm not surprised – she never did make much effort.
B That's not fair. ¹³ , she worked really hard.
A ¹⁴ , how come she failed then?
B ¹⁵ , the exam was incredibly difficult. A lot of people failed it. ¹⁶ , you're not exactly Einstein yourself!

1 Costruzioni ellittiche Elimina le parole superflue in modo che le frasi siano più naturali.

- 0 I went out last night, but Roberto didn't go out last night.
- 1 I'm taking the IELTS exam, but Ester isn't taking the IELTS exam.
- 2 My parents both speak French, but I don't speak French.
- 3 I haven't got Sam's email address, but I think Dora has got Sam's email address.
- 4 I didn't go swimming because I didn't want to go swimming.
- 5 I can't speak Italian, but my brother can speak Italian.
- 6 I want to go out tonight, but I can't go out tonight because I'm too busy.
- 7 My mum's got three brothers and sisters and my dad's got four brothers and sisters.
- 8 I saw Catalina and I saw Angela at the supermarket this morning.

2 Costruzioni ellittiche Cancella le parole che possono essere omesse in queste risposte.

- 0 Bianca Are you going to the meeting?
Charles I'm possibly going to the meeting. I'm not sure.
- 1 Clara How are you?
John I'm fine, thanks. And how are you?
- 2 Gisella When are you going to Bari?
Andrea We're going to Bari on Friday.
- 3 Tom Are you going out tonight?
Suzy I'm possibly going out tonight. I'll call you.
- 4 Linda Where are you going?
Beppe I'm going to the shops. I'm going to the shops to get some bread.

3 Sostituzione Sostituisci alcune parole nelle risposte con una forma di *do*, *so* o *one(s)* per renderle più naturali.

- 0 Davide Do you like rock music,
Tessa Not really, but my boyfriend likes rock music does.....
- 1 Alan I'm going to get a new computer.
James What's the matter with your old computer?
- 2 Sam Are you going on holiday this year?
Sandy Not sure, but I hope we're going on holiday this year
- 3 Fabio Did you speak to Gianni last night?
Tina No, but I think Carlo spoke to Gianni
- 4 Agata Is the exam at 9 o'clock?
Rosa Yes, I think the exam is at 9 o'clock
- 5 Joe Do you like these sunglasses?
Rico I prefer the silver sunglasses
- 6 Juan Do you speak Spanish?
Nico No, but I think Magdalena speaks Spanish
- 7 Tom Does Sam speak Italian?
Sue No, but I speak Italian
- 8 Ali Did anyone turn off the oven?
Max Yes, I turned off the oven

4 Risposte brevi Scegli l'alternativa corretta.

- | | | | |
|------------------------------|-------------|-----------------|-------------------|
| 0 I've got a new phone. | a Have you? | b Has it? | c Did you? |
| 1 Sara's bought a scooter. | a Has it? | b Has she? | c Is she? |
| 2 I can't go to Jim's party. | a Can you? | b Me too. | c Can't you? |
| 3 It's going to rain later. | a Does it? | b Is it? | c So do I. |
| 4 I'm not hungry. | a So am I. | b Are you? | c Aren't you? |
| 5 I haven't had lunch yet. | a Have you? | b So have I. | c Neither have I. |
| 6 I passed the exam! | a Me too. | b So am I. | c Did it? |
| 7 I didn't enjoy the film. | a Did you? | b Didn't you? | c So did I. |
| 8 I never drink coffee. | a Do you? | b Neither do I. | c So do I. |

5 Risposte brevi Scrivi delle risposte brevi vere per te usando *So do I*, *Neither am I*, *I do*, *I can't* ecc.

- 0 I don't like football. I do.
- 1 I watched TV last night.
- 2 I can play the piano.
- 3 I've never been to China.
- 4 I can't speak German.
- 5 I was born in Rome.
- 6 I love Italian food.
- 7 I haven't passed my driving test yet.
- 8 I'm planning to go to university.

6 Riferimento e coesione lessicale Completa le frasi con il pronomo o l'avverbio corretto che si riferisca alle parole in neretto.

- 0 I saw **Federico** a few minutes ago. He was with Allegra.
- 1 We went to **the park** this morning. I saw Andrea and Belinda
- 2 I can't find **my mobile**. Have you seen ?
- 3 Do you know **Brunella's** mobile number? I need to call
- 4 Let's meet **outside Café Coco**. I'll see you at 2.30.
- 5 I'll be busy until about 7.30. I'll phone you
- 6 I don't know what **the party** was like. I wasn't
- 7 There are some **sunglasses** here. Whose are ?
- 8 Which is Gemma's **scooter**? Is the red over there?

7 Connessioni tra frasi Scrivi delle risposte usando *actually* e le parole del riquadro.

can't stand it Canadian failed Italian stayed at home thought it was boring not invited

- | | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| 0 A Is he American? | B <u>No, he's Canadian actually.</u> |
| 1 A Are you going to Dino's party? | B |
| 2 A Did you enjoy the film last night? | B |
| 3 A Great music, isn't it! | B |
| 4 A Did Lola pass her driving test? | B |
| 5 A Did you go out last night? | B |
| 6 A Are you Spanish? | B |

8 Riferimento e coesione lessicale Che cosa stanno chiedendo queste persone? Scrivi le domande usando *is/are* e i suggerimenti del riquadro.

this one / mine that / him these / them this / it this / it this / yours



0 Is this it?



3 ?



1 ?



4 ?



2 No. ?

5 This is mine. ?



T 9 Coesione: varie forme Traduci le frasi, le domande e i dialoghi.

0 È questo il tuo cappotto o è quello là?
Is this your coat or is it that one?

1 Mi piace questa camicia, ma non mi piace quella là.

2 Non ho il mio cellulare, ma ce l'ha Simona.

3 Pioverà più tardi? ~ Spero di no.

4 Andrea andrà alla festa? ~ Penso di sì.

5 Qual è la tua borsa? Questa o quella?

6 Non mi piace il rugby, ma al mio ragazzo sì.

7 A proposito, hai visto Carlo di recente?

8 Silvia era a scuola questa mattina? ~ Penso di no.

10 Collegamenti fra frasi Leggi i dialoghi e scegli l'alternativa corretta per ogni spazio.

- Alex How was your interview?
Chris ⁰ B, OK, I think.
- Kim Come on, let's go for a walk.
Laura Oh, I really don't want to. And ¹ it's started raining.
- Sarah Where are you from – Australia?
Bruce I'm from New Zealand, ²
- Maria It's my sister's birthday today.
Nic Oh, say happy birthday to her. And ³ birthdays, do you know it's Paola's 16th next week?
- Jane What do you think of Ernesto's new haircut?
Kate ⁴ I think it looks terrible.
Jane Do you? I quite like it, ⁵
- Helena How was the exam?
Martha ⁶ I'm not too sure, ⁷ There were a few questions that I couldn't answer, but ⁸ I think I did OK.
- Helena I'm sure you did fine. Oh, ⁹ we're all going out for a pizza after the exams next Friday. Do you fancy it?
- Martha I'd love to, thanks. Oh, I can't, ¹⁰ I'm going to my grandparents for the weekend.

- | | | | |
|------------------|-------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| 0 A After all | (B) All in all | C By the way | D Anyway |
| 1 A by the way | B anyway | C all in all | D on the contrary |
| 2 A anyway | B basically | C on the contrary | D actually |
| 3 A to be honest | B talking of | C in a word | D by the way |
| 4 A By the way | B Anyway | C To be honest | D On the contrary |
| 5 A actually | B anyway | C in a word | D after all |
| 6 A By the way | B Well | C Anyway | D Talking of |
| 7 A to be honest | B anyway | C by the way | D after all |
| 8 A all in all | B after all | C anyway | D well |
| 9 A on the whole | B to be honest | C after all | D by the way |
| 10 A actually | B on the contrary | C on the whole | D by the way |

It's really good. I didn't like it at all. It was great from start to finish.

Si può dare enfasi a parole ed espressioni in vari modi. Qui di seguito sono elencati gli esempi più comuni.

A Accrescere l'enfasi dei nomi

Si può accrescere l'enfasi dei nomi usando alcuni aggettivi. Per esempio:

The meeting was a total disaster. It was a complete waste of money.

The whole day was fantastic. We got to the very top of the mountain

Si può usare *very* anche per accrescere l'enfasi di espressioni estreme come *the very top, the very first, the very end*.

B Accrescere l'enfasi con aggettivi

i Si può accrescere l'enfasi di aggettivi per mezzo di alcuni avverbi. Per esempio:

The film was really good. The view was just amazing. The exam was so difficult.

I'm a hundred percent certain. This pasta is absolutely delicious.

I was dead lucky to get a ticket. (Nota che l'uso di *dead* in questo modo è molto informale.)

ii Si può accrescere l'enfasi di aggettivi comparativi usando *much, a lot, far e even*.

Rugby is much more exciting than football. It's far cheaper to go by bus.

The party was even better than I'd imagined.

iii Si può accrescere l'enfasi di aggettivi superlativi usando *single, by far, simply e easily*.

That was the single best day of my life. He's by far the richest person in Italy.

He is simply the best player in the world. She's easily the best teacher.

C Accrescere l'enfasi di verbi ed espressioni verbali

Si può accrescere l'enfasi di verbi ed espressioni verbali usando alcuni avverbi. Per esempio:

I really like it. Mi piace davvero.

I just couldn't believe it. Non riuscivo proprio a crederci.

She didn't even say thank you! Non ha neanche ringraziato!

D Accrescere l'enfasi in generale

Si può in generale accrescere l'enfasi di ciò che si dice usando alcune espressioni. Per esempio:

We didn't see anyone at all. Non abbiamo visto assolutamente nessuno.

The whole day was fantastic from start to finish. Tutta la giornata è stata fantastica dall'inizio alla fine. It's without doubt the best option. È senza dubbio la scelta migliore.

E Accrescere l'enfasi con *do/did*

i Si può usare il verbo ausiliare *do* o *did* per conferire enfasi. Questo avviene soprattutto quando si confronta, si contraddice o si esprimono fatti o eventi inaspettati.

The weather was bad, but we did have a good time.

I do agree with you, believe me.

I did enjoy that lesson.

ii Per i verbi che hanno già un ausiliare, si può conferire enfasi sottolineando l'ausiliare.
It's difficult, but I am trying.

► Vedi anche unità 142 (accrescere l'enfasi di aggettivi con/senza gradazione), unità 147 (accrescere l'enfasi di aggettivi comparativi) e unità 153 (avverbi rafforzativi).

1 Completa i commenti ai titoli di giornale usando *What a/an ...* e le espressioni del riquadro.

absolute disgrace complete waste of money dreadful mistake
terrible disaster total idiot unbelievable escape

- 0 **30,000 homeless after hurricane**

What a terrible disaster!

- 1 **£50 MILLION MUSEUM GETS ONLY 10 VISITORS A DAY**

- 2 **Man survives fall from aeroplane after landing in snow**

- 3 **Man jumps into lion enclosure at zoo**

- 4 **Politician stole €1 million from government**

- 5 **NEWBORN BABIES GIVEN TO WRONG MOTHERS**

2 Riscrivi le frasi in modo da includere le parole in corsivo nella posizione corretta. Usa le parole in corsivo nell'ordine in cui sono date.

- 0 The pasta was delicious. Better than last time. *absolutely, even*
The pasta was absolutely delicious. Even better than last time.

- 1 I couldn't believe my eyes. The view was incredible. *just, simply*

- 2 I'm confident we'll win the tournament. *a hundred percent, whole*

- 3 We were in a rush. We didn't have time to say goodbye. *total, even*

- 4 The film was fantastic. Especially the scene at the end, which was stunning. *really, very, just*

- 5 The beach was quiet. We didn't see anyone for hours. *so, at all*

- 6 The holiday was great. It was the best holiday I've had. *whole, just, from start to finish, by far, ever*

3 Riscrivi le frasi usando la forma adatta di *do* per dare maggiore enfasi a quanto viene detto.

- 0 I enjoyed that pizza. *I did enjoy that pizza.*

- 1 This is the life! I love lying on the beach.

- 2 What are you wearing? You look silly!

- 3 David talks a lot, doesn't he?

- 4 It rained, but we had a good time.

- 5 Sara wants to go out, but she's too tired.

- 6 I wish I could play the piano.

A Uso

Una frase scissa inizia con un'espressione particolare che focalizza l'attenzione sull'informazione importante. Paragona le frasi seguenti:

Frase scissa

It wasn't me who broke the window.
Non sono stato io a rompere la finestra.
What I need is a holiday.
Ciò di cui ho bisogno è una vacanza.
The problem is money.
Il problema sono i soldi.

Frase non scissa

I didn't break the window.
Non ho rotto la finestra.
I need a holiday.
Ho bisogno di una vacanza.
Money is the problem.
I soldi sono il problema.

B Forma

Le principali forme delle frasi scisse sono:

i *It is/was ... that/who/when/where ...*

It's the colour that I don't like. È il colore che non mi piace.
It was Paola who phoned, not Marta. È stata Paola che ha telefonato, non Marta.
Is it Buckingham Palace where the Queen lives? È Buckingham Palace dove vive la Regina?

ii *What ... is/was ...*

What I don't like is the colour. Ciò che non mi piace è il colore.
What surprised me was how cheap it was. Ciò che mi sorprese fu quanto fosse economico.

iii *The thing/place/person ecc. ... is/was ...*

The thing I don't like is the colour. La cosa che non mi piace è il colore.
The person you need to speak to is Mr Williams. La persona con cui devi parlare è Mr Williams.

iv *Frase nominale + is/was ...*

The problem is the colour. Il problema è il colore.
The key issue is how much it's going to cost. Il problema principale è quanto costerà.

1 Riscrivi le risposte. Inizia con le parole date.

0 A Did John tell you?

B No, Vince told me.

No, it was Vince who told me.

1 A Do you know what's wrong with the computer?

B The software's causing the problems.

It's

2 A Work, work, work and more work!

B We need a holiday.

What we

3 A I can't stand all the reality TV shows.

B Yes. I can't understand why they are so popular.

Yes. The thing I

4 A What's your motto for life?

B Being happy is the most important thing.

The most

- 5 A How's school?
B School's OK. I don't like getting up in the mornings.
School's OK. It's
- 6 A It's an amazing thing, the internet.
B Yes. I just don't understand how it works.
Yes. What I
- 7 A Is there anyone who can help me?
B You should speak to Jim.
The person you
- 8 A Abramovich is worth tens of billions of dollars.
B Yes. I'd like to know how he got so rich.
Yes. The thing I'd

2 Che cosa stanno dicendo queste persone? Inizia le domande con *Is/Was it* e le risposte con *No, it is/was ...*. Usa i suggerimenti del riquadro.

2001 Spain Da Vinci John Lennon Johnny Depp the Queen

- 0 Paul McCartney / wrote 'Imagine'
A Was it Paul McCartney who wrote 'Imagine'?
B No, it was John Lennon.
- 1 Donatello / painted the Gioconda
A
- B
- 2 Brad Pitt / starred in 'Pirates of the Caribbean'
A
- B
- 3 The Prime Minister / lives in Buckingham Palace
A
- B
- 4 2005 / the Twin Towers were attacked
A
- B
- 5 Italy / won Euro 2008
A
- B

3 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te. Puoi usare i suggerimenti del riquadro o altri a tua scelta.

the food the history the politics the culture the landscape the weather
my computer my photo album my mobile do exams do homework
get up early have no money have lots of friends learn new things have fun

- 0 What I love about the UK is the history.....
- 1 What I love about Italy is
- 2 One thing I don't like about Italy is
- 3 What I like about being a student is
- 4 What I don't like about being a student is
- 5 My most treasured possession is
- 6 A country I'd really like to visit is

It's good to talk. It takes twenty minutes to get there. I love it when it's sunny.

A Uso e forma

Si usa *it* per evitare di usare un'espressione lunga o complessa come soggetto di una frase. L'informazione si inserisce poi più avanti nella frase. Guarda questi esempi:

It's a shame that you have to leave. È un peccato che tu debba partire.

It doesn't matter if you're a little late. Non importa se sei un po' in ritardo.

Alcune espressioni utili e piuttosto comuni in cui *it* è usato in questo modo sono:

i *It + frase verbale*

It doesn't matter if you fail the exam. Non importa se non passi l'esame.

It makes sense to go by taxi. Ha senso andare in taxi.

It makes no difference who comes with us. Non fa differenza chi viene con noi.

It annoys me when people do that. Mi infastidisce quando le persone fanno questo.

ii *It's/It was + nome o aggettivo + that o infinito*

It's/It was	a miracle a shame/pity my fault no wonder (un)likely (not) true/clear/obvious important good (not) surprising	that ...	It's/It was	a good idea a mistake a (good) opportunity a pleasure a shame/pity time crazy/stupid difficult/hard (not) easy essential good illegal/against the law important (un)likely (im)possible silly too late/early better/cheaper/quicker	to ...

It's a miracle that they survived the crash.

It was my fault that we got lost.

It's obvious that we've missed the train.

It was a pleasure to meet you. It's time to go.

It will be good to see you.

It's important to do your best.

B I like it when ...

Si può usare *it* come oggetto. Ciò avviene normalmente con verbi che esprimono un atteggiamento, come *like, love, don't mind, hate*.

I love it when it's sunny. I hate it when people drop litter.

C It's five o'clock, It's ten kilometres, It's raining

Si usa *it* in molte espressioni di uso comune quando si parla del tempo cronologico, date, distanza e del tempo atmosferico.

What time is it? ~ It's three o'clock.

How far is it to Genova? ~ It's about thirty kilometres.

How long does it take to get to the station? ~ It takes about half an hour.

Is it snowing? ~ No, it isn't. But it's very cold.

1 Completa le frasi usando le parole dei riquadri.

it's a mistake it makes no difference it's obvious it's a shame it's not surprising

- 0 It's a shame that you can't come to the party. You'll be missed!
1 you're hungry. You haven't eaten since breakfast!
2 to think you can pass your exams without working hard.
3 that your mobile is 'uncool'. You're not getting a new one.
4 that James likes you. He never stops texting you!

it annoys me it doesn't matter it's easy it's important it's my fault

- 5 the car won't start. I left the lights on all night.
6 when restaurants allow people to smoke at the tables.
7 to learn English if you make the effort.
8 if you fail an exam, but
to do your best.

2 Completa le frasi in modo che siano vere per te usando *I ... it when* e i verbi del riquadro.

like don't like don't mind hate love

- 0 I hate it when it's cold and windy.
1 it snows.
2 it's really hot.
3 I have to get up early.
4 there's a lot of sport on TV.
5 we have exams.
6 we get a lot of homework.

3 Usa le parole date per scrivere le domande. Poi dai risposte vere usando *it*.

- 0 what day? What day is it? ~ It's Wednesday.
0 the fifteenth today? Is it the fifteenth today? ~ No, it's the sixteenth.
1 what time? ~
2 Thursday today? ~
3 raining? ~
4 how far / to the nearest beach? ~
5 how long / take to get there? ~
~

4 Leggi gli appunti e scrivi delle frasi usando *It ... to go by ...* e le parole in corsivo.

To airport

Bus: €12, journey time 2 hours, station 15 minutes walk from terminal

Taxi: €35, journey time 30 minutes, direct to terminal

- 0 It's €35 to go by taxi. €35
1 cheaper
2 takes 2 hours
3 much quicker
4 more convenient
5 more difficult
6 makes sense

A Uso

In inglese la frase inizia in genere con il soggetto (*We, Harry, The film* ecc.).

L'anticipazione (*fronting*) avviene quando si inizia la frase con qualcosa di diverso dal soggetto. Di norma si usa per focalizzare o per porre l'enfasi sull'informazione.

B Anticipazione con avverbi e locuzioni avverbiali

- i** Il modo più comune di usare l'anticipazione consiste nel mettere un'espressione avverbiale all'inizio della frase o dell'espressione.

On the whole, I agree with you.

Usually, the computer works fine.

Luckily, no-one was injured.

- ii** Una struttura di anticipazione molto comune nel parlato consiste nell'iniziare la frase con *here, there, first, then, next, now*. I verbi che più comunemente si usano con questa struttura sono *be, come e go*.

Here's the taxi.

Here comes the rain.

There goes the train.

Now comes the difficult part.

Nota che, quando si usa questa struttura, il verbo si mette prima del soggetto.

Here comes the rain. Non *Here the rain comes.*

Comunque, non si inverte la posizione di soggetto e verbo se il soggetto è un pronome.

Here it comes. Non *Here comes it.*

- iii** In contesti formali, per esempio in descrizioni letterarie, si può usare l'anticipazione per creare un effetto drammatico.

Down came the rain.

Gone are the long summer evenings.

In the corner was a small door.

Nota che, come sopra, il verbo si mette prima del soggetto.

In the corner was a small door. Non *In the corner a small door was.*

Ma, come sopra, non si inverte la posizione di soggetto e verbo se il soggetto è un pronome.

Through the door we went. Non *Through the door went we.*

C Anticipazione con un complemento

A volte si può mettere il complemento all'inizio della frase o dell'espressione.

Questo si fa spesso con verbi come *be, think, imagine, believe* e con l'esclamazione *What (a) ...* ecc.

The party's on Friday I think.

His name's Boris I believe.

What a mess they made!

1 Che cosa diresti in queste situazioni? Usa *Here e comes* o *There e goes*.

the bus the rain the taxi the train he she



0 *Here comes the taxi.*

1
2
3

4 A *Where's Rover?*

B – into
the next field.
5 A *Where's Karen?*
B *Ah, look.*

2 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Inizia con le parole date.

0 The beach was now deserted. The crowds of holidaymakers were gone.
The beach was now deserted. Gone were the crowds of holidaymakers.

1 The president stepped onto the podium to make his speech.

Onto to make his speech.

2 The children ran out of the classroom. 'Hooray, the exams are over,' they shouted.

Out 'Hooray, the exams are over,' they shouted.

3 The referee gave a penalty. Harris stepped up to make the score 2–2.

The referee gave a penalty. Up to make the score 2–2.

4 I had two more exams. Biology was next and geography came after that.

I had two more exams. Next and after that

5 Nadal was leading 6–3, 4–2 when the rain came down and play was abandoned.

Nadal was leading 6–3, 4–2 when down and play was abandoned.

6 I took my seat on the aeroplane. An old lady was sitting next to me. She seemed nervous.

I took my seat on the aeroplane. Sitting She seemed nervous.

A Uso

In contesti piuttosto formali, specie nello scritto e nei discorsi ufficiali, la frase può iniziare con una locuzione avverbiale negativa o limitativa come *Never ...*, *Not only ...*, *Only when ...* ecc. Questo serve per dare enfasi o per un effetto più drammatico. Confronta queste frasi:

Inizio con locuzione avverbiale negativa o limitativa

Never before have I been so in love.

Not a word did he say to anyone.

Not for a moment did I think he was lying.

Ordine delle parole 'neutro'

I've never been so in love before.

He didn't say a word to anyone.

I didn't think for a moment that he was lying.

B Forma

Quando si inizia una frase con *not* o con una locuzione avverbiale negativa o limitativa, il soggetto va dopo il verbo ausiliare. Nota che questa costruzione è la stessa delle frasi interrogative.

Inizio con locuzione avverbiale negativa o limitativa

Not for a minute did I realize the danger.

Never again will I make the same mistake.

Ordine delle parole 'neutro'

I didn't realize the danger for a minute.

I won't make the same mistake again.

Ci sono diverse espressioni che si possono usare in questo modo. Tra le più comuni:

i **Not a ...**

Not a sound did we hear for hours.

ii **Not until ..., Not before ..., Not for ...**

Not until the gold medal was round her neck **did she realize** what she had achieved.

Not for a minute, did I think he would leave.

iii **Not only ... but ...**

Not only is he rich, but he's also extremely good-looking.

iv **Never ..., Never before ..., Never again ...**

Never before have I seen such beauty.

v **No sooner ... than ...**

No sooner had we set off than the bus broke down.

Eravamo appena partiti quando il bus ebbe un guasto.

vi **Under no circumstances ..., On no account ...**

On no account must this door be opened.

In nessun caso questa porta deve essere aperta.

vii **At no time ...**

At no time did I break my promises.

viii **Only when ..., Only after ..., Only if ...**

Only when I saw her, did I realize how beautiful she was.

Only if you have finished all your work, can you leave.

Nota che con l'espressione *Only by* si usa la forma *-ing* del verbo.

Only by cutting down on extra expenses, can our company avoid being in debt.

ix **Little ..., Rarely ..., Seldom ..., Hardly ever ...**

Little do they realize what is going to happen next.

Rarely do we see a game as exciting as this year's final.

1 Leggi queste notizie giornistiche. Sottolinea le locuzioni avverbiali negative e limitative e le inversioni soggetto-verbo.

- 0 Never before has there been a phenomenon like the Harry Potter series in the world of publishing.
- 1 Not only did Real Madrid win the league title, they also conceded only 12 goals all season.
- 2 The escaped prisoner is extremely dangerous and under no circumstances should he be approached by the public.
- 3 When he made his 99th appearance for his country, little did he know it would be his last.
- 4 The temperature reached 30°C on ten occasions.
Never before has the UK experienced such weather.
- 5 Not only did Redgrave compete in five successive Olympic Games between 1984 and 2000, but he won the gold medal each time.
Only once in a generation do you get such a talented individual.
- 6 100-metre champion Smith denies that he is a cheat and insists that at no time did he take performance-enhancing drugs.

2 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa le parole date.

- 0 They didn't see a single person for hours.
Not a single person did they see for hours.
- 1 'I will never again tell you my secrets,' cried Mary.
'Never again' , cried Mary.
- 2 James opened the exam paper and immediately began to panic.
No sooner than he began to panic.
- 3 The old man only occasionally gets visitors.
Only occasionally
- 4 'I have never seen such a beautiful sight,' said Alice.
'Never' , said Alice.
- 5 'I shall forgive you only if you apologize immediately,' said Anna.
'Only if' , said Anna.

3 Completa queste famose citazioni usando le parole del riquadro.

Never Not until Not only Only by Only if Rarely

- 0 Not until it is too late, does one recognize the really important moments in one's life.
(Agatha Christie, crime writer)
- 1 do I knock them out, but I pick the round. (Muhammed Ali, boxer)
- 2 you have been in the deepest valley, can you ever know how magnificent it is to be on the highest mountain. (Richard Nixon, US President)
- 3 have I seen destruction, panic and fear on this massive scale. (Jo Bonner, US politician, talking about Hurricane Katrina in 2005)
- 4 do great beauty and great virtue dwell together. (Petrarch, Italian poet)
- 5 taking great risks can great results be achieved. (Xerxes, Persian King)

178 Revisione e potenziamento (unità 173–177)

Strutture per esprimere enfasi

- 1 Accrescere l'enfasi** Riscrivi le parole in corsivo nella posizione corretta per esprimere enfasi.

- 0 A The Rolling Stones are the greatest band ever. *by far*
 Even
 B What? Better than The Beatles? *even*
- 1 A I'm certain that one day we'll find life on Mars. *a hundred percent*
 B Rubbish! There's no evidence. *absolutely, at all*
- 2 A MP3 players are cheaper than when they came out. *so much, first*
 B Yes, you can get them for a few euros these days. *just*
- 3 A The World Cup is the world's biggest sporting event. *easily*
 B What? Bigger than the Olympics? *even*
- 4 A I'm going to Paris for the weekend. I'm looking forward to it. I haven't been before. *so*
 B Well, it's the most beautiful city in Europe. And if you go up the Eiffel Tower, make sure you go to the top. The view is amazing. *by far, very, just*
- 5 A I've just watched a clip of Usain Bolt in the Beijing Olympics 100m final. He flew down the track. *just*
 B Yes, it's incredible. He dominated the race, and he wasn't out of breath. They say it was the most amazing race. *absolutely, totally, from start to finish, even, ever*

- 2 It 'supplementare'** Completa i dialoghi con una frase che contenga *it* e le espressioni dei riquadri.

against the law getting dark a mistake not surprising takes

- 0 A Can you smoke in public buildings?
 B No. It's against the law.
- 1 A How long is the journey?
 B about three hours, usually.
- 2 A The notice says the exam is in room 2B.
 B It's in room 3B.
- 3 A Carlo failed his driving test.
 B He only started driving three weeks ago.
- 4 A Can we stay a little longer?
 B No, . We'd better go home.

better doesn't matter lovely a pleasure much quicker take

- 5 A Do you want a blue or a black pen?
B Either is OK.
- 6 A to go by bus or train?
B Train, I'd say.
- 7 A How long to cook risotto?
B About 40 minutes.
- 8 A Thanks for a great evening. Dinner was delicious.
B to see you.

FCE

3 Frasi scisse, anticipazione e inversione dopo *not* e forme avverbiali negative Completa le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa la parola in corsivo e tra due e cinque parole.

- 0 I didn't break the glass. *me*
It wasn't me who broke the glass.
- 1 I really like the colour. *is*
What I the colour.
- 2 You need to see Professor Jones. *person*
The is Professor Jones.
- 3 Look! Lucia and Anna are coming. *here*
Look! and Anna.
- 4 Ah, good! The taxi has arrived. *here*
Ah, good! taxi.
- 5 We had just set off when the car broke down. *sooner*
No than the car broke down.
- 6 He's rich as well as good-looking. *only*
Not he's also good-looking.

T

4 Strutture per esprimere enfasi Traduci le frasi.

- 0 Ciò di cui ho bisogno è una tazza di caffè.
What I need is a cup of coffee.
- 1 Non ero io che ti ha telefonato.
.....
- 2 Ciò che amo di Roma è la sua storia.
.....
- 3 È sempre importante fare del proprio meglio.
.....
- 4 Dista circa due chilometri dalla mia casa. Ci vogliono circa venti minuti a piedi.
.....
- 5 Adoro quando nevica.
.....
- 6 Ecco l'autobus, giusto in orario.
.....
- 7 Ecco che l'autobus se ne va. Dovremo camminare.
.....
- 8 Eravamo appena arrivati in spiaggia che iniziò a piovere.
.....

It's impossible. I disagree with you. Who's in the semi-final? It's multicoloured.

Si aggiunge un prefisso ad una parola se si vuole aggiungere o cambiare significato alla parola stessa. Per esempio:

usual (usuale) → *unusual* (insolito) *final* (finale) → *semi-final* (semifinale)

A Prefissi negativi

Alcuni prefissi fanno assumere un significato negativo oppure opposto alla parola a cui vengono aggiunti. Non ci sono regole precise che indichino il prefisso negativo da usare con le diverse parole, quindi vanno studiati singolarmente.

un-	<i>uncomfortable</i>	<i>unusual</i>	<i>unzip</i>
in-	<i>invisible</i>	<i>independent</i>	<i>inexperienced</i>
il-	(per parole che iniziano con <i>l</i>)	<i>illegal</i>	<i>illogical</i>
im-	(per parole che iniziano con <i>m e p</i>)	<i>immature</i>	<i>impossible</i>
ir-	(per parole che iniziano con <i>r</i>)	<i>irresponsible</i>	<i>irregular</i>
dis-	<i>dishonest</i>	<i>disagree</i>	<i>disadvantage</i>
non-	<i>non-stop</i>	<i>non-alcoholic</i>	<i>non-EU</i>

B Altri prefissi

Ecco alcuni dei più comuni prefissi che si possono usare.

anti-	<i>anticlockwise</i>	<i>anti-war</i>
co-	<i>co-operation</i>	<i>co-pilot</i>
inter-	<i>international</i>	<i>inter-departmental</i>
mini-	<i>minibus</i>	<i>mini-tournament</i>
mis-	<i>miscalculate</i>	<i>mistranslate</i>
multi-	<i>multicoloured</i>	<i>multimillionaire</i>
over-	<i>overweight</i>	<i>overlook</i>
post-	<i>post-war</i>	<i>postgraduate</i>
pre-	<i>prearranged</i>	<i>pre-school</i>
pro-	<i>pro-nuclear</i>	<i>pro-democracy</i>
re-	<i>renew</i>	<i>replay</i>
semi-	<i>semi-final</i>	<i>semicircle</i>
super-	<i>super-rich</i>	<i>supermarket</i>
under-	<i>underpaid</i>	<i>underweight</i>

Nota che non esistono regole precise sull'uso del trattino o 'hyphen'. Occorre osservare come vengono formate le parole ogni volta che si trovano e usare il dizionario.

1 Completa i titoli di giornale usando i prefissi dei riquadri.

anti over multi semi

0 **20% of teenagers are over weight**

1 **100 ARRESTED IN -WAR DEMONSTRATION**

2 **Teenage entrepreneur was -millionaire by 16**

3 **United reach -final**

over pre re super under mini

4 Six injured in school bus crash

5 -rich? Only if you have \$10 billion

6 20-YEAR-OLD MURDER -EXAMINED BY POLICE

7 -match fighting between fans delays kick-off

8 ' paid and worked,' claim nurses

2 Osserva le figure, poi completa le frasi usando i prefissi e le parole dei riquadri.

mis pro re post

democracy war new translated



0 It's mistranslated.

1 It's about Europe.

2 It's a demonstration.

3 You need to your membership.

3 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa i prefissi *anti-*, *mis-*, *pre-* o *re-*.

0 The software is already installed.

The software is installed.

1 You need to start the computer again.

You need to the computer.

2 The games are already loaded.

The games are

3 You need some software to protect you against viruses.

You need some software.

4 You need to install the program again.

You need to the program.

5 I typed the email address incorrectly.

I the email address.



4 Riscrivi le frasi in modo che il significato non cambi. Usa il prefisso negativo corretto.

0 It's not comfortable. It's uncomfortable.

1 It isn't alcoholic.

2 She isn't experienced.

3 It's not legal.

4 It's not usual.

5 I don't agree.

6 It wasn't expected.

7 It's not possible.

8 It never stops.

9 He's not honest.

10 It's not regular.

11 They aren't friendly.

12 It's not accurate.

He's the guitarist. She's very adventurous. It's going to be legalized.

A Uso e forma

I suffissi trasformano una parola in un'altra parte del discorso (per esempio nome → aggettivo, verbo → nome ecc.). Non esistono regole precise che dicano quali suffissi aggiungere alle parole, quindi la cosa migliore è imparare le parole una per una. Occorre a volte cambiare la fine di una parola quando si aggiunge un suffisso. Per esempio: *happy* → *happiness*, *intelligent* → *intelligence*. I suffissi più comuni sono elencati di seguito.

B Suffissi per la formazione dei nomi

-er/-or	<i>driver teacher actor director</i>
-ist	<i>guitarist journalist scientist</i>
-ant/-ent	<i>accountant attendant student</i>
-ian/-an	<i>Italian politician Republican</i>
-ee	<i>employee interviewee trainee</i>
-ess	<i>actress hostess lioness</i>
-ness	<i>happiness illness politeness</i>
-ment	<i>argument employment government</i>
-tion/-sion	<i>production decision discussion</i>
-ation/-ition	<i>invitation competition opposition</i>
-ence/-ance	<i>intelligence preference insurance</i>
-ty/-ity/-iety	<i>certainty community variety</i>
-ism	<i>terrorism vegetarianism</i>



Nota che il suffisso *-less* equivale a 'senza' che in italiano va prima del nome al quale si riferisce.
This sentence is meaningless.
 Questa frase è senza significato.

C Suffissi per la formazione di aggettivi

-able/-ible	<i>comfortable edible valuable</i>
-ive	<i>attractive informative protective</i>
-y	<i>angry hairy sunny</i>
-ish	<i>childish stylish</i>
-ous	<i>adventurous religious spacious</i>
-ly	<i>friendly lively</i>
-ic	<i>democratic romantic scientific</i>
-ful	<i>successful useful wonderful</i>
-less	<i>careless hopeless useless</i>
-al	<i>coastal criminal professional</i>
-ing	<i>amazing surprising tiring</i>

Nota che le parole scritte in *-ise* e *-ize* sono generalmente accettabili, sebbene *-ise* sia più comune nel British English e *-ize* sia più comune nell'American English. Comunque, ricorda che alcune parole sono sempre scritte con *-ise* o con *-ize* (*exercise, surprise, prize* ecc.)

D Suffissi per la formazione di verbi

-ise/-ize	<i>legalize standardize terrorize</i>
-en	<i>lengthen lighten widen</i>
-ify	<i>clarify glorify justify</i>
-ate	<i>anticipate complicate discriminate</i>

E Suffissi per la formazione di avverbi

-ly/-ally	<i>slowly suddenly automatically</i>
-----------	--------------------------------------

► Vedi unità 140 per dettagli sulla formazione di aggettivi che terminano in *-ed* e *-ing*.

► Vedi unità 143 per dettagli sulla formazione di aggettivi da nomi e verbi.

1 Chi sono queste persone? Completa le frasi aggiungendo un suffisso alle parole del riquadro.

assist guitar interview present science sing



0 He's a scientist.



2 She's a He's a



1 She's a shop



3 She's a TV He's an

2 Completa le parole con il suffisso corretto.

A How was the concert?

B ⁰Unbelievable ! The best gig I've ever been to. They played all my favourite songs and the band, especially the ¹ drum..... , were ²amaz..... .

A Romeo forgot my birthday again – he's ³use !

B Well, Brad gave me a dozen red roses for my birthday.

A Nice!

B Yes, he can be quite ⁴roman..... at times.

A Two-nil down, one player sent off, ten minutes to go. It's ⁵hope..... !

B It's not over yet. Anything's possible.

A The website's good, very ⁶inform..... , but it's a bit complicated to navigate.

B OK, I'll ⁷simpl..... it.

A And I do like the background colour, but it's a bit too dark.

B No problem. I can ⁸light..... it.

A The ⁹govern..... is thinking of making some drugs legal. What do you think?

B Well, I know there's been a lot of ¹⁰discuss..... about it recently, but as far as I'm concerned no drugs should be ¹¹legal..... . Using drugs is stupid and ¹²crim..... , end of story.

3 Completa le frasi con le parole del riquadro dopo aver aggiunto i suffissi corretti.

happy ill terror decide / elect religion / discriminate style / space / comfort

0 The US president says that terrorism is the world's biggest threat.

1 Hollywood star Cary Jones has died after a year-long

2 Money can buy, according to year-long study.

3 A new law has been introduced to stop by employers.

4 Today is time for voters as day arrives.

5 The new solar-powered supercar is, and and costs \$2 million!

Appendice

Appendice 1

Regole ortografiche

1 Nomi plurali

i La maggior parte dei nomi forma il plurale aggiungendo -s.

book → books car → cars
house → houses student → students

ii I nomi che terminano in -s, -ss, -sh, -ch e -x, aggiungono -es.

box → boxes bus → buses
church → churches dish → dishes
glass → glasses

iii Alcuni nomi che terminano in -o aggiungono -es.

hero → heroes potato → potatoes
tomato → tomatoes

Ma la maggior parte dei nomi che terminano in -o aggiungono -s.

kilo → kilos photo → photos
piano → pianos radio → radios
studio → studios zoo → zoos

iv I nomi che terminano in -fe -fe sostituiscono -fo -fe con -ves.

knife → knives leaf → leaves
life → lives

v I nomi che terminano in consonante + y sostituiscono la y con -ies.

city → cities country → countries
factory → factories lorry → lorries
story → stories

Ma i nomi che terminano in vocale + y aggiungono soltanto -s.

chimney → chimneys key → keys
monkey → monkeys

vi Alcuni nomi formano il plurale in modo del tutto irregolare.

appendix → appendices cactus → cacti
child → children crisis → crises
deer → deer fish → fish (o fishes)
foot → feet goose → geese
man → men mouse → mice
ox → oxen person → people
series → series sheep → sheep
species → species tooth → teeth
woman → women

2 La 's' della terza persona singolare del present simple

i La terza persona singolare (*he, she, it*) della maggior parte dei verbi al present simple (forma affermativa) aggiunge -s.
ask → asks cost → costs like → likes
see → sees

ii I verbi che terminano in -o, -ss, -sh, -ch e -x aggiungono -es.
do → does go → goes miss → misses
mix → mixes teach → teaches
wash → washes

iii I verbi che terminano in consonante + y sostituiscono la y con -ies.

carry → carries fly → flies
study → studies try → tries

Ma i verbi che terminano in vocale + y aggiungono soltanto -s.

play → plays say → says

iv La terza persona singolare del present simple di *have* è *has*.

3 Il past simple -d/-ed

i Il past simple della maggior parte dei verbi regolari si forma aggiungendo -ed.

ask → asked miss → missed
wash → washed work → worked

ii I verbi regolari che terminano in -e aggiungono soltanto -d.
arrive → arrived continue → continued
save → saved

iii I verbi regolari che terminano in consonante + y sostituiscono la y con -ied.

marry → married study → studied
try → tried

Ma i verbi regolari che terminano in vocale + y aggiungono soltanto -ed.

play → played pray → prayed

iv Spesso si raddoppia la consonante finale prima di -ed. Vedi sezione 6.

4 La forma *-ing*

- i La maggior parte dei verbi aggiunge *-ing*.
ask → **asking** carry → **carrying**
play → **playing** watch → **watching**
- ii I verbi che terminano in *-e* eliminano la *-e*.
arrive → **arriving** continue → **continuing**
make → **making** save → **saving**
Ma i verbi che terminano in *-ee* aggiungono *-ing* senza modifiche.
agree → **agreeing** **see** → **seeing**
- iii I verbi che terminano in *-ie* sostituiscono *-ie* con *-ying*.
die → **dying** **lie** → **lying**
- iv Spesso si raddoppia la consonante finale prima di *-ing*. Vedi sezione 6.

5 Il comparativo e il superlativo degli aggettivi (*-er* e *-est*)

- i La maggior parte dei verbi aggiunge *-er* e *-est*.
fast → **faster** / **fastest** old → **older** / **oldest**
- ii Gli aggettivi che terminano in *-e* aggiungono *-r* e *-st*.
late → **later** / **latest** **nice** → **nicer** / **nicest**
- iii Gli aggettivi che terminano in consonante + *y* sostituiscono la *y* con *-ier* e *-iest*.
busy → **busier** / **busiest**
lucky → **luckier** / **luckiest**
- iv Spesso si raddoppia la consonante finale prima di *-er* o *-est*. Vedi sezione 6.

6 Il raddoppio consonantico

- i I nomi monosillabici che terminano per consonante + vocale + consonante raddoppiano la consonante prima di *-ed*, *-ing*, *-er*, *-est*, *-y*.
big → **bigger** get → **getting**
hot → **hottest** plan → **planned**
stop → **stopped** sun → **sunny**
Le uniche eccezioni sono *w*, *x* e *y*, che non si raddoppiano.
fix → **fixed** show → **Showed**
stay → **Stayed**
- ii I nomi con più di una sillaba in genere raddoppiano la consonante solo quando la sillaba finale è accentata.
begin → **beginning** occur → **occurred**
prefer → **preferred**
Se l'accento non cade sull'ultima sillaba, non si raddoppia la consonante.
happen → **happened** offer → **offered**
open → **opened**
L'unica eccezione a questa regola è rappresentata dalla lettera *l*, che si raddoppia nell'inglese britannico.
cancel → **cancelling** travel → **travelled**

Appendice 2

L'ortografia dell'inglese britannico e americano

Nella maggior parte dei casi non ci sono differenze nell'ortografia dell'inglese britannico e americano. Ci sono tuttavia delle eccezioni, le principali sono elencate qui di seguito.

Inglese britannico

-our
behaviour
colour
favourite
flavour
harbour
honour
neighbour
rumour

Inglese americano

-or
behavior
color
favorite
flavor
harbor
honor
neighbor
rumor

Italiano

comportamento
colore
preferito
sapore, aroma
porto
onore
vicino (di casa)
voce, pettegolezzo

Inglese britannico	Inglese americano	Italiano
-re	-er	
centre	center	centro
fibre	fiber	fibra
(kilo-/centi-/milli-)metre	(kilo-/centi-/milli-)meter	(chilo-/centi-/milli-)metro
theatre	theater	teatro
-ogue	-og	
catalogue	catalog	catalogo
dialogue	dialog	dialogo
-ce	-se	
defence	defense	difesa
licence (nome)	license (nome)	licenza, permesso
offence	offense	offesa
aeroplane	airplane	aeroplano
analyse	analyze	analizzare
cheque	check	assegno
enrol	enroll	iscrivere
grey	gray	grigio
jewellery	jewelry	gioielleria
lasagne	lasagna	lasagne
manoeuvre	maneuver	manovra
programme	program	programma
pyjamas	pajamas	pigiama
speciality	specialty	specialità
storey	story	piano (di un edificio)
tyre	tire	pneumatico

-ise o -ize?

In genere entrambe le ortografie sono accettate nell'inglese britannico, mentre nell'inglese americano di solito si utilizza *-ize*. Per esempio:

Inglese britannico	Inglese americano	Italiano
apologise o apologize	apologize	scusarsi
generalise o generalize	generalize	generalizzare
organise o organize	organize	organizzare
recognise o recognize	recognize	riconoscere

Alcune parole hanno soltanto la versione in *-ise* sia nell'inglese britannico che nell'inglese americano, per esempio *exercise, revise*.

-ll o -l?

In genere si usa *-ll* nell'inglese britannico e *-l* nell'inglese americano. Per esempio:

Inglese britannico	Inglese americano	Italiano
cancelled/cancellation	canceled/cancellation	cancellato/cancellazione
dialed/dialling	dialed/dialing	composto/comporre (di numero telefonico)
labelled/labelling	labeled/labeling	etichettare/etichettatura
travelled/travelling	traveled/traveling	viaggiato/viaggiante

Appendice 3

Forme contratte

Nell'inglese parlato e nei testi scritti informali si usa spesso la forma contratta, come *I'm*, *isn't*, *he'll* ecc., specialmente dopo i pronomi personali soggetto. Nella forma scritta si usa un apostrofo (') per indicare che una parte della parola è stata omessa. Le forme contratte più comuni sono:

i Forme contratte dei verbi ausiliari

Forma contratta	Forma completa	Esempio
'm	am	<i>I'm Italian.</i> <i>I'm working.</i>
's	is	<i>He's British.</i> <i>It's raining.</i>
're	are	<i>You're late.</i> <i>We're learning English.</i>
've	have	<i>I've got a new car.</i> <i>We've been to the park.</i>
's	has	<i>She's got long hair.</i> <i>He's had dinner.</i>
'll	will	<i>I'll see you tonight.</i> <i>We'll arrive at 7.30.</i>
'd	had	<i>They'd already left when I arrived.</i>
'd	would	<i>I'd like to go.</i> <i>I'd prefer coffee.</i>

Si usano alcune di queste forme:

Dopo le parole interrogative

Where's my bag? ('s = is)
What's happened? ('s = has)
When's the exam? ('s = is)
Who'll be there? ('ll = will)
Who'd like a drink? ('d = would)

Dopo *that/there/here*

That's a good idea. ('s = is)
There's a party tonight. ('s = is)
There'll be lots of food. ('ll = will)
Here's the bus. ('s = is)

Dopo i nomi

The new school's open. ('s = is)
Jenny's just got married. ('s = has)

ii Forme contratte del verbo ausiliare + *not*

Forma contratta	Forma completa	Esempio
isn't	is not	<i>He isn't here.</i> <i>It isn't raining.</i>
aren't	are not	<i>You aren't listening.</i> <i>They aren't ready.</i>
don't	do not	<i>I don't like coffee.</i> <i>We don't want to go.</i>
doesn't	does not	<i>Sam doesn't like football.</i> <i>It doesn't work.</i>
didn't	did not	<i>I didn't see you last night.</i> <i>They didn't win.</i>
haven't	have not	<i>I haven't got a car.</i> <i>They haven't finished.</i>
hasn't	has not	<i>She hasn't got a pen.</i> <i>It's hasn't rained for days.</i>
hadn't	had not	<i>I hadn't finished lunch when you arrived.</i>
won't	will not	<i>I won't be late.</i> <i>She won't help me.</i>
wouldn't	would not	<i>If I were you, I wouldn't do that.</i>
can't	cannot	<i>I can't speak French.</i> <i>He can't drive.</i>
couldn't	could not	<i>I couldn't find my keys this morning.</i>
shouldn't	should not	<i>You shouldn't smoke.</i>
mustn't	must not	<i>You mustn't be late.</i>

Notare che ci sono due forme contratte per *is not* e *are not*.

He isn't here. o *He's not here.* = *He is not here.*

We aren't ready. o *We're not ready.* = *We are not ready.*

iii Let's

Si usa 's al posto di *us* nell'espressione *Let's ...*

Let's go for a pizza. *Let's watch TV.*

Appendice 4

Lettera maiuscola

Qui di seguito sono elencate alcuni degli usi principali della lettera maiuscola in inglese.

- i Si usa la lettera maiuscola all'inizio di una frase.

My brother lives in Rome. He's a teacher.

- ii Il pronomo soggetto *I* è sempre maiuscolo.

David and I went to the cinema.

- iii Si usa la lettera maiuscola per i nomi di persona, di luoghi geografici, nazionalità, lingue, organizzazioni, compagnie, titoli di film e libri, riviste, quotidiani ecc.

My name is Roberto. I live in Rome. I'm Italian.

I speak Italian and English. My favourite team is Juventus.

My sister works for the United Nations.

My favourite film is The Lord of the Rings.

I read Time magazine every week.

- iv Si usa la lettera maiuscola per i giorni della settimana, i mesi, le ricorrenze religiose e nazionali, i periodi storici.

Today is Friday. My birthday is in April. I love Christmas.

We're studying the Middle Ages at school.

- v Si usa la lettera maiuscola per la maggior parte delle abbreviazioni.

My sister works for the UN. I watch the BBC.

Appendice 5

Strutture verbali

Alcuni verbi possono essere usati con o senza complemento oggetto: dipende dal significato che assume il verbo nel contesto della frase.

- i Verbo + *-ing*

adore avoid begin (don't) bother can't face can't help can't imagine can't resist
can't stand can't stop consider continue delay deny describe detest dislike don't mind
dread enjoy fancy feel like finish hate involve keep (on) like look forward to love
mention miss postpone/put off practise recommend regret remember resent risk
spend time start stop/give up suggest try waste time

I enjoy cooking. I don't feel like going out. I spent two hours doing my work.

- ii Verbo + complemento oggetto + *-ing*

can't stand dislike hate hear (can't) imagine keep (don't) like (don't) mind notice
remember risk see stop

I can hear someone singing. I saw Jenny coming out of a shop.

- iii Verbo + infinito

agree aim appear arrange ask attempt begin can't afford choose claim continue
decide demand deserve expect fail forget hope intend learn (how) manage need offer
pay plan prefer prepare pretend promise refuse regret remember seem start tend
threaten try vote (can't) wait want would like

We expect to arrive at six-thirty. I offered to help them. I want to go.

iv Verbo + complemento oggetto + infinito

advise allow ask beg bribe cause challenge choose dare enable encourage expect force help inspire invite leave need order persuade remind teach (how) tell train trust urge want warn would like would prefer

He encouraged me to take the exam. She wanted me to help her.

Appendice 6

Aggettivo e nome + infinito

Qui di seguito sono elencati alcuni degli aggettivi e dei nomi più comuni che possono essere seguiti dall'infinito.

i Aggettivo + infinito

amazed anxious ashamed careful certain crazy delighted determined difficult disappointed easy essential fortunate glad good great happy important (im)possible (un)likely (un)lucky necessary normal pleased proud ready reluctant ridiculous sad safe shocked sorry surprised upset willing

The camera is easy to use. It's important to work hard. Are you willing to help?

ii Nome + infinito

chance decision desire idea mistake need opportunity time way

I've got a chance to study in the USA. It's time to go.

Appendice 7

Verbi irregolari: Passato e participio passato

forma base	passato	participio passato	forma base	passato	participio passato
be	was/were	been	learn	learnt/learned	learnt/learned
beat	beat	beaten	leave	left	left
become	became	become	lend	lent	lent
begin	began	begun	let	let	let
bite	bit	bitten	lose	lost	lost
blow	blew	blown	make	made	made
break	broke	broken	mean	meant	meant
bring	brought	brought	meet	met	met
build	built	built	pay	paid	paid
burn	burnt	burnt	put	put	put
buy	bought	bought	read	read	read
catch	caught	caught	ring	rang	rung
choose	chose	chosen	run	ran	run
come	came	come	say	said	said
cost	cost	cost	see	saw	seen
cut	cut	cut	sell	sold	sold
dig	dug	dug	send	sent	sent
do	did	done	shine	shone	shone
draw	drew	drawn	show	showed	shown/showed
dream	dreamt/ dreamed	dreamt/ dreamed	shut	shut	shut
drink	drank	drunk	sing	sang	sung
drive	drove	driven	sit	sat	sat
eat	ate	eaten	sleep	slept	slept
fall	fell	fallen	smell	smelt/smelled	smelt/smelled
feel	felt	felt	speak	spoke	spoken
fight	fought	fought	spell	spelt/spelled	spelt/spelled
find	found	found	spend	spent	spent
fly	flew	flown	stand	stood	stood
forget	forgot	forgotten	steal	stole	stolen
forgive	forgave	forgiven	sweep	swept	swept
get	got	got	swim	swam	swum
give	gave	given	take	took	taken
go	went	gone/been	teach	taught	taught
grow	grew	grown	tear	tore	torn
have	had	had	tell	told	told
hear	heard	heard	think	thought	thought
hide	hid	hidden	throw	threw	thrown
hit	hit	hit	understand	understood	understood
hold	held	held	wake	woke	woken
hurt	hurt	hurt	wear	wore	worn
keep	kept	kept	win	won	won
know	knew	known	write	wrote	written

PET vocabulary list

Travel and transport

accommodation	alloggio	crossroads	incrocio
(aero)plane	aereo	currency	valuta
(bi)cycle/bike	bicicletta, bici	customs	dogana
abroad	all'estero	customs officer	guardia di finanza
airline	compagnia aerea	cycle	andare in bicicletta
airport	aeroporto	cyclist	ciclista
ambulance	ambulanza	deck (of ship)	ponte (di nave)
announcement	annuncio	delay	ritardo
arrive	arrivare	deliver	consegnare
arrival	arrivo	depart	partire
at sea	in mare	departure	partenza
backpack	zaino	destination	destinazione
bag	borsa	direction	direzione
baggage	bagaglio	document(s)	documento
board	imbarcarsi	dollar	dollaro
boarding pass	carta d'imbarco	double room	stanza doppia
boat	barca	drive	guidare
border	confine	driving licence	patente di guida
brochure	opuscolo	due	previsto
bus	autobus	duty-free	franchigia, duty free
bus station	stazione degli autobus	embassy	ambasciata
bus stop	fermata dell'autobus	euro	euro
by air	via aerea	exchange rate	tasso di cambio
by land	via terra	facilities	attrezzature
by rail	per ferrovia	fare	tariffa
by road	per strada	ferry	traghetti
by sea	per mare	flight	volo
cab	taxi	fly	volare
cabin	cabina	foreign	straniero
canal	canale	fuel	carburante
capital city	città capitale	gate	cancello
car	automobile	guide	guida
car alarm	allarme auto	guidebook	guida turistica
car park	parcheggio	guest	ospite
case	valigia	guesthouse	pensione
catch	prendere	handlebars	maniglie
change	cambiare	harbour	porto
charter	charter	helicopter	elicottero
check in	fare il check-in	hitchhike	fare l'autostop
check out	saldare il conto	hotel	hotel
check-in	check in	hovercraft	hovercraft
coach	corriera	hydrofoil	aliscafo
confirm	confermare	immigration	immigrazione
consul	console	inn	locanda
consulate	consolato	interpret	fare l'interprete, interpretare
crossing	passaggio pedonale/traversata	interpreter	interprete

jet	avigetto, jet	terminal	terminale
journey	viaggio	tour	visita, giro turistico
land	atterrare	tourist	turista
lorry	camion	traffic	traffico
lost property	oggetti smarriti	traffic jam	ingorgo stradale
luggage	bagagli	traffic lights	semaforo
map	carta geografica, mappa	train	treno
motorbike	moto	tram	tram
motorcycle	motocicletta	translate	tradurre
motorway	autostrada	translation	traduzione
nationality	nazionalità	traveller's cheque	traveller's cheque
on board	a bordo	trip	viaggio, gita
on business	per affari	tunnel	tunnel, galleria
on holiday	in vacanza	tyre/tire	pneumatico
on foot	a piedi	underground	metropolitana
on time	in orario	underground train	treno della metropolitana
operator	operatore, centralinista	unleaded	senza piombo
overtake	sorpassare	vehicle	veicolo
overnight	notturno	visa	visto
parking space	parcheggio	visit	visitare
passenger	passeggero	visitor	visitatore, turista
passport	passaporto	voyage	viaggio (per mare)
path	sentiero	waiting room	sala d'aspetto
petrol	benzina	windscreen	parabrezza
petrol pump	pompa di benzina		
petrol station	stazione di servizio		
pilot	pilota		
platform	binario		
railway	ferrovia		
reception	reception (di hotel)		
reservation	prenotazione		
reserve	riservare		
return	ritorno		
ride	corsa		
road sign	segnaletica stradale		
roundabout	rotatoria		
route	percorso, itinerario		
sail	salpare, navigare		
scooter	motorino		
seat belt	cintura di sicurezza		
(bus) service	servizio (autobus)		
ship	nave		
sightseeing	visita turistica		
signpost	cartello stradale		
single room	stanza singola		
speed	velocità		
subway	metropolitana		
suitcase	valigia		
take off	decollare		
taxi	taxi		
taxi rank	posteggio per taxi		

Sport

athlete	atleta
athletics	atletica
ball	palla
baseball	baseball
basketball	basket, pallacanestro
bat	mazza
boxing	pugilato
champion	campione
changing room	spogliatoio
climbing	scalata
coach	allenatore
competition	gara
court	campo
cycling	ciclismo
dancing	danza
diving	immersione
enter	partecipare a
fishing	pesca
fitness	forma fisica
football	calcio, pallone
game	gioco
goal	gol
golf	golf
gym	palestra

gymnastics
 high jump
 hit
 hockey
 horse-riding
 ice hockey
 jogging
 join in
 kick
 locker (room)
 long jump
 match
 motorcycling
 motor-racing
 net
 point(s)
 practice
 practise
 prize
 race
 race track
 racing
 racket
 reserve
 riding
 rugby
 running
 sail
 sailing
 score
 season
 shoot
 shooting
 shorts
 skiing
 squash
 stadium
 surfing
 swimming
 table-tennis
 take part
 team
 tennis
 track
 tracksuit
 trainer(s)
 train
 training
 volleyball
 water skiing

ginnastica
 salto in alto
 colpire
 hockey
 equitazione
 hockey su ghiaccio
 jogging, andare a correre
 iscriversi a
 dar calci a
 spogliatoio
 salto in lungo
 partita
 motociclismo
 corse automobilistiche
 rete
 punto
 esercizio
 fare esercizio
 premio
 gara
 pista da corsa
 corse
 racchetta
 riserva
 equitazione
 rugby
 corsa
 vela, praticare la vela
 vela
 punteggio
 stagione
 sparare
 tirassegno
 pantaloncini corti
 sci
 squash
 stadio
 surf
 nuoto
 ping pong
 partecipare a
 squadra
 tennis
 pista
 tuta da ginnastica
 scarpe da ginnastica
 allenarsi
 allenamento
 pallavolo
 sci aquatico

Hobbies and leisure

barbecue
 camera
 camp
 campsite
 camping
 chess
 club
 collect
 collector
 collection
 computer
 cruise
 dancing
 doll
 drawing
 facilities
 fan
 fiction
 keep fit
 gallery
 guitar
 hire
 jogging
 join in
 keen on
 member
 membership
 model
 museum
 music
 opening hours
 painting
 picnic
 playing cards
 playground
 quiz
 sculpture
 sightseeing
 slide
 swings
 sunbathe
 tent

barbecue, grigliata
 macchina fotografica
 accamparsi, campeggio
 campeggio
 campeggiare
 scacchi
 circolo, club
 collezionare
 collezionista
 collezione
 computer
 crociera
 ballo
 bambola
 disegno
 attrezature
 tifoso
 narrativa
 tenersi in forma
 galleria (d'arte)
 chitarra
 noleggiare
 jogging, andare a correre
 iscriversi a
 entusiasta di
 socio
 iscrizione
 modello
 museo
 musica
 orario d'apertura
 dipingere, dipinto
 picnic
 giocare a carte
 campo giochi
 quiz
 scultura
 visita turistica
 scivolo
 altalena
 prendere il sole
 tenda

Work and jobs

(travel) agent	agente di viaggio
actor	attore
actress	attrice
air hostess	assistente di volo

application	domanda	factory	fabbrica
apply	fare domanda	farm	azienda agricola
architect	architetto	greengrocer	fruttivendolo
army	esercito	grocer	droghiere
artist	artista	guard	guardia
assistant	assistente	hairdresser	parrucchiere
athlete	atleta	hard-working	gran lavoratore
banker	banchiere	housewife	casalinga
boss	capo	housework	lavori di casa
businessman	uomo d'affari	instructor	istruttore
businesswoman	donna d'affari	interpreter	interprete
butcher	macellaio	journalist	giornalista
cameraman	operatore televisivo	judge	giudice
candidate	candidato	laboratory	laboratorio
canteen	mensa	labourer	manovale
captain	capitano	lawyer	avvocato
career	carriera	lecturer	docente universitario
carpenter	falegname	librarian	bibliotecario
chef	chef, cuoco	manager	direttore
chemist	farmacista	mechanic	meccanico
clerk	impiegato	model	modello
colleague	collega	musician	musicista
comedian	attore comico	newsagent	giornalaio
company	ditta, azienda	novelist	romanziere
conference	conferenza	nurse	infermiere
consul	console	occupation	occupazione
consulate	consolato	office	ufficio
contract	contratto	officer (e.g. prison/police)	agente
cook	cuoco	operator	operatore, centralinista
crew	equipaggio	out of work	disoccupato
customs officer	guardia di finanza	owner	proprietario
CV	curriculum	part time	part time
dancer	ballerino	pension	pensione
dentist	dentista	pensioner	pensionato
department	dipartimento	photographer	fotografo
designer	stilista	physician	medico
detective	investigatore	pilot	pilota
diploma	diploma	poet	poeta
director	regista	policeman	poliziotto
disc jockey	disc jockey	police officer	agente di polizia
diver	tuffatore	policewoman	poliziotta
doctor	medico	politician	politico
employ	assumere	porter	facchino
employee	impiegato	postman	postino
employer	datore di lavoro	presenter (e.g. TV/radio)	presentatore
employment	lavoro	president	presidente
engineer	ingegnere, tecnico	priest	prete
farmer	agricoltore	profession	professione
film star	star, divo	professional	professionale
fireman	vigile del fuoco		
full time	a tempo pieno		

professor	professore	canteen	mensa
(computer) programmer	programmatore	carrot	carota
publisher	editore, casa editrice	cauliflower	cavolfiore
quit	lasciare, andarsene	celery	sedano
qualification	qualifica	cereal	cereali
reporter	cronista	cheese	formaggio
retire	andare in pensione	chicken	pollo
retirement	pensione	chips	patatine fritte
sailor	marinaio	chocolate	cioccolato
salary	stipendio	chopsticks	bastoncini cinesi
sales assistant	commesso	cocoa	cacao
salesman	rappresentante	coconut	noce di cocco
saleswoman	rappresentante	cod	merluzzo
scientist	scienziato	coffee	caffè
secretary	segretaria	coke	Coca
security guard	guardia giurata	cook	cucinare
servant	domestico	cookie	biscotto
shop assistant	commesso	corn	mais
shopkeeper	negoziante	cream	panna
soldier	soldato	cucumber	cetriolo
staff	personale	cup	tazza
steward(ess)	steward	curry	curry
taxi driver	tassista	dessert	dessert
teacher	insegnante	diet	dieta
trade	commerciare	dinner	cena
tradesman	commercianti	dish	piatto
unemployed	disoccupato	drink	bere
wage(s)	salario	duck	anatra
waiter/waitress	cameriere	eat	mangiare
workman	operaio	egg	uovo

Food and drink

apple	mela	French fries	patatine fritte
bake	cuocere al forno	fresh	fresco
banana	banana	fruit	frutta
barbecue	barbecue, arrostire sul barbecue	fruit juice	succo di frutta
bean	fagiolo	fry	friggere
biscuit	biscotto	frying pan	padella per friggere
bitter	amaro	glass	bicchiere
boil	bollire	grape	uva
bowl	scodella	grill	griglia, cuocere alla griglia
bread	pane	ham	prosciutto
breakfast	colazione	honey	miele
buffet	buffet	hot	caldo
butter	burro	(be) hungry	(avere) fame
cabbage	cavolo	ice cream	gelato
cake	torta	ingredients	ingredienti
can (of beans)	scatola (di fagioli)	jam	marmellata
candy	caramella	jug	brocca

lamb	agnello	supper	cena
lemon	limone	sweet	dolce
lemonade	limonata	tart	crostata
lettuce	lattuga	taste	assaggiare
loaf	pane, pagnotta	tea	tè
lunch	pranzo	(be) thirsty	(avere) sete
meat	carne	toast	pane tostato
melon	melone	tomato	pomodoro
menu	menu	turkey	tacchino
microwave	forno a microonde	vanilla	vaniglia
milk	latte	vegetable	verdura
mineral water	acqua minerale	vegetarian	vegetariano
mushroom	fungo		
mustard	senape		
oil	olio		
omelette	frittata, omelette		
onion	cipolla		
orange	arancia		
pan	padella		
pasta	pasta		
pastry	pasta sfoglia		
pea	pisello		
peanut	nocciolina		
pear	pera		
pepper	peperone		
pie	torta		
pizza	pizza		
plaice	platessa		
plate	piatto		
potato	patata		
raisin	uvetta		
recipe	ricetta		
refreshments	rinfreschi, ristoro		
rice	riso		
roast	arrostire, arrosto		
roll	panino		
salad	insalata		
salt	sale		
sandwich	tramezzino		
saucer	piattino		
sausage	salsiccia		
slice	fetta		
snack	snack		
soft drink	bevanda analcolica		
soup	zuppa		
sour	amaro		
spinach	spinaci		
spoon	cucchiaio		
steak	bistecca		
strawberry	fragola		
sugar	zucchero		

Clothes and accessories

backpack	zaino
belt	cintura
blouse	camicetta
boot	stivale
bra	reggiseno
button	bottone
cap	berretto
cloth	tessuto, stoffa
(rain) coat	impermeabile
collar	colletto
cotton	cotone
dress	vestito da donna
dry cleaning	lavatura a secco
earring	orecchino
fashion	moda
fasten	allacciare
fit	andare bene
fold	piegare
glasses	occhiali
glove	guanto
go with	andare/stare bene con
handbag	borsa
handkerchief	fazzoletto
hat	cappello
jacket	giacca
jeans	jeans
jewellery	bigiotteria, gioielli
knit	lavorare a maglia
laundry	bucato
leather	di pelle
lipstick	rossetto
make-up	trucco
match	abbinare
material	materiale
old-fashioned	fuori moda
pants	mutande

pattern	disegno, motivo	bathroom	bagno
perfume	profumo	bed	letto
plastic	plastica	bedroom	camera da letto
pocket	tasca	bell	campanello
pullover	pullover	bin	cestino
put on	indossare, mettere	blanket	coperta
pyjamas	pigiama	blind	tenda avvolgibile
raincoat	impermeabile	block (of flats)	palazzo
shirt	camicia	(notice) board	tabellone
shoe	scarpa	bookshelf	scaffale
shorts	pantaloncini corti	brick	mattone
silk	seta	brush	spazzola
size	taglia	bucket	secchio
skirt	gonna	bulb	lampadina
sleeve	manica	candle	candela
sleeveless	senza manica	carpet	moquette
socks	calzini	cassette player	mangiacassette
stockings	calze, collant	ceiling	soffitto
suit	vestito da uomo	cellar	scantinato, cantina
sweater	maglione	central heating	riscaldamento
sweatshirt	felpa	chair	sedia
swimming costume	costume da bagno	channel (with	
swimsuit	costume da bagno	TV)	canale
T-shirt	maglietta	chest of drawers	cassettone
take off	togliere	chimney	camino
tie	cravatta	cloakroom	bagno, guardaroba
tights	collant	clock	orologio (da muro)
tracksuit	tuta da ginnastica	coal	carbone
trainers	scarpe da ginnastica	computer	computer
trousers	pantaloni	cooker	fornello
try on	provare	corkscrew	cavatappi
umbrella	ombrelllo	corridor	corridoio
underwear	biancheria intima	cottage	casetta
uniform	divisa	cupboard	credenza
wear (out)	consumare	curtain	tenda
wool(len)	lana, di lana	cushion	cuscino

House and home

accommodation	alloggio	dining room	sala da pranzo
address	indirizzo	dish	piatto
air-conditioning	aria condizionata	dishwasher	lavastoviglie
alarm (fire/car)	allarme (incendio, auto)	door	porta
alarm clock	sveglia	downstairs	al piano di sotto
antique	pezzo d'antiquariato	drawer	cassetto
apartment	appartamento	dustbin	bidone dell'immondizia
armchair	poltrona	duvet	piumone
balcony	terrazzo	DVD	DVD
basement	seminterrato	electric/al	elettrico
basin	lavabo	entrance	entrata
bath	(vasca da) bagno	fan	ventilatore

flatmate	coinquilino	plug	spina
floor	pavimento	plug in	inserire la spina
freezer	congelatore	property	proprietà
fridge	frigorifero	radio	radio
frying-pan	padella per friggere	refrigerator	frigorifero
furnished	ammobigliato	rent	affitto
furniture	mobili	roof	tetto
garage	garage	room	stanza
garden	giardino	roommate	compagno di stanza
gas	gas	rubbish	spazzatura
gate	cancello	seat	sedia
grill	grill	sheet	lenzuolo
ground (floor)	(piano) terra	shelf	scaffale
hall	ingresso	shower	doccia
handle	maniglia	sink	lavandino
heat	riscaldare	sitting room	salotto
hedge	siepe	sofa	divano
hi-fi	impianto hi-fi	stairs	scale
house	casa	step	gradino
housewife	casalinga	switch	interruttore
housework	lavori di casa	table	tavolo
iron	ferro da stiro	table cloth	tovaglia
jug	caraffa	tap	rubinetto
kettle	bollitore	telephone	telefono
kitchen	cucina	television	televisore
ladder	scala (attrezzo)	toilet	gabinetto
lamp	lampada	tool	attrezzo
landlady	padrona di casa	towel	asciugamano
landlord	padrone di casa	tower	torre
laptop (computer)	portatile (computer)	toy	giocattolo
laundry	bucato	TV (screen/set)	(schermo) televisore
lavatory	gabinetto	upstairs	al piano di sopra
lawn	prato	vase	vaso
lift	ascensore	video	video
light	luce	video recorder	videoregistratore
(clothes) line	filo (per stendere la biancheria)	videotape	videocassetta
living-room	salotto	wall	parete
lock	serratura	wash-basin	lavandino
lounge	salotto	washing machine	lavatrice
microwave	microonde	wastepaper basket	cestino
mirror	specchio	WC	gabinetto
mug	tazza	window	finestra
neighbour	vicino di casa		
oil	olio		
oven	forno		
pan	padella		
path	sentiero		
pillow	cuscino		
pipe	tubo		
plant	pianta		

The natural world

animal	animale
autumn	autunno
beach	spiaggia
bird	uccello
branch	ramo
bush	cespuglio, boscaglia

cave	grotta	sunset	tramonto
cliff	scogliera	sunshine	(luce del) sole
climate	clima	tiger	tigre
coal	carbone	tree	albero
coast	costa	valley	valle
continent	continente	waterfall	cascata
countryside	campagna	waves	onde
desert	deserto	wild	selvatico
dolphin	delfino	wildlife	animali selvatici
duck	anatra	winter	inverno
earth	terra	zebra	zebra
elephant	elefante		
environment	ambiente		
farmland	terra agricola		
field	campo		
fish	pesce		
flood	alluvione		
flower	fiore		
forest	foresta		
freeze	gelare		
giraffe	giraffa		
hill	collina		
lake	lago		
land	terra		
leaf	foglia		
lion	leone		
monkey	scimmia		
moon	luna		
mountain	montagna		
mouse/mice	topo/topi		
nature	natura		
planet	pianeta		
plant	pianta		
pollution	inquinamento		
rabbit	coniglio		
rainforest	foresta equatoriale		
range	catena		
river	fiume		
rock	roccia		
sand	sabbia		
scenery	paesaggio		
shark	squalo		
sky	cielo		
soil	terreno		
spring	primavera		
star	stella		
stone	pietra		
summer	estate		
sun	sole		
sunlight	luce del sole		
sunrise	alba		

Weather

blow	soffiare
centigrade	centigrado
cloud	nuvola
cloudy	nuvoloso
cold	freddo
cool	fresco
degrees	gradi
dry	secco
fog	nebbia
foggy	nebbioso
forecast	previsione
frost	gelata
gale	bufera
get wet	bagnarsi
heat	calore
hot	caldo
ice	ghiaccio
icy	ghiacciato, gelato
lightning	lampo, fulmine
mild	mite
rain	pioggia
shower	acquazzone
snow	neve
snowfall	nevicate
storm	temporale
sun	sole
sunny	soleggiato
sunshine	(luce del) sole
temperature	temperatura
thermometer	termometro
thunder	tuono
thunderstorm	temporale
wet	piovoso
wind	vento
windy	ventoso

Entertainment and media

act	recitare	magic	magico
action	azione	music	musica
actor	attore	news	notizia
actress	attrice	newspaper	giornale
ad(vert)	pubblicità	opera	opera
advertisement	pubblicità	orchestra	orchestra
adventure	avventura	performance	rappresentazione
admission	ingresso	play	opera teatrale
article	articolo	poem	poesia
audience	spettatori	pop music	musica pop
ballet	balletto	programme	programma
band	gruppo musicale	quiz	quiz
book	libro	recording	registrazione
camera	macchina fotografica	review	recensione
cartoon	cartone animato	rock music	musica rock
cassette (player)	registratore	romantic	romantico
CD (player)	(lettore) CD	row	fila
CD-Rom	CD-Rom	scene	scena
channel	canale	screen	schermo
cinema	cinema	series	serie
circus	circo	stage	palco
classical music	musica classica	star	stella
comedy	commedia	studio	studio
comedian	attore comico	television	televisore
comic	fumetto	thriller	giallo (romanzo, film)
commercial	pubblicità, spot	venue	luogo
concert	concerto	video	video
costume	costume		
dance	ballo		
disc	disco		
disco	discoteca		
display	mostra		
documentary	documentario		
drama	opera teatrale		
DVD (player)	(lettore) DVD		
entrance	ingresso		
exhibition	mostra		
exit	uscita		
festivals	festival		
film	film		
filmmaker	produttore cinematografico		
film star	divo		
folk music	musica popolare		
hero	eroe		
hit song	single di successo		
interview	intervistare		
interviewer	intervistatore		
interval	intervallo		
jazz music	musica jazz		
magazine	rivista		

Education

absent	assente
advanced	avanzato
arithmetic	aritmetica
art	arte
bell	campanella
biology	biologia
blackboard	lavagna
board	bacheca
break(time)	intervallo
break up	iniziare le vacanze
certificate	certificato
chemistry	chimica
class	classe, anno
classroom	aula, classe
college	istituto parauniversitario
composition	tema
corridor	corridoio
course	corso
curriculum	programma di studi
degree	laurea
desk	scrivania

dictionary	vocabolario	earache	mal d'orecchi
diploma	diploma	emergency	emergenza
drama	teatro (materia scolastica)	feel better	sentirsi meglio
economics	economia	feel ill	sentirsi male
educate	educare	feel sick	avere la nausea
elementary	elementare	fever	febbre
essay	tema	flu	influenza
geography	geografia	get better	migliorare
history	storia	get worse	peggiорare
handwriting	calligrafia	go jogging	andare a fare jogging
homework	compito per casa	gym	palestra
intermediate	intermedio	gymnastics	ginnastica
IT	informatica	headache	mal di testa
laboratory	laboratorio	hospital	ospedale
languages	lingue	hurt	far male
lesson	lezione	injure	ferire
mark	correggere	keep fit	mantenersi in forma
mathematics	matematica	medicine	medicina
math(s)	matematica	operate	operare
music	musica	operation	operazione
nature studies	scienze naturali	pill	pillola
notice board	bacheca	recover	riprendersi
photography	fotografia	run	correre
physics	fisica	sore throat	mal di gola
primary school	scuola elementare	stomach ache	mal di stomaco
qualification	qualifica	stress	stress
qualify	ottenere la qualifica	swim	nuotare
register	registro, appello	tablet	pastiglia
science	scienze	take exercise	fare esercizio fisico
secondary school	scuola media/superiore	temperature	temperatura, febbre
state school	scuola statale	walk	camminare
subject	materia	wound	ferita
study	studiare		
technology	tecnologia		

Health, medicine and exercise

accident	incidente
ache	dolore, fare male
ambulance	ambulanza
appointment	appuntamento
aspirin	aspirina
balance	equilibrio
bandage	benda
bend	piegare
break	rompere
clean	pulire
cut	tagliare
damage	danneggiare
diet	dieta
dressing	fasciatura

Colours

(dark/light)	(scuro/chiaro)
black	nero
blue	blu, azzurro
brown	marrone
gold	oro
green	verde
grey	grigio
orange	arancione
pink	rosa
purple	viola
red	rosso
silver	argento
yellow	giallo

Places: town and city

airport	aeroporto
bridge	ponte
bus station	stazione degli autobus
bus stop	fermata dell'autobus
car park	parcheggio
city centre	centro (della città)
corner	angolo
crossing	passaggio pedonale
crossroads	incrocio
fountain	fontana
market	mercato
park	parco
pavement	marciapiede
petrol station	stazione di servizio
playground	parco giochi
road	strada
roundabout	rotatoria
route	percorso
shopping centre	centro commerciale
signpost	segnaletica stradale
square	piazza
station	stazione
subway	metropolitana
taxi rank	posteggio per taxi
tunnel	tunnel, galleria
turning	svolta
underground	metropolitana
zoo	zoo

Buildings

apartment block/ block of flats	condominio
bookshop	libreria
café	caffè, bar
castle	castello
cathedral	cattedrale
church	chiesa
cinema	cinema
clinic	clinica
club	club, circolo
college	istituto parauniversitario
cottage	casetta
department store	centro commerciale
factory	fabbrica
gallery	galleria d'arte
guesthouse	pensione
house	casa
hospital	ospedale

hotel	hotel
kiosk	chiosco
library	biblioteca
mosque	moschea
museum	museo
office block	complesso di uffici
palace	palazzo
police station	stazione di polizia
post office	ufficio postale
prison	prigione
ruin	rovina
school	scuola
shop	negozi
sports centre	centro sportivo
stadium	stadio
supermarket	supermercato
swimming pool	piscina
theatre	teatro
tower	torre
university	università

Places: countryside

area	zona
bay	baia
beach	spiaggia
canal	canale
cliff	scogliera
desert	deserto
earth	terra
farm	fattoria
field	campo
forest	foresta
harbour	porto
hill	collina
island	isola
lake	lago
land	terreno
motorway	autostrada
mountain	montagna
ocean	oceano
path	sentiero
port	porto
quay	banchina
railway	ferrovia
rainforest	foresta equatoriale
region	regione
river	fiume
rock	roccia
sand	sabbia
scenery	paesaggio

sea
seaside
sky
soil
stream
valley
village
waterfall
wood

mare
spiaggia
cielo
suolo
ruscello
valle
villaggio
cascata
bosco

Shopping

advertise
bill
book
buy
cash
change
cheap
cheque
choose
collect
complain
cost
credit card
dear
deposit
exchange
expensive
hire
inexpensive
luxury
money
order
pay
price
reasonable
receipt
reduce
reduced
rent
reserve
return
save
sell

reclamizzare
conto
libro
comprare
contante
resto, spiccioli
a buon mercato
assegno
scegliere
ritirare
reclamare
costo, costare
carta di credito
caro
aconto
scambio
costoso
noleggiare
poco costoso
di lusso
denaro
ordine
pagare
prezzo
ragionevole
ricevuta
abbassare
scontato
affittare
riservare
restituire
risparmiare
vendere

Services

bank
café
cinema
dentist
doctor
dry cleaner
gallery
garage
guest-house
hairdresser
hotel
library
museum
post office
restaurant
sports centre
swimming pool
theatre

Environment

bottle bank
climate change
gas (Am Eng)
litter
petrol
pollution
public transport
rubbish
rubbish bin
traffic
traffic jam

contenitore per la raccolta
 del vetro
 cambiamento climatico
 benzina
 immondizie
 benzina
 inquinamento
 trasporto pubblico
 spazzatura
 bidone della spazzatura
 traffico
 ingorgo stradale

Language

advanced
answer
argue
ask
beginner
chat
communicate
communication
elementary
email
grammar
intermediate
interpret

avanzato
 rispondere
 discutere
 chiedere
 principiante
 chiacchierare
 comunicare
 comunicazione
 elementare
 e-mail
 grammatica
 intermedio
 fare l'interprete

joke	scherzare	easy	facile
letter	lettera	embarrassed	imbarazzato
mean	significare	embarrassing	imbarazzante
meaning	significato	excited	entusiasta
mention	accennare	fantastic	fantastico
message	messaggio	fit in	forma
pronounce	pronunciare	(be) fond	(essere) appassionato
pronunciation	pronuncia	frightened	spaventato
question	domanda	funny	buffo, strano
say	dire	generous	generoso
sentence	frase	gentle	delicato
shout	gridare	glad	contento
speak	parlare	guilty	colpevole
talk	parlare	happy	felice
tell	dire	hard	duro
translate	tradurre	healthy	sano
translation	traduzione	intelligent	intelligente
vocabulary	lessico	jealous	geloso
word	parola	keen	entusiastico

Personal feelings, opinions and experiences (adjectives)

able	capace	easy	facile
(be) afraid	(avere) paura	embarrassed	imbarazzato
amazed	stupito	embarrassing	imbarazzante
amazing	incredibile	excited	entusiasta
amusing	divertente	fantastic	fantastico
angry	arrabbiato	fit in	forma
annoyed	irritato, seccato	(be) fond	(essere) appassionato
anxious	ansioso	frightened	spaventato
(be) ashamed	vergognarsi	funny	buffo, strano
awful	terribile	generous	generoso
bored	annoiato	gentle	delicato
boring	noioso	glad	contento
bossy	prepotente	guilty	colpevole
brave	coraggioso	happy	felice
brilliant	eccezionale, brillante	hard	duro
calm	tranquillo	healthy	sano
challenging	impegnativo	intelligent	intelligente
cheerful	allegro	jealous	geloso
clever	intelligente	keen	entusiastico
confident	sicuro di sè	lazy	pigro
crazy	matto	lucky	fortunato
cruel	crudele	mad	pazzo
curious	curioso	merry	allegro
delighted	lieto	miserable	infelice
depressed	depresso	negative	negativo
difficult	difficile	nervous	nervoso
disappointed	deluso	noisy	rumoroso
dizzy	vertiginoso	normal	normale
		old-fashioned	antiquato
		ordinary	ordinario
		original	originale
		patient	paziente
		personal	personale
		pleasant	piacevole
		positive	positivo
		punctual	puntuale
		realistic	realistico
		reasonable	ragionevole
		relaxed	rilassato
		reliable	affidabile
		rich	ricco
		rude	scortese
		sad	triste
		satisfied	soddisfatto
		serious	serio
		skilled	dotato
		slim	snello
		smart	elegante
		special	speciale
		strange	strano
		strong	forte

stupid	stupido	laptop (computer)	portatile
sure	sicuro	laser	laser
surprised	sorpreso	machine	macchina
terrible	terribile	message	messaggio
tired	stanco	mobile phone	telefonino, cellulare
true	vero	mouse	mouse
typical	tipico	mouse mat	tappetino
unable	incapace	network	rete
unusual	insolito	online	collegato
well	bene	operator	centralinista
wonderful	meraviglioso	parcel	pacco

Technology and communications

access	accesso	print	stampare
address	indirizzo	printer	stampante
airmail	posta area	program(me)	programma
by post	per posta	reply	rispondere
calculator	calcolatrice	ring	telefonare
call	chiamare	ring up	telefonare a
call back	richiamare	screen	schermo
CD (player)	(lettore) CD	software	software
CD-Rom	CD-Rom	switch off	spegnere
chat	ciattare	switch on	accendere
chat room	chat, chatroom	telephone	telefono
click	cliccare	text	mandare SMS
computer	computer	text message	SMS
connect	connettere	turn off	spegnere
connection	connessione	turn on	accendere
delete	cancellare		
dial	fare il numero (del telefono)		
dial up	dial-up		
digital	digitale		
directory	elenco telefonico		
disc/disk	disco		
DVD (player)	(lettore) DVD		
electronic(s)	elettronico, elettronica		
email	e-mail		
enclosed	allegato		
engaged	occupato		
enter	entrare, accedere		
envelope	busta		
equipment	attrezzatura		
fax	fax		
hang up	riattaccare		
headline	testata (di giornale)		
internet	internet		
invent	inventare		
invention	invenzione		
IT	informatica		
keyboard	tastiera		

Indice analitico

Indice analitico

I numeri indicati si riferiscono alle unità, non alle pagine.

Nota: le abbreviazioni so. = someone, sth. = something.

A

a bit

avverbio rafforzativo 153
con aggettivi comparativi 147

a few

a few times

a little

avverbio rafforzativo 153
con aggettivi comparativi 147

a lot

avverbio rafforzativo 153
con aggettivi comparativi 147
a lot of/lots of 116

a/an

nomi numerabili 106
usi particolari 111

abilità

able

vedi *be able to*

above

preposizione di luogo 126

absolutely

per accrescere l'enfasi 173

accept

strutture passive
impersonali (*it is accepted*) 51

accommodation

non numerabile in inglese 106

accuse ... of

discorso indiretto 99

across

phrasal verb (*come across*) 136

preposizione di moto 127

actually

per contraddirre 171

additionally

parola per l'addizione 164

addizione

coesione 164

admit

+ *ing* (*admit doing*) 75

discorso indiretto 99

advice

non numerabile in inglese 106

advise

+ complemento oggetto +

infinito (*advise so. to do sth.*)

78

discorso indiretto 99

afford, + infinito (*afford to do sth.*) 76

afraid, aggettivo + preposizione (*afraid of*) 133

after

congiunzione di tempo 43
espressione di sequenza 163
phrasal verb (*take after*) 136

after all, per sostenere

un'affermazione 171

after that, espressione di sequenza 163

afterwards, espressione di sequenza 163

aggettivi

139-143 + *for/of* + complemento + infinito (*kind of him to help*) 83

+ infinito (*ready to leave*) 83

+ preposizione (*interested in*) 133

+ preposizione + *-ing* (*sorry for being late*) 80, 133

aggettivo + *enough* (*warm enough*) 144

che si usano solo dopo un verbo 139

che terminano in *-ed* e *-ing* (*bored, boring*) 140

comparativi (*more famous*) 147

derivati da nomi e verbi 143

get + aggettivo (*get lost*) 139

gradi di comparazione 142

nomi usati per classificazioni 141

ordine degli aggettivi 141

so/such + aggettivi/nomi (*such amazing weather*) 145

superlativi (*the most famous*) 148

too + aggettivo (*too expensive*) 144

aggettivi possessivi

121 + infinito (*agree to do*) 76

discorso indiretto 99

aim + infinito (*aim to do*) 76

all

+ periodo di tempo (*all his life*) 27

e *every, everybody, everything* 117

all in all, per mettere in primo piano 171

allege, strutture passive impersonali (*it is alleged*) 51

allergic, aggettivo + preposizione (*allergic to*) 133

allow, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*allow so. to listen*) 78

allowed vedi *be allowed to*

along, preposizione di moto 127

already

avverbio di tempo relativo 154

con il past perfect 33

con il present perfect 25

also, parola per l'addizione 164

although, per esprimere contrasto 165

always

avverbio di frequenza 152

con il past perfect 33

con il present perfect 27

con l'imperativo 13

con *would* 23

am

and, parola per l'addizione 164

angry, aggettivo + preposizione (*angry with*) 133

annoyed, aggettivo + preposizione (*annoyed about/with*) 133

anticipazione 176

antipatie, verbi che esprimono 75

any

+ i nomi numerabili e non numerabili 114, 115

e some 3

sostituzione 168

anybody vedi *anyone*
anyone/anything/anywhere
 114, 115
apologize for, discorso indiretto
 99
appear + infinito (*appear to be*)
 76
are 1
aren't I? 71
around, preposizione di moto
 127
arrange, + infinito (*arrange to meet*) 76
articoli 110
 nessun articolo 111, 112
the per generalizzare 112
 usi particolari 111
as, per esprimere causa 166
as ... as, e *than* 147
as a consequence, per esprimere conseguenza 166
as a result, per esprimere conseguenza 166
as a result of, per esprimere causa 166
as soon as, congiunzione di tempo 43
as well, parole per l'addizione 164
as well as, + nome 164
ashamed, aggettivo + preposizione 133
ask
 + infinito (*ask to leave*) 76
 discorso indiretto 99
someone + parola
 interrogativa + infinito (*ask so. how to do*) 84
assume, strutture passive impersonali 51
assure, discorso indiretto 99
at
 preposizione di luogo 126
 preposizione di tempo 128
at all 115
at first, espressione di sequenza 163
at no time ..., inversione 177
attempt, + infinito (*attempt to do*) 76
auguri 13

ausiliari vedi *be; do; have; verbi modali*
avoid, + -ing (*avoid doing*) 75
averbi
 coesione 170
 comparativo 150
 di frequenza 5, 152
 di luogo 151
 di modo 150
 di tempo 151
 di tempo relativo 154
 rafforzativi 153
so + avverbi 145
avvisi 13

B

bad
 aggettivo + preposizione (*bad at*) 133
 gradi di comparazione 142
baggage, non numerabile in inglese 106
basically, per mettere in primo piano 171
be
 + -ing 9
 + infinito 36
 + past participle 47, 48
 con *hungry, thirsty* ecc. 1
 domande 2, 65
 past continuous 21
 present continuous 10
 past simple 16
 present simple 1
be able to 54, 55
be about, + infinito (*is about to begin*) 36
be allowed to 55
be going to
 e *will* 40
 o present continuous 38
 passivo 48
 per il futuro 38
was/were going to 44
be used to
 + -ing 82
 + nome 82
because (of), per esprimere causa 166
bed, espressione senza articolo 112
been 26
o gone 25
before
 congiunzione di tempo 43
 espressione di sequenza 163
before that, espressione di sequenza 163
beforehand, espressione di sequenza 163
beg
 + complemento oggetto + infinito (*beg so. to*) 78
 discorso indiretto 99
begin, + -ing o + infinito (*begin playing/to play*) 77
behind, preposizione di luogo 126
believe
 non usato alla forma del present continuous 9
 strutture passive impersonali 51
below, preposizione di luogo 126
besides, parola per l'addizione 164
best 148
better 147
had better 62
between, preposizione di luogo 126
between ... and, preposizione di tempo 128
big, gradi di comparazione 142
book, *something for someone* 95
bored, aggettivo + preposizione (*bored with*) 133
born 16
both, either e neither 118
bound to, gradi di certezza 60
bribe, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*bribe so. to do*) 78
brilliant, aggettivo + preposizione (*brilliant at*) 133
bring
e take 91
something to someone 95
but, per esprimere contrasto 165
buy, *something for someone* 95
by
 + -ing 80
 con il future continuous 42
 con il passivo 47

preposizione di luogo 126
preposizione di tempo 128

by far 148

per accrescere l'enfasi 173

by the time, congiunzione di tempo 42, 43

by the way, per cambiare il soggetto 171

C

cambiamento dei tempi

verbali, discorso indiretto 97, 98, 99

can

con i verbi relativi ai sensi 14
con il passivo 48

can, can't e be allowed, permessi e proibizioni 55

can, could e be able to, abilità e possibilità 54

can't

e must 59
espressioni con can't 63, 75

can('t) afford + infinito (*can afford to go*) 76

can't imagine, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*can't imagine doing*) 78

can't stand, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*can't stand doing*) 78

can't wait, + infinito (*can't wait to go*) 76

cause

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*cause so. to do*) 78

modi di esprimere 166

certain that, certain to, gradi di certezza 60

certezza 59, 60

challenge, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*challenge so. to do*) 78

choose

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*choose so. to go*) 78

+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*choose where to go*) 84

something for someone 95

church, espressione senza articolo 112

claim

+ infinito (*claim to do*) 76

discorso indiretto 99

strutture passive impersonali (*it is claimed*) 51

coesione

addizione 164

avverbi 170

connessioni tra frasi 171

contrasto 165

finalità, causa e conseguenza 166

pronomi 170

riferimento lessicale 170

sequenza 163

college, espressione senza articolo 112

come, e go 92

comparativo

di aggettivi 147

di avverbi 150

complain, discorso indiretto 99

complemento, anticipazione 176

complete, per accrescere l'enfasi 173

completely, gradi di comparazione 142

comportamenti tipici, con *will* 61

confirm, discorso indiretto 99

congiunzioni di tempo

con il present simple 43

frasi al futuro 43

congratulate ... on, discorso indiretto 99

connessioni tra frasi 171

conseguenza, modi di esprimere 166

consequently, per esprimere conseguenza 166

consider

+ -ing (*consider doing*) 75

strutture passive impersonali (*it is considered*) 51

consigli

if I were you 102

l'imperativo 13

should, ought to, must e had better 62

continue, + -ing o infinito

(*continue doing/to do*) 77

convince, discorso indiretto 99

cook, something for someone 95

could

abilità e possibilità 54

certezza e deduzione logica 59

permessi e proibizioni 55

couldn't, espressioni con 63

covered, aggettivo +

preposizione (*covered in*) 133

crazy, + infinito (*crazy to do*) 83

cut oneself 122

D

dare, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*dare so. to do sth.*) 78

decide

+ infinito (*decide to do*) 76

+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*decide what to wear*) 84

decisioni spontanee 39

deduzione logica 59

definitely, gradi di certezza 60

delay, + -ing (*delay doing*) 75

demand

+ infinito (*demand to see*) 76

discorso indiretto 99

deny

+ -ing (*deny doing*) 75

discorso indiretto 99

deserve, + infinito (*deserve to do*) 76

76

desinenze verbali 5, 23

despite, per esprimere contrasto 165

did/didn't 17, 18, 19

different, aggettivo +

preposizione (*different from*) 133

difficult, + infinito (*difficult to do*) 83

disappointed, aggettivo + preposizione (*disappointed with*) 133

discorso indiretto 99

domande 98

say e tell 97

strutture passive impersonali 51

discover, + parola interrogativa + infinito (*discover how to do*) 84
discuss, + parola interrogativa + infinito (*discuss what to do*) 84
dislike, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*dislike so. doing sth.*) 78
do
 in domande 65
 sostituzione 168
 verbo principale 90
do you mind, + -ing (*do you mind doing*) 75
do you mind? 56
do/did, per accrescere l'enfasi 173
domande 65
any o some 114
be 2
be going to 38
 discorso indiretto 98
 domande indirette 70, 98
 domande negative 67
 future continuous e future perfect 42
need 58
 espressione di sequenza 163
 passivo 47
 past continuous 21
 past perfect 33
 past perfect continuous 34
 past simple 19
 past simple di *be* 16
 periodo ipotetico 101
 present continuous 10
 present perfect 25
 present perfect continuous 30
 present simple 6
 present simple e past simple 65
used to e *would* 23
will e *shall* 39
domande-eco 72
domande-soggetto 66
don't bother, + -ing (*don't bother going*) 75
don't have to
e mustn't 57
e needn't 58
don't mind, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*don't mind so. doing*) 78

don't need to 58
don't think 39
don't think that, gradi di certezza 60
doppia negazione 80, 115
doppio complemento 50
doubt, gradi di certezza 60
dread, + -ing (*dread doing*) 75
due to 44
 per esprimere causa 166

E

each 117
each other 122
easily, per accrescere l'enfasi 173
easy, + infinito (*easy to do*) 83
either, neither e both 118
ellissi 168
enable, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*enable so. to do sth.*) 78
encourage
 + complemento oggetto + infinito (*encourage so. to do sth.*) 78
 discorso indiretto 99
enfasi
 accrescere l'enfasi 173
at all 115
con be allowed to 55
 future perfect 42
 futuro 39
have to e must 57
if only 104
 imperativo 13
just a few/little 116
must not 57
 passivo 47
 past continuous 21
 past perfect continuous 34
 past perfect simple 33
 past simple 17, 18
 present perfect continuous 30, 31
 pronomi riflessivi 122
to be honest 171
would, un evento del passato 44
engaged, aggettivo + preposizione (*engaged to so.*) 133

enjoy
 + -ing (*enjoy doing*) 75
oneself 122
enough e too 144
enthusiastic, aggettivo + preposizione (*enthusiastic about*) 133
equivalent, aggettivo + preposizione (*equivalent to*) 133
espressioni, + -ing 81
even, per accrescere l'enfasi 173
even though, per esprimere contrasto 165
ever
 con aggettivi comparativi + *than* 155
 con aggettivi superlativi 155
 con *first, last* ecc. 155
 con *more/less than* 155
 con il present perfect 26
don't ever (imperativo) 13
e -ever 155
ever since 155
every 117
every day/every two months ecc., 152
everybody/everything ecc. 117
excellent, aggettivo + preposizione (*excellent at*) 133
excited, aggettivo + preposizione (*excited about*) 133
expect
 + complemento oggetto + infinito (*expect so. to do sth.*) 78
 + infinito (*expect to do*) 76
 gradi di certezza 60
so/not 73
 strutture passive impersonali (*it is expected*) 51
explain
 + parola interrogativa + infinito (*explain how to do*) 84
 discorso indiretto 99
extremely, avverbio rafforzativo 153

F

fail, + infinito (*fail to do*) 76
fairly, avverbio rafforzativo 153

famous, aggettivo + preposizione (*famous for*) 133
fancy, + -ing (*fancy doing*) 75
far, per accrescere l'enfasi 173
fax, *something to someone* 95
fear, strutture passive impersonali (*it is feared*) 51
fed up, aggettivo + preposizione (*fed up with*) 133
feel like, + -ing (*feel like doing*) 75
few, e little 116
finalità, modi di esprimere 166
finally, espressione di sequenza 163
find, *something for someone* 95
find out, + parola interrogativa + infinito (*find out how to do*) 84
finish, + -ing (*finish doing*) 75
first/firstly, espressione di sequenza 163
first time, + present perfect 26
for
+ -ing 80
con il present perfect 27
per esprimere finalità 166
preposizione di tempo 128
force, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*force so. to do sth.*) 78
forget
+ infinito (*forget to do*) 76
+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*forget how to do*) 84
frasi al futuro (*I'll phone you when I get there.*) 43
frasi participiali 161
frasi relative
determinative (*I met so. who knows you.*) 157
esplicative (*I'm from Catanzaro, which is in the south of Italy.*) 160
ridotte (*Who's the man standing over there?*) 159
frasi scisse 174
free, + infinito (*free to do*) 83
frequently, avverbio di frequenza 152
frequenza, avverbii 5, 23, 152
frightened, aggettivo + preposizione (*frightened of*) 133
from, preposizione di moto 127

from ... to/until, preposizioni di tempo 128
from start to finish, per accrescere l'enfasi 173
full, aggettivo + preposizione (*full of*) 133
furious, aggettivo + preposizione (*furious about*) 133
furniture, non numerabile in inglese 106
furthermore, parola per l'addizione 164
future continuous 42
future perfect 42
futuro vedi *be going to; frasi al futuro; present simple; present continuous; shall; will*

G

generally, avverbio di frequenza 152
get
+ aggettivo/past participle (*get upset*) 122
al passivo 47
diversi significati ed usi 87
get bored 122
get dressed 122
get in/into 127
get off 127
get on/onto 127
get out of 127
get something done 52
get something for someone 95
get upset 122
get used to 122
+ -ing (*get used to doing*) 82
+ nome (*get used to the weather*) 82
get worried 122
give something to someone 95
give up, + -ing (*give up doing*) 75
go, usi e significati 92
going to vedi *be going to*
gone, o been 25
good
aggettivo + preposizione (*good at*) 133
gradi di comparazione 142

guess
gradi di certezza 60
so/not 73

H

had better 62
had enough (of) 144
hard, + infinito (*hard to do*) 83
hardly ever 152
inversione 177
hate
+ complemento oggetto + -ing (*I hate them doing*) 78
+ -ing o + infinito (*hate doing/to do*) 77
have
ausiliare del present perfect 25, 30
quando si ordina del cibo 56
verbo principale 88
have difficulty, + -ing (*have difficulty doing*) 81
have a go/a taste/lunch ecc. 88
have got 7, 65
have something done 52
having, + past participle (*having done*) 161
he 5, 120, 122
hear, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*hear so. singing*) 78
help
+ complemento oggetto + forma base del verbo (*help so. do sth.*) 78
+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*help so.to do sth.*) 78
oneself 122
her 120, 121
here, anticipazione 176
hers 121
herself 122
him 120
himself 122
his 121
homework, non numerabile in inglese 106
hope
+ infinito (*hope to do sth.*) 76
so/not 73
strutture passive impersonali (*it is hoped*) 51

hospital, espressione senza articolo 112
how is/was ...? 68
how long does ... take? 91
how long?, + present perfect (*how long have you done...?*) 27
how many times a week ...? 152
how much/many? 66, 116
how often ...? 152
how? 65
however, per esprimere contrasto 165

I

I 120, 122
I haven't got a clue, + parola interrogativa + infinito 84
I like it when ... ecc. 175
I'm not sure, + parola interrogativa + infinito 84
I think I'll 39
I've no idea, + parola interrogativa + infinito 84
if
in domande indirette 70
periodo ipotetico di primo tipo 101
periodo ipotetico di secondo tipo 102
periodo ipotetico di terzo tipo 103
periodo ipotetico generale 101
if ever 155
if I were 102
if only 104
if possible/if that's OK/if you don't mind 93
imagine
+ -ing (*imagine doing*) 75
gradi di certezza 60
imperativo (*turn left/don't touch*) 13
impossible, + infinito (*impossible to do*) 83
in
preposizione di luogo 126
preposizione di moto 127
preposizione di tempo 128
in addition, parole per l'addizione 164

in case, per esprimere finalità 166
in the end, espressione di sequenza 163
in front of, preposizione di luogo 126
in general, per mettere in primo piano 171
in order to 166
in spite of, per esprimere contrasto 165
in that case, per esprimere conseguenza 166
in a word, per mettere in primo piano 171
incredibly, avverbio rafforzativo 153
infinito
aggettivi e nomi + infinito (*ready to leave/time to go*) 83
al passivo 48
di scopo 85
forma progressiva 76
parola interrogativa + infinito (*what to say*) 84
passato 76
per esprimere finalità 166
verbi + infinito (*like to arrive*) 77, 78
inform, discorso indiretto 99
information, non numerabile in inglese 106
-ing
frase con la forma -ing (*before buying*) 161
spelling della forma -ing 9
inside, preposizione di luogo 126
insist on, discorso indiretto 99
inspire, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*inspire so. to do sth.*) 78
intend
+ infinito (*intend to do*) 76
con -ing o con infinito (*intend doing/to do*) 77
intenzioni, *be going to* 38
interested, aggettivo + preposizione (*interested in*) 133
interesting, + infinito (*interesting to do*) 83
into, preposizione di moto 127
intonazione, risposte brevi ad affermazioni 169
introduce oneself 122
inversione, dopo espressioni avverbiali negative 177
invite
+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*invite so. to do sth.*) 78
discorso indiretto 99
inviti 13
involve, + -ing (*involve doing*) 75
is 1
istruzioni 13
it 120, 122
+ frase verbale 175
+ verbo passivo + *that* (*it is claimed that*) 51
o one 124
'supplementare' 175
it annoys me 175
it doesn't matter/makes no difference 175
it makes sense 175
it's 1
its e it's 121
it's no good/use, + -ing 81
it's (not) worth, + -ing 81
it's possible/probable/likely that, gradi di certezza 60
it's a waste of money/time, + -ing 81
itself 122

J

just
avverbio di tempo relativo 154
con il past perfect 33
per accrescere l'enfasi 173
per dare enfasi 116

K

keen, aggettivo + preposizione (*keen on*) 133
keep, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*keep so. waiting*) 78
kind, aggettivo + preposizione (*kind of*) 133

know

+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*know what to do*) 84
non usato alla forma del present continuous 9
strutture passive impersonali (*it is well known*) 51

L

lastly, espressione di sequenza

163

learn

+ infinito (*learn to do*) 76
+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*learn how to do*) 84

least, nei superlativi 148

leave

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*leave so. to do sth.*) 78

lend, *something to someone* 95

less, con comparativi 147, 150

let, + complemento oggetto + forma base del verbo (*let so. do*) 78

let me, offerte 56

let's go, shall we? 71

like

+ complemento oggetto + -ing (*like so. doing sth.*) 78
+ -ing o + infinito (*like doing/ to do*) 77

look like 68

non usato alla forma del present continuous 9
preposizione 68

likely to, gradi di certezza 60

little

e few 116
inversione 177

loads of 116

look forward to, + -ing 75

lots of 116

lots of times 26

luck, non numerabile in inglese 106

luckily, anticipazione 176

luggage, non numerabile in inglese 106

M**make**

+ complemento oggetto + forma base del verbo (*make so. do sth.*) 78
something for someone 95
usi e significati 89

make up your mind, + parola interrogativa + infinito 84

manage, + infinito (*manage to do*) 76

many vedi *how many*

married, aggettivo + preposizione (*married to*) 133

may, certezza e deduzione logica 59

maybe, gradi di certezza 60

me 120

me neither ecc. 169

me too ecc. 169

meant to 44

mention

+ -ing (*mention doing*) 75
discorso indiretto 99

might 59

espressioni con *might* 63
gradi di certezza 60

mind, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*mind so. doing sth.*) 78

mine 121

miss, + -ing (*miss doing*) 75

modali vedi **verbi modali**

money, non numerabile in inglese 106

more, con comparativi 147

moreover, parola per l'addizione 164

most 117

nei superlativi 148, 150

much 116

con comparativi 147

how much? 65, 116

per accrescere l'enfasi 173

must 62

e *can't* 59

e *mustn't* 57

espressioni con *must* 63

gradi di certezza 60

mustn't, e *don't have to* 57

my 121

myself 122

N

near, preposizione di luogo 126

necessità 58

need 58

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*need so. to do sth.*) 78
+ infinito (*need to do*) 76

needn't, e *needn't have* 58

negativa

past continuous 21

past perfect 33

past simple 18

present continuous 9

present perfect 25

present perfect continuous 30

present simple 1, 5

negozi, *the hairdresser's* ecc. 108

neither

either e both 118

neither ... nor 118

in risposte brevi ad affermazioni 169

nervous, aggettivo + preposizione (*nervous about*) 133

never

avverbio di frequenza 152

con il past perfect 33

con il present perfect 26, 27

con l'imperativo 13

never again/before ..., inversione 177

nevertheless, per esprimere contrasto 165

news, non numerabile in inglese 106

next, espressione di sequenza 163

next to, preposizione di luogo 126

nice, aggettivo + preposizione 133

no, none, nobody ecc. 115

no one ecc., question tags 71

no sooner ..., inversione 177

nome

+ *be* + infinito 83

+ infinito 83

+ preposizione 134

+ preposizione + -ing 80

nomi

- che terminano in -s 107, 108
- numerabili e non numerabili 106
- plurali irregolari 107
- so/such + aggettivi/nomi* 145
- usati per classificazioni 141
- none** 115
- nor**, in risposte brevi ad affermazioni 169
- normally**, avverbio di frequenza 152
- not a .../not before/not for/not only, not until ...**, inversione 177
- not bad**, aggettivo + preposizione 133
- not very/not very much**, avverbii rafforzativi 153
- nothing** 115
- notice**, + complemento oggetto + -ing (*notice so. doing sth.*) 78
- now**, anticipazione 176
- nowhere** 115

O

- obblighi** 57
- occasionally**, avverbio di frequenza 152
- off**, preposizione di moto 127
- offer**
 - + infinito (*offer to do*) 76
 - discorso indiretto 99
- offerte** 13, 39, 56, 88
some, something 114
- often**, avverbio di frequenza 152
- OK**, aggettivo + preposizione (*OK at*) 133
- on**
 - preposizione di luogo 126
 - preposizione di moto 127
 - preposizione di tempo 128
- on the contrary**, per contraddirre 171
- on Mondays**, avverbio di frequenza 152
- on no account ...**, inversione 177
- on top of**, preposizione di luogo 126

on top of that, parole per l'addizione 164

on the whole

- anticipazione 176
- per mettere in primo piano 171

once a week ecc., avverbio di frequenza 152

one

- e ones 124
- o a/an 110

one/ones, sostituzione 168

only, per dare enfasi 116

only after/if/when ..., inversione 177

onto, preposizione di moto 127

opposite, preposizione di luogo 126

orario

- present continuous 37
- present simple 36

order

- + complemento oggetto + infinito (*order so. to do sth.*) 78

discorso indiretto 99

something for someone 95

ordine della subordinata,

periodo ipotetico 101, 102, 103

ordine delle parole, discorso

indiretto 98

ordini 13

ought to 62

our 121

ours 121

ourselves 122

out of, preposizione di moto 127

outside, preposizione di luogo

126

over

preposizione di luogo 126

preposizione di moto 127

owe, *something to someone* 95

owing to, per esprimere causa

166

P

pair of trousers ecc. 107

parole interrogative 65

- + infinito (*I don't know what to say.*) 84

participio passato

have/get something done 52

having + participio passato

(*having done*) 161

nel passato di modali 59, 62

nel passivo 47, 48

nel present perfect 25

partitivi 107

pass, *something to someone* 95

passato

verbi modali 59

vedi anche *past continuous*;
past participle; past perfect;
past simple

passivo 47, 48

allow e be allowed 55

get invece di be 47

domande 65

present simple e past simple

47

soggetto impersonale 50

strutture passive impersonali

51

verbi con doppio

complemento 50

past, preposizione di moto 127

past continuous 21

e past simple 22

passivo 48

past perfect

continuous 34

dopo *wish* 104

passivo 48

simple 33

simple e past simple 33

past simple

be 16

domande 19

e past continuous 22

e past perfect 33

e present perfect 28

forma affermativa 17

forma negativa 18

passivo 48

perhaps, gradi di certezza 60

periodo ipotetico

di primo tipo 101

di secondo tipo 102

di terzo tipo 103

generale 101

persuade

- + complemento oggetto + infinito (*persuade so. to do sth.*) 78
 - discorso indiretto 99
- phrasal verbs*** 136, 137
- piani***, *be going to* 38
- plan***, + infinito (*plan to do*) 76
- please*** 56
- plurali*** 107
- positive that***, gradi di certezza 60
- possessivi*** 108
- possibilità*** 54
- possibly***, gradi di certezza 60
- postpone***, + -ing (*postpone doing*) 75
- practise***, + -ing (*practise doing*) 75
- predict***, discorso indiretto 99
- prefer*** 93
- preferenze*** 93
- prefissi*** 179
 - negativi 143
- prepare***, + infinito (*prepare to do*) 76
- preposizioni***
 - + -ing (*think of going*) 80
 - aggettivo + preposizione (*full of*) 133
 - luogo 126
 - moto 127
 - nelle frasi relative 158
 - nome + preposizione (*reason for*) 134
 - preposizioni + nome (*on television*) 130
 - tempo 128
 - verbi + complemento + preposizione (*accuse so. of stealing*) 132
 - verbi + preposizione (*listen to*) 131
- present continuous***
 - domande 10
 - forma affermativa/negativa 9
 - in frasi al futuro 43
 - o *be going to* 38
 - o present simple 11
 - passivo 48
 - significato futuro 37, 38
 - uso 11, 43
 - verbi di stato e verbi di moto 14

present perfect

- conseguenza sul presente 25
- continuous 30
- continuous e present perfect simple 31
- esperienze di vita 26
- in frasi al futuro 43
- passivo 48
- simple 27
- simple e past simple 28
- simple e present perfect continuous 31

present simple

- be* 1, 2, 5
- forma affermativa 1, 5
- in frasi al futuro 43
- o present continuous 11
- passivo 48
- significato futuro 36
- uso 11, 43
- verbi di stato e verbi di moto 14

pretend, + infinito (*pretend to do*) 76

pretty, avverbio rafforzativo 153

previsioni, *be going to* 38, 40

pride oneself on 122

prison, espressione senza articolo 112

probably, gradi di certezza 60

programma 36, 37

progress, non numerabile in inglese 106

promemoria 13

promesse 39

promise

- + infinito (*promise to do*) 76
- discorso indiretto 99

pronomi

- coesione 170
- complemento 120
- possessivi 121
- relativi 157
- riflessivi 122
- soggetto 120
- sostituzione 168

pronuncia, di *going to* 38

proud, aggettivo + preposizione (*proud of*) 133

put off, + -ing (*put off doing*) 75

Q

question tags 71

quite, avverbio rafforzativo 153

R***rarely***

- avverbio di frequenza 152
- inversione 177

rather, avverbio rafforzativo 153

rather than 93

really 142

- avverbio rafforzativo 153
- per accrescere l'enfasi 173

reassure, discorso indiretto 99

recently

- avverbio di tempo relativo 154
- con il present perfect 25

recommend

- + complemento + infinito (*recommend so. to do sth.*) 94
- + espressione verbale (*recommend we do sth.*) 94
- + -ing (*recommend doing*) 75
- + nome (*recommend the spinach*) 94
- discorso indiretto 99
- strutture passive impersonali (*it is recommended*) 51

refuse

- + infinito (*refuse to do*) 76
- discorso indiretto 99

regret, con -ing o con infinito (*regret doing/to inform you*) 77

remember

- + complemento oggetto + -ing (*remember so. doing sth.*) 78
- + parola interrogativa + infinito (*remember how to do sth.*) 84
- + -ing o + infinito (*remember doing/to do*) 77

remind

- + complemento oggetto + infinito (*remind so. to do sth.*) 78

discorso indiretto 99

report, strutture passive

impersonali (*it is reported*) 51

responsible, aggettivo + preposizione (*responsible for*) 133

reveal, discorso indiretto 99

richieste 13, 39, 56, 98
 some, something 114

risk
 + complemento oggetto + -ing (*can't risk so. doing sth.*) 78
 + -ing (*risk doing*) 75

risposte brevi 6
ad affermazioni 169
alle domande con *Who ...?* 120
can, can't 54
con be 2
con be about to 36
con have got 7
con il past continuous 21
con il past simple 19
con il present continuous 10
con il present perfect 25, 26
a domande *yes/no* 73
 a domande-soggetto 66

risposte, *yes e no* 67

round, preposizione di moto 127

rude, aggettivo + preposizione (*rude of*) 133

rumour, strutture passive impersonali (*it is rumoured*) 51

S

safe, + infinito (*safe to do*) 83

save, *something for someone* 95

say
 + parola interrogativa + infinito (*say how to do*) 84

discorso indiretto 99

e tell 97

strutture passive impersonali (*it is said*) 51

scared, aggettivo + preposizione (*scared of*) 133

school, espressione senza articolo 112

secondly, espressione di sequenza 163

see
 + complemento oggetto + -ing (*see so. doing sth.*) 78

+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*see how to do*) 84
I'm going to see 38

seem, + infinito (*seem to be*) 76

seldom, inversione dopo 177

send, *something to someone* 95

sequenza, coesione 163

shall, per il futuro 39

she 120, 122

short, aggettivo + preposizione (*short of*) 133

should 62
 con il passivo 48
 espressioni con *should* 63

show
 someone + parola
 interrogativa + infinito (*show so. how to do*) 84
 something to someone 95

similar, aggettivo + preposizione (*similar to*) 133

simpatie, verbi che esprimono 75

simple past vedi **past simple**

simply, per accrescere l'enfasi 173

since
 con il past simple 28
 con il present perfect 27
 per esprimere causa 166

single, per accrescere l'enfasi 173

slightly, avverbio rafforzativo 153

small, gradi di comparazione 142

so
 avverbio rafforzativo 153
 e such 145
 hope so ecc. 73
 per accrescere l'enfasi 173
 per esprimere conseguenza 166

in risposte brevi ad affermazioni 169

sostituzione 168

so am I, neither did I ecc. 169

so (that), per esprimere finalità 166

so/such, + aggettivi/nomi (*such amazing weather*) 145

so/such ... that (*such a nice day that*) 145

soggetto impersonale 50

some
+ nomi numerabili e non numerabili 114
e any 3

sostituzione 168

somebody/someone/ something/somewhere 71, 114

sometimes, avverbio di frequenza 152

soon, avverbio di tempo relativo 154

sorry, aggettivo + preposizione (*sorry for*) 133

sostituzione 168

spaghetti, non numerabile in inglese 106

spend money, + -ing 81

spend time, + -ing 75, 81

start, con -ing o con infinito (*start playing/to play*) 77

still, avverbio di tempo relativo 154

stop
 + complemento oggetto + -ing (*stop so. doing*) 78
 + -ing (*stop doing*) 75

strutture passive impersonali 51

such, e so 145

suffissi 143, 155, 180

suggerimenti 13, 39, 62

suggest
 + espressione verbale (*I suggest we wait.*) 94
 + -ing (*suggest doing*) 75
 + nome (*suggest Café Baba*) 94

discorso indiretto 99

strutture passive impersonali (*it is suggested*) 51

superlativi
di aggettivi 148
di avverbi 150

suppose, gradi di certezza 60

supposed to 44, 51

supposizioni (*That'll be James at the door.*) 61

sure, aggettivo + preposizione (*sure about*) 133

sure that/sure to, gradi di certezza 60

T

take

something to someone 95

usi e significati 91

talk ... into, discorso indiretto 99

talk about, + parola interrogativa

+ infinito (*talk about what to do*) 84

teach

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*teach so. to do*) 78

someone + parola

interrogativa + infinito (*teach so. what to do*) 84

something to someone 95

tell

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*tell so. to do*) 78

discorso indiretto 97, 99

someone + parola

interrogativa + infinito (*tell so. where to go*) 84

tempi verbali

cambiamento dei tempi

verbali nel discorso indiretto
97, 98, 99

i tempi passati 16-22

i tempi presenti 1-11

i tempi futuri 36-42

il past perfect 33-34

il present perfect 25-31

tempo, espressioni 17, 28

tend, + infinito (*tend to do*) 76

text, *something to someone* 95

than, *e as ... as* 147

thank ... for, discorso indiretto 99

that 123

pronomi relativi 157

the 108, 110

con superlativi 148

per generalizzare 112

usi particolari 111

the first/last, + infinito (*the last to arrive*) 83

the minute/moment/second/

next time, congiunzioni di tempo 43

their 121

theirs 121

them 120

themselves 122

then

espressione di sequenza 163
per esprimere conseguenza

166

there, anticipazione 176

there is/are 3, 159

there was/were 16

therefore, per esprimere

conseguenza 166

there's no need to 58

there's no point 81

these 123

they 120, 122

think

+ future continuous/future perfect (*think I'll be eating/have eaten*) 42

gradi di certezza 60

I think I'll 39

so/not 73

strutture passive impersonali (*it is thought*) 51

think about, + parola

interrogativa + infinito 84

this, this year, this weekend ecc.

123

this, that, these, those 123

though, per esprimere contrasto 165

threaten, discorso indiretto 99

threaten, + infinito (*threaten to do*) 76

through, preposizione di moto 127

to, preposizione di moto 127

to be honest, per dare enfasi 171

too

e enough 144

parola per l'addizione 164

troppo 144

too much/many 144

total, per accrescere l'enfasi 173

towards, preposizione di moto

127

traffic, non numerabile in inglese 106

train, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*train so. to do sth.*) 78

travel, non numerabile in inglese 106

trust, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*trust so. to do sth.*) 78

try, + -ing o + infinito (*try doing/to do*) 77

twice a year, espressione di frequenza 152

typical, aggettivo + preposizione (*typical of*) 133

U

unbelievably, avverbio rafforzativo 153

under

preposizione di luogo 126

preposizione di moto 127

understand

strutture passive impersonali 51

+ parola interrogativa + infinito (*understand how to do*) 84

unfair, aggettivo + preposizione (*unfair of*) 133

university, espressione senza articolo 112

unless 101

unlikely to, gradi di certezza 60

until, congiunzione di tempo 43

upset, aggettivo + preposizione (*upset about*) 133

urge

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*urge so. to do sth.*) 78

discorso indiretto 99

us 120

used to 23

usually

anticipazione 176

avverbio di frequenza 152

V

verbi

+ preposizione + -ing (*apologize for being late*) 131

ausiliari vedi *be; do; have*; verbi modali

con *for* + persona (*book a table for me*) 95

con -ing o con infinito 77
 con doppio complemento 95
 con *to* + persona (*write a letter to me*) 95
 di moto 14
 di stato 14, 31
 domande vedi **domande**
 imperativo 13
 irregolari 17
 phrasal verbs 136, 137
 plurisillabici che hanno due complementi (*describe the scene to me*) 95
 regolari 17
 relativi ai sensi 14
 verbo + complemento + preposizione + -ing (*thank so. for coming*) 132

verbi modali

can 54, 55, 56
could 54, 55, 56
 domande 65
 espressioni con i modali 63
must e have to 57
must, might, could, can't 59
need, needed e don't need to 58
 passivo 48
 periodo ipotetico 101, 102, 103
 risposte brevi 66
should, ought to, must e had better 62
will 61
would 56

verbo

+ complemento oggetto + -ing o + infinito (*hear so. singing/advise so. to go*) 78
 + infinito (*hope to see*) 76
 + -ing (*like doing*) 75
 + parola interrogativa + infinito (*know what to do*) 84
 vedi anche **verbi; verbi modali**

very
 avverbio rafforzativo 153
 per accrescere l'enfasi 173

very much, avverbio rafforzativo 153

virgola 22, 43, 101, 102, 103, 141, 165

W

want

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*want so. to do sth.*) 78
 + infinito (*want to do*) 76
 non usato alla forma del present continuous 9

warn

+ complemento oggetto + infinito (*warn so. not to do sth.*) 78
 discorso indiretto 99

was/were to 44

waste time, + -ing 75

we 120, 122

weather, non numerabile in inglese 106

well known, aggettivo + preposizione (*well known for*) 133

what (a), + aggettivi/nomi (*what nice people*) 145

what does/do ... look like? 68

what is/was ... like? 68

what? 19, 65, 66, 68

whatever, whenever ecc. 155

when

congiunzione di tempo 43
e while 22
 espressione di sequenza 163
 pronomo relativo 157

when? 19, 65

where

e when 157
 pronomo relativo 157, 160

where? 19, 65

whereas, per esprimere contrasto 165

whether, + infinito 84

whether e if, discorso indiretto 98

which, pronomo relativo 157, 160

which is where, pronomo relativo 160

which? 65, 66

while

congiunzione di tempo 43
e when 22
 espressione di sequenza 163
 per esprimere contrasto 165

who

e whom 72
o whom 157, 160
 pronomo relativo 157, 160

who? 65, 66

whole, per accrescere l'enfasi 173

whom, pronomo relativo 157

whose, pronomo relativo 157, 160

whose? 65

why? 65

will

con il passivo 48
e be going to 40
 per il futuro 39

wish 104

without

+ -ing (*without knowing*) 80
anybody, anything ecc.
 (*without anyone knowing*) 80

without doubt, per accrescere l'enfasi 173

wonder, + parola interrogativa + infinito (*wonder what to do*) 84

work, non numerabile in inglese 106

work out, + parola interrogativa + infinito (*work out what to do*) 84

worried, aggettivo + preposizione (*worried about*) 133

worry about, + parola interrogativa + infinito (*worried about how to do*) 84

worth, + -ing (*worth doing*) 81

would

abitudini del passato 23, 61
 dopo *wish* 104
 periodo ipotetico di secondo tipo 102
 periodo ipotetico di terzo tipo 103
 richieste e offerte 56
 un evento del passato 44

would like, + infinito (*would like to do*) 76

would like/love/hate/prefer, + complemento oggetto + infinito (*would like so. to do*) 78

would prefer/would rather 93

would you mind? 56

write, something to someone 95

Y

yet

avverbio di tempo relativo 154

con il present perfect 25

per esprimere contrasto 165

you 120, 122

con il significato di gente in
generale 50, 55

your 121

yours 121

yourself, yourselves 122

